Gc
974.5
R347
no.1-10
1781019

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 00084 6326

781

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

https://archive.org/details/historicalsketch00tuck_0

690

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

TOWN OF CHARLESTOWN,

IN

RHODE ISLAND,

FROM

1636 TO 1876.

TRANSCRIBED AND WRITTEN

BY WILLIAM FRANKLIN TUCKER,

SUPERINTENDENT OF PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

BY ORDER OF THE TOWN COUNCIL.

G. B. & J. H. UTTER, STEAM PRINTERS, WESTERLY, R. I.
1877.

RHODE ISLAND
LOCAL HISTORY

1636.

1781019

HISTORICAL SKETCH.

TOWN OF CHARLESTOWN.

1876.

NEW THE

1.

Tucker, William Franklin.

Historical sketch of the town of Charlestown, in Rhode Island, from 1636 to 1876. Transcribed and written by William Franklin Tucker ... By order of the Town council. Westerly, R. I., G. B. & J. H. Utter, printers, 1877.

88 p. 23½cm.

ARD Binder's title: Rhode Island local history.

1. Charleston, R. I.--Hist.

Library of Congress FS9.C4TS Rc-3010
[a27d1]

PRESIDENT'S PROCLAMATION.

BY THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES,

A PROCLAMATION.

Whereas, A joint resolution of the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States was duly approved on the 13th day of March last, which resolution is as follows:

"Be it resolved, by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America, in Congress assembled, that it be and is hereby recommended by the Senate and the House of Representatives, to the people of the several States, that they assemble in their several counties or towns on the approaching centennial anniversary of our national independence, and that they cause to have delivered on such day an historical sketch of said county or town from its formation, and that a copy of said sketch may be filed, in print or manuscript, in the Clerk's office of said County, and an additional copy, in print or manuscript, be filed in the office of the Librarian of Congress, to the intent that a complete record may thus be obtained of the progress of our institutions during the first centennial of their existence"; and

Whereas, It is deemed proper that such recommendation be brought to the notice and knowledge of the people of the United States;

Now, therefore, I, Ulysses S. Grant, President of the United States, do hereby declare and make known the same, in the hope that the object of such resolution may meet the approval of the people of the United States, and that proper steps may be taken to carry the same into effect.

Given under my hand, at the city of Washington, the 25th day of May, in the year of our Lord 1876, and of the independence of the United States the one hundredth. U. S. GRANT.

By the President,

HAMILTON FISH, *Secretary of State.*

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND, &c.

IN GENERAL ASSEMBLY, JANUARY SESSION, A. D. 1876.

JOINT RESOLUTION

ON THE

CELEBRATION OF THE CENTENNIAL IN THE SEVERAL CITIES AND TOWNS.

Resolved, the House of Representatives concurring therein, That in accordance with the recommendation of the National Congress, the Governor be requested to invite the people of the several towns and cities of the State, to assemble in their several localities on the approaching Centennial Anniversary of our National Independence, and cause to have delivered on that day an historical sketch of said town or city from its formation, and to have one copy of said sketch, in print or in manuscript, filed in the Clerk's office of said town or city, one copy in the office of the Secretary of State, and one copy in the office of the Librarian of Congress, to the intent that a complete record may thus be obtained of the progress of our institutions during the First Centennial of their existence; and that the Governor be requested to communicate this invitation forthwith to the several towns and city councils in the State.

I certify the foregoing to be a true copy of a resolution passed by the General Assembly of the State aforesaid, on the 20th day of April, A. D. 1876.

{L. S.} Witness my hand and seal of the State, this 27th day of April, A. D. 1876.

JOSHUA M. ADDEMAN, *Secretary of State.*

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND.

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,
PROVIDENCE, April 27th, 1876.

To the Honorable Town Council of the Town of Charlestown:

Gentlemen: I have the honor herewith to enclose a duly certified copy of a resolution passed by the General Assembly at its recent session, requesting me to invite the people of the several towns and cities of the State to assemble in their several localities on the approaching Centennial Anniversary of our National Independence, and cause to have delivered on such day an historical sketch of said town or city from its formation.

By pursuing the course suggested by the Resolution of the General Assembly, the people of the State will derive an amount of information which will be invaluable to the present generation, as showing the wonderful progress of the several towns and cities since their foundation. It will also be of great value to future generations, when the materials for such sketches now accessible will have been lost or destroyed by accident, or become more or less effaced and illegible from time.

Therefore, in pursuance of the request of the General Assembly, I respectfully and earnestly, through you, invite the people of your town to carry out the contemplated celebration on the 4th day of July next.

HENRY LIPPITT, *Governor.*

PREFACE.

In transcribing and preparing this sketch for publication, the original orthography has been closely followed where it relates to the Colonial Records. The most important facts relative to the settlements which were first made in this colony, and subsequently in this town, I have endeavored to present in a clear and comprehensive manner. From books, newspapers and manuscripts, I have copied to a large extent. Of course, in many instances I have had to peruse a great many books, papers and pamphlets, to gain a little information. No person who has not undertaken to gather such statistical items, can fully comprehend the vast amount of time and labor which are needful to collect them, and to ascertain their connection with previous affairs and establishments. The Records of the proceedings of the General Assembly, as far as they relate to the Niantic or Narragansett Indians, have been copied for this volume.

It is right and just, therefore, to acknowledge my indebtedness to the Rhode Island Colonial Records, to Elisha R. Potter's Early History of Narragansett, to Wilkins Updike's History of the Churches of Rhode Island, and to the Town Records. I must, however, acknowledge my special indebtedness to Charles Cross, Esq., Town Clerk, for his valuable aid in examining the old records, which date back nearly one hundred and forty years; to David Smith, Esq., Superintendent of Public Schools of Westerly, for his generous assistance; and to James N. Kenyon and wife, as well as others whom I have not time to mention.

In proper names there is the greatest diversity in spelling; the word Miantonomo, or Miantonomi, has undergone more than twenty changes in orthography. To many of the citizens some of the facts will be entirely new; and to nearly all of them they will cast some light on what has passed away, and the various changes which have occurred during a period of two hundred and forty years.

HISTORICAL SKETCH.

FELLOW CITIZENS:

The choice of the Hon. Town Council has placed me in a rather delicate position, as I have not the gift of an orator, nor the ability of an historian; but I shall endeavor to present plain and unpolished truth, let its ennobling influence fall as it may.

In attempting to present on this occasion something of an historcal sketch of this Town from its formation, for the approaching Centennial Anniversary of our National Independence of 1776, I shall not be overburdened with items of information, and of necessity must be brief.

The object for which this request of the General Assembly was made, is to draw forth from the fading archives of the past the original facts, and to collect the detached and scattered items, which are liable at any time to be lost, and to place them in a more durable condition, that future generations may avail themselves of these materials, when all other sources have been obliterated by the ravages of time.

The centennial monuments that mark the great advancement of civilization, from the time when Greece and Rome were celebrated for their genius in literature, philosophy, and fine arts, seem to point forward to the present period as the notable age of literary attainments and of wonderful inventions. This seems to be the language proclaimed by the leading men of all nations, that we are living in an inventive, progressive, and remarkable age. The researches of Newton, Fulton, Franklin, and Morse, have decided this point beyond a doubt, for they were eminent originators of mighty inventions, and their brilliant achievements will serve as guiding footsteps in ages yet to come. Nature has unveiled her hidden mysteries in a thousand different forms. Science has unlocked the doors of her ample store house of knowledge, and the nations of

the earth are scattering the germs of usefulness promiscuously over this period of time in which we live. The people of Athens, in her splendor, were pre-eminently ahead of all other nations in art and literature; and to her improvements may be added, for an illustration, the seven wonders of the world, which were the Egyptian Pyramids, the Mausoleum, the Temple of Diana at Ephesus, the Walls and Hanging Gardens of Babylon, the Colossus at Rhodes, the Statue of Jupiter Olympius, and the Watchtower of Alexandria; yet these stupendous works of master minds have failed to produce such unlimited benefits for those nations as our modern inventions have furnished for the present and future generations of men.

The Steam Engine has become a thing of universal importance, exerting a prodigious power. They are applied to steamboats and steamships, which are plying on rivers, lakes and oceans, by thousands, against the fury of the winds and waves; they are applied to the railway cars, which are traversing the countries in all directions, with the rapidity of the eagle in its flight: they are applied to manufactories of almost every variety and kind, rendering cheap and accessible, all over the world, the material of wealth and utility; and, finally, they are applied to the printing establishments, whereby the diffusion of intelligence and knowledge is increased with a power to which no limits can be assigned. The Telegraph is another noble and useful invention; and in the language of the poet may we well exclaim:

> "It is a feat sublime,
> For intellect has conquered time."

On the 29th of May, 1844, the news of Mr. Polk's nomination was sent to Washington from Baltimore by the Magnetic Telegraph. It was the first dispatch ever so transmitted; and the event marks an era in the history of civilization. The inventor of the telegraph, which has proved so great a blessing to mankind, was Professor Samuel F. B. Morse, of Massachusetts. We are certainly living in a marvelous and wondrous age, when New York and San Francisco are brought within four days of each other by travel, and entirely together by telegraphic communication. Mowing and Sewing Machines, which meet the wants of the present day, are among the great inventions of the nineteenth century. They have increased indefinitely the comforts and enjoyments of the human family; and no person can fully contemplate the vast benefit to mankind conferred by these inventions, without thanksgiving and praise to the "Giver of All."

CONFIRMATORY DEED OF ROGER WILLIAMS AND HIS WIFE, OF LANDS TRANSFERRED BY HIM TO HIS ASSOCIATES, IN THE YEAR 1638.

Be it known unto all men by these Presents, that I, Roger Williams, of the Towne of Providence, in the Narragansett Bay, in New England, having in the yeare one thousand six hundred and thirty-four, and in the yeare one thousand six hundred and thirty-five, had severall treaties with Conanicusse and Miantonome, the chief sachems of the Narragansetts, and in the end purchased of them the lands and meadows upon the two ffresh rivers called Mooshassick and Wanasquatucket; the two said sachems having by a deed under their hands, two yeares after the sale thereof, established and conffirmed the boundes of these landes from the river ffields of Pawtuckqut and the great hill of Neotaconconitt on the northwest, and the towne of Moshapauge on the west, notwithstanding I had the frequent promise of Miantenomy, my kind friend, that it should not be land that I should want about these bounds mentioned, provided that I satisfied the Indians there inhabiting, I having made covenantes of peaceable neighborhood with all the sachems and natives round about us. And having, in a sense of God's merciful providence unto me in my distresse, called the place Providence, I desired it might be for a shelter for persons distressed of conscience; I then, considering the condition of divers of my distressed countrymen, I communicated my said purchase unto my loving ffriends John Throckmorton, William Arnold, William Harris, Strikely Westcott, John Greene, senior, Thomas Olney, senior, Richard Waterman, and others, who then desired to take shelter here with me, and in succession unto so many others as we should receive into the fellowship and societye enjoying and disposing of the said purchase; and besides the ffirst that were admitted, our towne records declare that afterwards wee received Chad Brown, William ffield, Thomas Harris, sen'r, William Wickenden, Robert Williams, Gregory Dexter, and others, as our towne booke declares. And whereas, by God's mercifull assistance, I was the procurer of the purchase, not by monies nor payment, the natives being so shy and jealous that monies could not doe it; but by that language, acquaintance, and favour with the natives, and other advantages, which it pleased God to give me, and also bore the charges and venture of all the gratuetyes which I gave to the great sachems, and other sachems and natives round about us, and lay ingaged for a loving and peaceable neighborhood with them, all to my great charge and travele; it was, therefore, thought by some loving

ffriends, that I should receive some loving consideration and gratuitye; and it was agreed between us, that every person that should be admitted into the ffellowship of injoying landes and disposing of the purchase, should pay thirtye shillinges into the public stock; and ffirst about thirtye poundes should be paid unto myselfe by thirty shillings a person, as they were admitted. This sum I received in love to my ffriends; and with respect to a towne and place of succor for the distressed as aforesaid, I doe acknowledge the said sum and payment as ffull satisffaction. And whereas, in the year one thousand six hundred and thirtye seaven, so called, I delivered the deed subscribed by the two aforesaid chiefe sachems, so much thereof as concerneth the aforementioned landes ffrom myselfe and my heirs unto the whole number of the purchasers, with all my poweres, right and title therein, reserving only unto myselfe one single share equall unto any of the rest of that number, I now againe, in a more fformal way, under my hand and seal, conffirm my fformer resignation of that deed of the landes aforesaid, and bind myselfe, my heirs, my executors, my administrators and assignes, never to molest any of the said persons already received or hereafter to be received into the societye of purchasers as aforesaid; but they, theire heires, executors, administrators and assignes, shall at all times quietly and peaceably injoy the premises and every part thereof; and I do ffurther, by these presents, binde myselfe, my heirs, my executors, my administrators and assignes, never to lay claime nor cause any claime to be laid, to any of the landes aforementioned, or unto any part or parcell thereof, more than unto mine owne single share, by virtue or pretence of any former bargaine, sale or mortgage, whatsoever, or joyntures, thirdes or intails made by me the said Roger Williams, or of any other person, either for, by, through or under me. In wittnesse thereof, I have hereunto sett my hand and seale this twentyeth day of December in the present year one thousand six hundred and sixty one. ROGER WILLIAMS. [L. S.]

Signed, sealed and delivered, in presence of us,
THOMAS SMITH,
JOSEPH CARPENTER.

I, Mary Williams, wife unto Roger Williams, doe assent unto the premises. Wittness my hand this twentyeth day of December, in the present year one thousand six hundred and sixty-one.

The marke of M. W. MARY WILLIAMS.

Acknowledged and subscribed before me.

WILLIAM FFEILD, *Generall Assistant.*

The lands transferred by Roger Williams to his associates were subsequently divided into what are called "home lots" and "six acre lots." In the clerk's office of the city of Providence is a revised list of lands and meadows as they were originally lotted, from the beginning of the plantation of Providence in the Narragansett Bay, in New England, unto the then inhabitants of the said plantation. The first in order are the "home lots," beginning at the "Mile-end Cove," at the south end of the town, between Fox Point and Wickenden-street. This book gives a list of fifty-four persons who "received their lots with their location." Here we find the founders of the State of Rhode Island. Their names are perpetuated and transmitted to us by pages of various histories; by inheritance of their numerous descendants; and finally, by being connected with the establishment of a colony among the Indians of North America, and the toleration of religious liberty.

A PARTIAL LIST OF THE FIFTY-FOUR NAMES.

Roger Williams,	William Wickenden,
William Harris,	John Lippitt,
John Greene,	Robert West,
William Arnold,	Joshua Winsor,
John Smith,	Thomas Hopkins,
Gregory Dexter,	John Sweet,
Chad Brown,	Edward Hart,
Daniel Abbott,	William Man,
Thomas Angell,	Francis Weston,
William Reynolds,	Richard Scott,
Thomas Olney,	Robert Cole,
William Carpenter,	Thomas James.

DEPOSITION OF ROGER WILLIAMS RELATIVE TO THIS PURCHASE FROM THE INDIANS.

NARRAGANSETT, 18 June, 1682.

I testify, as in the presence of the all-making and all-seeing God, that about fifty years since, I coming into this Narragansett country, I found a great contest between three sachems, two (to wit, Cononicus and Miantonomy) were against Ousamaquin on Plymouth side; I was forced to travel between them three, to pacify, to satisfy all their and their dependents' spirits of my honest intentions to live peaceably by them. I testify, that it was the general and constant declaration, that Cannonicus, his father, he had three sons, whereof Connonicus was the heir, and his youngest brother's

son Miantinomy (because of his youth) was his Marshal and Executioner, and did nothing without his unkle Cannonicus' consent. And therefore I declare to posterity, that were it not for the favor that God gave me with Cannonicus, none of these parts, no, not Rhode Island, had been purchased or obtained, for I never got any thing out of Cannonicus but by gift. I also profess that, being inquisitive of what root the title or denomination Nahiganset should come, I heard that Nahiganset was so named from a little Island between Puttisquomscut and Musquomacuk on the sea, and fresh water side. I went on purpose to see it, and about the place called Sugar Loaf Hill, I saw it, and was within a pole of it, but could not learn why it was called Nohiganset. I had learnt that the Massachusetts was so called from the Blue Hills, a little Island thereabout; and Cannonicus' father and anchestors living in those southern parts, transferred and brought their authority and name into those northern parts all along by the sea side, as appears by the great destruction of wood all along near the sea side; and I desire posterity to see the gracious hand of the Most High, (in whose hands is all hearts,) that when the hearts of my countrymen and friends and brethren failed me, his infinite wisdom and merits stirred up the barbarous heart of Cannonicus to love me as his son to his last gasp, by which means I had not only Miantonomy and all the Cowesit sachems my friends, but Ousamaquin also, who, because of my great friendship with him at Plymouth, and the authority of Cannonicus, consented freely (being also well gratified by me) to the Governor Winthrop's and my enjoyment of Prudence, yea, of Providence itself, and all the other lands I procured of Cannonicus which were upon the point, and in effect whatsoever I desired of him. And I never denyed him nor Miantinomy whatever they desired of me as to goods or gifts, or use of my boats or pinnace, and the travels of my own person day and night, which, though men know not, nor care to know, yet the all-seeing eye hath seen it, and his all-powerful hand hath helped me. Blessed be his holy name to eternity. R. WILLIAMS.

A PORTION OF A LETTER FROM ROGER WILLIAMS, PRESIDENT OF PROVIDENCE COLONY, TO THE GENERAL COURT OF MASSACHUSETTS, IN 1654.

Much Honored Sirs:

I truly wish you peace, and pray your gentle acceptance of a word, I hope not unreasonable.

We have in these parts a sound of your meditations of war against

these natives, amongst whom we dwell. I consider that war is one of those three great, sore plagues, with which it pleaseth God to affect the sons of men. I consider, also, that I refused, lately, many offers in my native country, out of a sincere desire to seek the good and peace of this.

I remember, that upon the express advice of your ever honored Mr. Winthrop, deceased, I first adventured to begin a plantation among the thickest of these barbarians. That in the Pequod wars, it pleased your honored government to employ me in the hazardous and weighty service of negotiating a league between yourselves and the Narragansetts, when the Pequod messengers, who sought the Narragansetts' league against the English, had almost ended that my work and my life together.

At my last departure for England, I was importuned by the Narragansett sachems, and especially by Ninigret, to present their petition to the high sachems of England, that they might not be forced from their religion, and, for not changing their religion, be invaded by war; for they said they were daily visited with threatenings by Indians that came from about the Massachusetts, that if they would not pray, they should be destroyed by war. With this their petition I acquainted, in private discourses, divers of the chief of our nation, and especially his Highness, who, in many discourses I had with him, never expressed the least title of displeasure, as hath been here reported, but after all hearing of yourself and us, it hath pleased his Highness and his Council to grant, amongst other favors to this colony, some expressly concerning the very Indians, the native inhabitants of this jurisdiction.

Now, with your patience, a word to these nations at war (occasion of yours,) the Narragansetts and Long Islanders, I know them both experimentally, and therefore pray you to remember—

First, that the Narragansetts and Mohawks are the two great bodies of Indians in this country, and they are confederates, and long have been, and they both yet are friendly and peaceably to the English. I do humbly conceive, that if ever God calls us to a just war with either of them, he calls us to make sure of the one to a friend. It is true some distaste was lately here amongst them, but they parted friends, and some of the Narragansetts went home with them, and I fear that both these and the Long Islanders and Mohegans, and all the natives of the land, may, upon the sound of a defeat of the English, be induced easily to join each with other against us.

The Narragansetts, as they were the first, so they have been long confederates with you; they have been true, in all the Pequod

wars, to you. They occasioned the Mohegans to come in, too, and so occasioned the Pequods' downfall.

Their late famous long-lived Cannonicus so lived and died, and in the same most honorable manner and solemnity (in their way,) as you laid to sleep your prudent peace-maker, Mr. Winthrop, did they honor this their prudent and peaceable prince. His son, Mexham, inherits his spirit. Yea, through all their townes and countries, how frequently do many, and oft-times one Englishman, travel alone with safety and loving-kindness.

The cause and root of all the present mischief is the pride of two barbarians, Ascassassotic, the Long Island sachem, and Ninigret, of the Narragansett. The former is proud and foolish; the latter is proud and fierce. I have not seen him these many years, yet from their sober men I hear he pleads—

First, that Ascassassotic, a very inferior sachem, bearing himself upon the English, hath slain three or four of his people, and since that sent him challenges and darings to fight and mend himself. He, Ninigret, consulted by solemn messengers, with the chief of the English Governors, Major Endicott, then Governor of the Massachusetts, who sent him an implicit consent to right himself, upon which they all plead that the English have just occasion of displeasure.

After he had taken revenge upon the Long Islanders, and brought away about fourteen captives, divers of their chief women, yet he restored them all again, upon the meditation and desire of the English.

After this peace made, the Long Islanders, pretending to visit Ninigret, at Block Island, slaughtered of his Narragansetts near thirty persons, at midnight, two of them of great note, especially Wepiteamncoc's son, to whom Ninigret was uncle. All Indians are extremely treacherous; and if to their own nation, for private ends, revolting to strangers, what will they do upon the sound of one defeat of the English.

At a meeting of the Governor, Deputy Governor, and Assistants, held in Newport the 26th Nov., 1663, agreed and ordered, that John Sanford is chosen Clerke of this present meeting, to record the acts of this meeting, and till the Court of Election, and is ingaged.

The Governor, Deputy Governor, and Council, having informed the Indians' Kings, viz., Quissuckquash and Nineganitt, that his gracious Majesty of England, having taken notice of the Narragan-

sett Sachems submitting themselves subjects to his royall father, which submission they subscribed in writing and sent unto England by Mr. Gorton and others of Warwick, they owne that they did submitt themselves unto his Majesty's royall father, by a writinge under their hands about nineteene years ago; and they are now come to know what answer his Majesty is pleased to returne them. Alsoe, they owned that they sent a further declaration of their submission unto his Majesty by Mr. John Nickson, owning themselves therein his Majesty's subjects. As also they then, by the said Mr. Nickson, sent their humble petition unto his Majesty for reliefe in severall wrongs offered and done unto them by the other Colonies. The aforesayd submission sent by Mr. Gorton, being read in this meeting, and shewed to the sayd Sachems, they owned it their act.

It being informed unto the Narragansett Sachem Quissuckquash, that his Majesty of England hath graciously been pleased in our Pattent, to take the sayd Sachem and all the Narragansett Indians and lands into his gracious protection, as subjects unto himselfe; and also that his Majestye hath given this Colony ye government thereof, the sayd Sachem did voluntarily make answer that he most kindly thanked King Charles for his grace therein. It being also informed unto Nineganett, Sachem of the Nayantacott country, as was informed as aforesayd unto the Narragansett Sachem; he answered, that he most kindly thanked King Charles. The sayd Sachems being shewed aforesayd declaration and petition, sent by Mr. John Nieckson, they owned the same to be their act, and doe returne his Majesty great thanks for his gracious reliefe in releasinge their lands from those forced purchases and mortgages of theyr lands by some of the other Colonies.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY HELD AT NEWPORT, THE 18TH DAY OF JUNE, 1817.

Will Davel, Indian, is ordered and allowed £3, out of the general treasury, for the loss of one of his eyes in the colony's service.

An Act enabling and appointing overseers to lease out the lands of Ninegret, the sachem, in the Narragansett country:

Whereas, Ninegret, the sachem of Narragansett lands in the colony of Rhode Island, &c., hath petitioned this Assembly to appoint three overseers, to oversee and rent out his lands, to prevent his being defrauded therein, and has also desired this Assembly to dispossess all those that shall refuse to hire of his overseers as shall

be appointed by the Governor and company of said colony, for the time being; and also, in case he hath need to sell any lands, that he may be, by the said Governor and company for the time being, assisted therein. For the complying with said petition, and for the better securing of the said sachem's lands and profits, be it therefore enacted by this Assembly, and by the authority thereof it is enacted, that Col. William Wanton, of Newport, Major Thomas Frye, of East Greenwich, and Capt. Joseph Stanton, of Westerly, be, and they hereby are, appointed overseers to oversee and lease out said sachem's lands, as shall to them seem most conducive for the said sachem's interest; empowering them, and they or any two of them, are hereby empowered, to dispossess all and every person that now is, or hereafter shall be, in possession of any said sachem's lands, and shall refuse to agree, comply and hire said lands at such rents and services as by them, or major part of them, shall be found most beneficial for said sachem's interest; they not granting any lease for any longer term than seven years; and the said sachem to pay the said charge thereof.

It is ordered by this Assembly, that Ninegret, sachem, have £10 lent him out of the general treasury, for two years; and then to be paid by said Ninigret into the general treasury out of the rents of his lands.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE SECOND DAY OF MAY, 1718.

An Act to prevent Indians being sued for debt:

Whereas, several persons in this colony, out of wicked, covetous and greedy designs, often draw Indians into their debt, and take advantage of their inordinate love of rum, and other strong liquors, by selling the same to them, or otherwise to take advantages, by selling them other goods, at extravagant rates, upon trust, whereby said Indians have been impoverished, to the dishonor of the government. [Here follows the act. See public laws for 1719.]

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE 17TH DAY OF JUNE, 1718.

Be it ordered, enacted and declared by this Assembly, and the authority thereof, that Ninegret, sachem, shall and do pass over and convey unto Cooke Ruffin's son, the land formerly granted his

father, and to be under the same restriction as Ninegret's other lands are.

Whereas, an act of the General Assembly of this colony, made and passed at Newport, the 18th day of June, 1717, restricted the overseers of Ninegret, the sachem in Narragansett country, from leasing out any of the said sachem's lands for any longer time than seven years, the which hath been found prejudicial to the said sachem's interest, and hath much hindered the improvement of his lands;

Be it therefore enacted by the General Assembly, and by the authority of the same, that the overseers of the land of the said Ninegret, sachem, shall and may have power to lease out the land of the said sachem for any term or time, not exceeding fourteen years, as to them shall seem most conducive for the said sachem's interest; any act or clauses of acts to the contrary hereof, in any wise, notwithstanding.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE 23D DAY OF JUNE, 1724.

An explanation of an act of Assembly, exempting Indians from being sued for debt. [See public laws, 1730, p. 133.]

The trustees of Ninegret have paid into the general treasury £50, out of the money borrowed by said Ninegret of the colony.

There was paid into the general treasury of this colony, on the 13th day of June, 1727, the sum of £60, by Ninegret's trustees, the late sachem, in full of what was due from said sachem to this colony.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT WARWICK, THE LAST WEDNESDAY OF OCTOBER, 1727.

This Assembly being informed that some persons have spread a report tending to the prejudice of the present constitution of this government, viz., that the General Assembly of this government is against the settling of a church, by any persons whatsoever, in the township of Westerly, which is false and groundless;

It is enacted and declared, by the General Assembly of this Colony, that ten or twenty acres of land be laid out in the town of Westerly, out of the land of Ninegret, (he desiring the same,) for the erecting thereon a house for worship, according to the form of the church of England, or for erecting of a meeting house thereon (he desiring it,) for the use of any other society or societies; and

the trustees that are or shall be appointed to manage Ninegret's affairs by the government, to lay it out where they shall think it most convenient for a church or meeting house, upon said Ninegret's request.

Voted, that Ninegret's trustees render an account to the Assembly, at their next session, of the disposition of the monies received by them.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE FIRST WEDNESDAY OF MAY, 1731.

Voted, that Col. William Wanton, Major Thomas Frye, and Lieut. Col. Joseph Stanton, be a committee to survey several pieces of land in Westerly, which Ninegret, sachem, proposes to sell and dispose of, and make report to the next session of this Assembly.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE SECOND MONDAY IN JUNE, 1731.

Whereas, Col. Wanton, Major Thomas Frye, and Col. Joseph Stanton, were appointed a committee to survey several pieces of land, in Westerly, which Ninegret, Indian sachem, proposes to sell, and in pursuance thereunto, said committee having made report to this Assembly with three plats thereof;

It is therefore voted and ordered, that said report be accepted, and that said committee be still continued, and appointed to assist said Ninegret in selling said land, or any part thereof; and that notifications be set up in every town in this Colony forthwith, advertising of the sale of said land.

And it is further ordered, that Ninegret, with the advice and consent of said committee, have full power to sell two acres of land that Stephen Wilcox formily bought of Ninegret, the late Indian sachem, deceased, where the iron works stood.

Whereas, Col. William Wanton, Major Thomas Frye, and Col. Joseph Stanton, (who were appointed to assist Ninegret, Indian sachem, in selling some lands,) presented a plat of said Ninegret's lands, containing three thousand one hundred and fifty-eight and three-quarter acres, dated the 14th day of June, 1731, a piece of said land taken off of the east corner of said plat, containing three hundred acres, which Col. Joseph Stanton purchased of the late Ninegret, Indian sachem, deceased, is ordered by this Assembly to be confirmed to the said Joseph Stanton.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT EAST GREENWICH, THE 18TH DAY OF FEBRUARY, 1734–5.

Whereas, Charles Augustus Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett Indians, by memorial to this Assembly, did set forth that there was an act of Assembly made and passed at Warwick, in the year 1727, ordering that ten or twenty acres of the memorialist's land should be laid out by a committee therein named, whereon to build a house for public worship, if the memorialist should desire the same; and in consequence thereof, the majority of the committee (the memorialist being present and desiring it) did mark out a convenient place for said purpose; upon which spot the members of the Church of England, in Westerly, did, at the memorialist's earnest desire, and at their proper charge, erect a house for public worship, in the way of the Church of England; but the land granted by the aforesaid act, for the said use, never having been laid out, nor properly conveyed by deed, the memorialist requested that twenty acres, at least, of his land be ordered forthwith to be laid out, and duly conveyed for the use of the Church of England, and in that part of it where said house or church is built;

Which being duly considered, be it enacted by the General Assembly, and by the authority of the same it is enacted, that Col. Joseph Stanton, Capt. John Hill, and Mr. William Babcock, or any two of them, be, and they are hereby, appointed and empowered to lay out twenty acres of land, as in the above memorial is prayed for; and that Ninegret be, and he is hereby, empowered to pass a deed for the due conveyance of the said twenty acres of land to the present minister of the Church of England, in Westerly aforesaid, and to his successors, to and for the use of said church, which deed, so passed, shall be good and valid in the law, for the purpose aforesaid.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT WARWICK, THE THIRD MONDAY IN AUGUST, 1735.

Whereas, the inhabitants of the town of Westerly did, by petition, set forth to this Assembly, that they were destitute of a harbor there, by reason of the breach (that formerly used to be open in the largest salt pond in Westerly aforesaid) being shut or filled up; and at the time it used to be open, was but of little advantage to said inhabitants, because of the shallowness of the water in said breach; and as it is conceived, that by bringing or turning Pawca-

tuck river into said pond, it would be a means to cause said breach to continue open, and be much larger, and have more depth of water in it than it hath at any time heretofore had, so that the said pond would become a very commodious harbor, and navigable as well for small sloops as boats; and that it would be likewise very convenient for the catching and making of codfish, which would be of great service to this colony; but the cost and charge in carrying on said work would be more than the inhabitants of said town of Westerly were able to bear, and praying that this Assembly would assist them in defraying part of the charge in turning off the said river into said pond;

Which, being duly considered, it is therefore enacted by the General Assembly, that the said river be turned into the said pond, in order that the said breach may be opened; three-quarters of the charge whereof to be allowed and paid out of the general treasury: Provided, that the said town of Westerly, or any person in their behalf, will first procure and give sufficient bond to pay and discharge the other fourth part of the charge thereof; and also make and maintain such and so many bridges as there shall ever be occasion to make across said river, between the place where it is taken from its usual channel and the place where it will fall into said pond. And that Col. Joseph Stanton, Capt. Oliver Babcock, Mr. Samuel Perry, and Mr. Samuel Clarke, are appointed a committee to carry on the colony's part, and are empowered to draw money out of the general treasury as necessity requires.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE THIRD TUESDAY IN FEBRUARY, 1735–36.

Voted and ordered, that Christopher Champlin, of Westerly, be, and he is hereby, appointed one of the committee for turning of Pawcatuck river (in the room of Capt. Oliver Babcock, who refuses.) And that those persons who appeared in behalf of the town of Westerly, viz., Col. Joseph Stanton, Mr. Christopher Champlin, Mr. Samuel Perry, and Mr. Samuel Clarke, be accepted and allowed of as sufficient bondsmen for said town, in case they give a bond of £2,000 to the general treasurer, according to the act of Assembly made for that purpose, for carrying on and bearing the one-quarter part of the charge of turning the above mentioned river, and making and maintaining all such bridges as shall be made over the same; and that if any others are willing to be bound with the above mentioned persons, they have the liberty.

Whereas, Messrs. Joseph Whipple, John Coddington, and Daniel Jenckes, who were appointed a committee to examine into the accounts of the trustees of the late Indian sachem, did report that they had audited the said accounts, and found that there was due to Col. Jos. Stanton the sum of £134 5s. 8d.; and also, that there were debts out-standing for lands sold, the sum of £150 2s. Whereupon it is voted and ordered, that the said report be accepted; and that the secretary take a copy of Col. Stanton's accounts, at the charge of the said sachem, and deliver the originals again to Col. Stanton.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE FOURTH TUESDAY IN AUGUST, 1738.

An Act for dividing and incorporating the town of Westerly into two towns, and the same to be known and distinguished by the names of Westerly and Charlestown.

Whereas, the present town of Westerly is very large, and its inhabitants are numerous, many of whom live at a very remote distance from the place of meeting appointed for the transacting the public and prudential affairs of the town; and the rivers there (especially in the middle part thereof) being very large, so that the way to said meeting is rendered difficult as well as dangerous, and many of the inhabitants are thereby often impeded and hindered in attending thereon, which proves a great injury and hurt to them;

And whereas, the said town is well situated, and lies commodious for a division into two towns, which being divided, will tend to the general interest and advantage of all its inhabitants;

Be it enacted by the General Assembly of this colony, and by the authority thereof it is enacted, that the line for dividing said town be as follows, viz., beginning northerly, where Wood River enters the line between the said town of Westerly and North Kingstown, and so running by the natural course thereof, so far, until said river empties itself into a river called Pawcatuck; and then to run or extend as said Pawcatuck river runs by the banks thereof, westward, three miles; and from thence a south or southerly course, to the sea; and that, for the future, the town of Westerly extend no further eastward than the aforesaid line.

And be it further enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that all the rest of said lands heretofore Westerly, situate, lying and being to the eastward of the aforesaid line, be, and they are hereby, incorporated and erected a town, and called and distinguished by the name of Charlestown; and that the inhabitants thereof have all the liber-

ties, privileges and immunities in the same manner as the other towns in the government enjoy by charters.

And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that Jeremiah Gould, John Rice, and William Greene, Esqs., be appointed a committee to run a line between the aforesaid town, and erect and make thereon proper monuments and bounds for distinguishing the same, and to perform the same forthwith.

And be it further enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that the Justice of the Peace in the town of Charlestown, as soon as conveniently may be, issue forth a warrant, to summon in the freemen to elect and make choice of their town officers, for the management of the prudential affairs of said town; and also, for the choice of two deputies for said town, to represent the same at the General Assembly in the October session next, and so on from time to time as by charter is appointed; and that the town of Westerly send two deputies, to be chosen in manner as usual.

And be it further enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that each of the said towns have their proportion of the interest of the bank money appropriated for the towns in this colony, in the same proportion, and according to the sums that the lands in each town are mortgaged for.

And be it further enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that the town of Westerly send three grand jurors to attend on the general session of the peace for the county of Kings county, and two petit jurors to attend at the inferior court for said county; and that the town of Charlestown send two grand jurors to attend on said court of general session of the peace, and two petit jurors to attend on said inferior court.

And it is likewise further enacted, that the towns of Westerly and Charlestown shall each send to the superior court one grand juror and one petit juror to attend on the same.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE THIRD TUESDAY IN SEPTEMBER, 1740.

Voted and resolved, that the Honorable Richard Ward, Esq., Governor, and Samuel Perry, Esq., be, and they are hereby, appointed trustees to Ninegret, sachem, in the room of the Honorable John Wanton, Esq., late Governor, and Col. John Potter, both deceased.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT PROVIDENCE, THE 27TH OF OCTOBER, 1708.

At this session, the Assembly appointed Weston Clark, John Mumford of Newport, Phillip Tillinghast of Providence, Joseph Burden of Portsmouth, Richard Green of Warwick, and Captain John Eldred of Kingstown, a Committee to agree with Ninegret, "what may be a sufficient competence of land for him and his people to live upon," and to view the state of the Narragansett country.

In March, 1709, they reported that they had agreed with Ninegret, and that they found a great deal of the land in the country there to be very poor, and some good. The deed of Ninegret is dated March 28, 1709, quit-claiming to the Colony all his title to the vacant lands, excepting a tract bounded as follows: "Beginning where the brook that Joseph Davill's mill standeth,* and runs into the great Salt Pond, and so from said brook on a strait line northerly to Pesquamscut Pond, and by the brook that runs out of Pesquamscut Pond into Pawcatuck river, and so along by Pawcatuck river westward, until it comes to Benjamin Burdick's bridge, and from thence southerly towards Wequopogue, until it meets the grand road, and so along by said road eastward, until it comes near to Christopher Champlin's now dwelling house, and from thence south to the great pond or salt water, and so along by the pond side to the first mention bounds, as it is drawn out upon the draught of the vacant lands." [St. Rec. L. E. 3, 273.]

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE FOURTH MONDAY IN JUNE, 1741.

Voted and resolved, that the trustees of Ninegret, sachem, render an account of their trust to the next session of this Assembly.

Whereas, George Ninegret, Indian sachem of the Narragansett

* Old Ninegret, who reserved this land for his tribe and himself, died somewhere about 1722. He gave to the colony a quit-claim deed of all his vacant lands, except a tract bounded as aforesaid: Beginning at the mouth of Cross' mill brook, (anciently known as Davill's,) where it empties into the salt pond, and thence from said brook on a straight line northerly to Pasquesett pond, and then along Pasquesett brook until it joins the Pawcatuck river at Kenyon's Mills; thence along the said river westward to Benjamin Burdick's bridge, (more recently called Brown's bridge at Burdickville;) and thence southerly toward Wequopogue, a stream running into Quonocontaug pond a little to the west of Quonocontaug Neck, and thence to the Post Road; and then following said road eastward to Christopher Champlin's dwelling house, or very near it; and from thence south to the salt pond, and so along the shore of said pond to the first mentioned bound.

Indians, humbly requested of this honorable Assembly to appoint George Wanton, of Newport, in the county of Newport, merchant, one of his overseers, he being well assured of his fidelity and justice in the management of his affairs;

Whereupon, it is voted and ordered, that the said George Wanton be, and he is hereby, appointed a trustee or overseer to the said sachem, to have the same power in all respects with the other trustees.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT SOUTH KINGSTOWN, THE FIRST DAY OF FEBRUARY, 1741–42.

Whereas, Rouse Helme, Esq., Messrs. Jeremiah Lippett and Job Tripp, Jr., were appointed a committee to audit the accounts of Col. Joseph Stanton, one of the trustees of the Indian sachem, and to make report thereon, which they accordingly did; and reported that they found a balance due to the said Joseph Stanton of £142 12s. 3d., that he had advanced more than received, on account of the said sachem;

Voted and resolved, that Mr. Samuel Perry be, and he is hereby, dismissed from being a trustee to George Ninegret, the Indian sachem, the said sachem having desired the same.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE 18TH DAY OF JUNE, 1745.

Whereas, George Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett Indians, did represent to this General Assembly, that his late deceased brother, Charles Ninegret, (who was sachem of the said Narragansett Indians,) did, in his life time, give twenty acres of land as a glebe to and for the church of England, in Charlestown, in said colony; but his said brother dying before he had made and executed a deed for the same, the said George Ninegret therefore requested leave of the General Assembly, that he might, by a proper deed for that purpose, establish said twenty acres to and for said church; and also, to give and convey twenty acres more of his land, in said Charlestown, for the same use, in such place as shall be agreed on by himself and trustees;

Upon consideration whereof, it is voted and enacted, that the said George Ninegret be, and he is hereby, allowed to pass a deed for the said twenty acres of land given by his said brother Charles

Ninegret; and also for the twenty acres of land that he gives himself, to and for the use of the Church in Charlestown, aforesaid, in such place or places as he and his trustees shall think proper; and that such deed or deeds, so given by him as aforesaid, shall be good and valid in the law, for the uses therein designed, to all intents and purposes whatever.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT SOUTH KINGSTOWN, THE LAST WEDNESDAY OF OCTOBER, 1745.

An Act was passed allowing George Ninegret, the Indian sachem, to sell a part of his land, for the payment of his debts, and the better support of his family.

An Act empowering George Ninegret, the Indian sachem, (with the advice and consent of his trustees,) to exchange twenty acres of land in Charlestown, for the benefit of the Church of England, in that town.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE THIRD TUESDAY OF AUGUST, 1747.

An Act for incorporating the north part of the town of Charlestown, in King's County, into a township, the same to be distinguished and known by the name of Richmond:

Be it enacted by the General Assembly of this Colony, and by the authority thereof it is enacted, that the town of Charlestown, in the county of King's County, &c., be divided into two towns, by a river that runs across said town, known by the name of Pawcatuck River; all the lands to the southward of said river, shall retain the name of Charlestown; and that all the lands to the northward of said river be, and hereby is, incorporated into a township, by the name of Richmond; and to have and enjoy the like privileges as other towns in this colony.

And be it further enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that each of said towns shall have and receive a proportion of the money in and belonging to the treasury of said Charlestown, according to the money for which the lands in each town is mortgaged to the colo-

ny; and that all Justices of the Peace and military officers living within the bounds of said new town, called Richmond, retain their authority, and act as such therein, until the next general election; and that the eldest justice of each of said towns is hereby empowered to grant forth the warrants to some proper officer, whom they shall appoint to warn the inhabitants of said towns to assemble and meet together in some proper place, in said town, on Friday, the second day of this instant, August, in order to choose deputies to represent them at the October session of this Assembly, and also to choose town officers for said towns, agreeably to the laws of this colony; and that each town shall send one grand juror, and one petit juror, to each of the inferior and superior courts, in King's County.

Whereas, Sarah Ninegret, widow of George Ninegret, late sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, deceased, and mother and natural guardian to Thomas Ninegret, an infant, the present sachem of said tribe of Indians, with Tobey Coheys, Samuel Niles, John Trask, William Sachem, Ephraim Coheys, Moses Hammond, James Niles, and Harry Copper, who were appointed by the said tribe of Indians councillors for the present sachem, Thomas Ninegret, in behalf of this sachem, themselves and people of said tribe of Indians, represented to this Assembly, that they, at the last sitting of this Assembly, in May last, did prefer a petition to said Assembly, setting forth the deplorable condition they are brought to by means of some gentlemen, namely, Joseph Whipple, Daniel Coggeshall, Samuel Perry, John Spencer, and David Anthony, Esqs., who, as they are informed, were appointed by the General Assembly, trustees, at its session, A. D. 1746, for the management of the rents and profits of the estate, said by some to be submitted to this government by the late Ninegret, sachem, deceased, in the year 1713; but without the desire, consent, request or knowledge of the said Sarah, and the said councillors or sachem, which was always usual, and such appointment was always at the request of the sachem and his council; and having set forth in said petition, that the said trustees, without the knowledge and consent of the sachem or any of the councillors, have leased out the land, which was always kept and reserved for the tribe of Indians, for planting of corn and raising other necessaries for their support. And the said Sarah and councillors further declared, that it is not only their fields and improvements, that they have fenced, and have been at great labor and charge in making said fences, that are rented out from them; but also, as they are credibly informed, the wood land, which was always kept and reserved for the tribe of Indians for

fire wood; and also the sachem's cedar swamp, is rented out, which was always kept and reserved for the tribe of Indians, to cut stuff and sell the same; and the said Sarah and councillors apprehend that when the General Assembly appointed the above-named trustees, for the care and management of the rents and profits of the estate submitted to this government, in the year 1713, by the late Ninegret, sachem, deceased, that the General Assembly had no design nor intent to give the said trustees power to lease out the sachem's land without his knowledge and consent, and the knowledge and advice of his council; and they likewise apprehended that the submission made by the sachem in the year 1713, (if any was made by him in that year,) doth not give the said trustees, or any others, power to lease out the sachem's land without his knowledge and consent; they also informed this Assembly, that the gentlemen who were trustees to the late sachem, deceased, never leased out any of the said sachem's land without first having the leave and consent of the sachem and his council; and as this Assembly have it in their power to relieve them in this their distressed condition, for they know not, as the case is, where to go, nor how to subsist themselves, and must be unavoidably starved without relief;

Therefore, they humbly prayed that this Assembly would take their circumstances into consideration, and dismiss the above named trustees from their trusteeship, and make void all the leases given by said trustees of the sachem's land; and that the Assembly would allow and accept of their known and trusty friends, Col. Joseph Stanton, Capt. George Wanton, and Capt. John Frye, to be trustees for the care and management of the sachem's estate, for the sachem's interest; the last named gentlemen having been trustees to the late sachem; and the said Sarah and councillors were knowing to the proceedings and management in that affair, and that their proceedings gave good satisfaction to the sachem, and a general satisfaction to the tribe of Indians, &c.

Upon consideration whereof, it is voted and resolved, that the prayer of the said Sarah and councillors be, and it is hereby, granted; and that the said Joseph Whipple, Daniel Coggeshall, Samuel Perry, John Spencer, and David Anthony, be, and they are hereby, removed from their aforesaid office of trustees; and that all the leases by them made, of the sachem's land, be, and they are hereby, declared and made null and void; and the aforesaid Col. Joseph Stanton, Capt. George Wanton, and Capt. John Frye, are appointed trustees, for the care and management of the sachem's estate, for his interest.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT SOUTH KINGSTOWN, THE LAST TUESDAY IN FEBRUARY, 1751–52.

Whereas, Col. Christopher Champlin, and Capt. Nathaniel Lewis, deputies of Charlestown, did, in behalf of said town, represent unto this Assembly, that they are under great difficulty and disadvantage, for want of some convenient harbor or landing, for transportation, it being about sixteen miles from said town to Point Judith Pier, and almost as far to Pawcatuck River, which places are the nearest harbors they have to depend on; which they set forth to the General Assembly, some years past, who appointed a committee to inspect into the circumstances of said affair, and find out whether said difficulty might not be remedied by turning a branch of Pawcatuck River into a large salt pond in said town; which stream of water (when turned into said pond) will undoubtedly keep open a large breach running out of said pond into the sea; that the committee did view and examine into the affair, and reported to the Assembly, that it might be very well effected, and that without an extraordinary charge, &c.; that upon the report of said committee, the Assembly, in their wisdom, passed an act for turning said river, for the purpose aforesaid, on conditions which were not easily to be performed by the petitioners; they being to procure sufficient bonds to make and maintain such and so many bridges as should become necessary and occasioned by turning said river; and also to carry on the fourth part of said work, the other three parts to be done at the charge of the colony; that now the conditions enjoined by said act of Assembly are performed, &c; whereupon, they prayed to be directed to go on in the aforesaid work, agreeably to the aforesaid act of Assembly; and that the colony's part of the charge be paid out of the interests of the present bank, &c.; and this Assembly having taken the premises into consideration, do vote and resolve, and it is voted and resolved, that Benjamin Hazard, Jeremiah Lippett, and Joseph Nichols, Esqs., together with Messrs. Joseph Harrison and Isaiah Wilkinson, be, and they, or the major part of them, are hereby appointed a committee, to inspect into all the circumstances relating to the aforementioned affair, and form an estimate of the cost and charge of performing said work, and report to this Assembly at their next session.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE SECOND MONDAY OF JUNE, 1753.

An Act for the relief of Charles Ninegret, sachem, an infant.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT PROVIDENCE, THE 10TH DAY OF JANUARY, 1757.

The Hon. Stephen Hopkins, Governor, the Hon. John Gardner, Deputy Governor.

Whereas, Thomas Ninegret and several others, being part of the tribe of Indians living in Charlestown, preferred a petition, and represented unto this Assembly, that the said town of Charlestown, at a late quarter meeting, where but a small number of freemen were present, passed a vote obliging the said Indians to pay a part of the said town's proportion of the colony rate, which at this time is collecting; and accordingly the rate makers have assessed them, and all the other Indians of the said town; which being unusual, and, as they apprehend, a grievance, especially as they support their own poor without putting the town to any expense; wherefore, they prayed to be relieved in such a way as may be thought proper; on consideration whereof,

Be it enacted by this General Assembly, and by the authority thereof it is enacted, that the tribe of Indians aforesaid, be, and they are hereby, exempted from paying any share or part of the rate or tax aforesaid; and that the rate makers of the said town of Charlestown be, and they hereby are, directed and required to assess that part of the said town's proportion upon the white inhabitants, that hath already been assessed upon the Indians of the said town. God save the King.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT SOUTH KINGSTOWN, THE 14TH DAY OF FEBRUARY, 1758.

Whereas, the Rev. Joseph Park, of Charlestown, in the county of King's County, presented this Assembly with a memorial, setting forth that he hath been ever ready to contribute all the assistance in his power to repel His Majesty's enemies from their injurious encroachments on his dominions and just rights in North America, and to defend the country; that in the year 1756, he consented to the voluntary enlistment of three of his sons, who served in the expedition formed for the reduction of Crown Point; that when they were discharged from the service, upon their return homeward, they put their clothing and other furniture, to the value of about £100, currency, in their chest, which was unfortunately lost in the sea; that this summer, when the enemy attacked Fort William

Henry, they were substituted to go, and voluntarily went, in the stead of officers, who declined; that they did this without any consideration, purely to serve their country, and oblige their friends; that he, the memorialist, was thereby put to considerable charge, and received damage in his business; wherefore, he prayed for such allowance as should be thought proper; on consideration whereof,

This Assembly do vote and resolve, and it is voted and resolved, that the sum of £100 be paid the said Joseph Park, out of the general treasury, for the use of his aforesaid sons, as an allowance for what they lost, as aforesaid; but that nothing be allowed them as officers.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT EAST GREENWICH, ON THE 20TH DAY OF AUGUST, 1759.

An Act repealing all the laws of this colony, which restrict or prohibit the native Indians that live within the same, from disposing of their lands.

Whereas, Thomas Ninegret, of Charlestown, in the county of King's County, and colony aforesaid, gentleman, preferred a petition, and represented unto this Assembly, that having been unhappily engaged in several law suits, in defence of his right, he hath been obliged to advance large sums of money; which, with other necessary expenses, he was put to for clothing, board, &c., during his minority, hath greatly involved him in debt; and as the laws of the colony now stand, he cannot, in the apprehension of some, sell or dispose of his estate for the payment and discharge of his debts; wherefore, he, the said Thomas Ninegret, prayed that the law which relates to the purchasing lands of Indians, may be repealed, and he have the same liberty of selling and disposing of his estate, or any part thereof, as others of His Majesty's subjects enjoy; on consideration whereof,

Be it enacted by this General Assembly, and by the authority of the same it is enacted, that all and every of the laws at any time made and passed in this colony, to restrict or prohibit the native Indians, that live within the same, from selling and disposing of their estates, be, and they hereby are, repealed, declared and rendered null and void, to every intent and purpose, whatsoever.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT EAST GREENWICH, THE 23D DAY OF FEBRUARY, 1761.

An Act for raising, by way of lottery, the sum of £20,000, in bills of credit, of the old tenor, to be appropriated for the turning one branch of the river called Pawcatuck River into the large pond in Charlestown.

Whereas, Thomas Ninegret, Christopher Champlin, and others, inhabitants of the county of King's County, preferred a petition, and represented unto this Assembly, that the inhabitants living in several of the towns in the southern parts of this colony, are put to great trouble and expense in transporting to market the produce of their farms by land, and bringing from market things necessary for their families; and whereas, there is in the town of Charlestown, a large pond, which may be made a good harbor for small vessels, and would be of great utility and advantage to the inhabitants, provided the communication of said pond with the sea could be kept open, which now is often interrupted; and whereas, the said petitioners are well advised that the turning of one branch of a river, called Pawcatuck River, into the said pond, would effectually keep open the said communication, so that small vessels at all times could with ease and conveniency pass from and into said pond, would not only answer the ends and purposes aforesaid, but would be of great advantage to the inhabitants, in carrying on the codfishery, &c.

Here follows the act and scheme of the lottery. The directors named in the act were Robert Potter, Gideon Hoxsey, John Champlin, Joseph Hoxsey, John Congdon, and Samuel Burdick, Jr.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, ON THE SECOND MONDAY OF JUNE, 1763.

Whereas, a considerable number of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, within this Colony, preferred a petition, and represented unto this Assembly, that the land belonging to the said tribe of Indians, which was reserved by old Ninegret, the Narragansett sachem, was by him reserved to and for his use, and the use of his said tribe and their children, forever; that a law was passed in this Colony, to make void all grants, deeds and leases made by the sachem of said tribe, without the consent and approbation of the

General Assembly; that the said law, although it had been long in force, and proved very beneficial to said tribe, hath been lately repealed; in consequence whereof, Thomas Ninegret, the present sachem, hath, without the approbation of the General Assembly, or consent of said tribe, sold and conveyed away divers tracts of land belonging to said tribe, and is daily so doing; by reason whereof, a great part of said tribe are in danger of being utterly deprived of the means of procuring a maintenance, and must either starve or become a town charge; and thereupon, the petitioners prayed this Assembly to pass an act to prohibit the said sachem from selling any more of said lands from them, (especially their particular settlements,) without the consent, as formerly, of his tribe, and of the General Assembly; and that until they can be heard by this Assembly, the said sachem may be restricted from selling any of said lands. On consideration whereof,

It is voted and resolved, that this petition be referred to the next session; that Thomas Ninegret, the present sachem of said tribe, be served with a copy thereof, and cited to appear at the next session, to answer the same; and that in the mean time, the said Thos. Ninegret be, and he is hereby, restricted and forbid to sell and dispose of any lands in the Narragansett country, upon any pretence whatever.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, ON THE FIRST MONDAY IN AUGUST, 1763.

Whereas, a number of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, in this Colony, preferred a petition to this Assembly, at the last session, which was referred to the present session; on consideration whereof,

It is voted and resolved, that Joseph Lippitt, Thomas Church, Job Randall, and John Barker, Esqs., and Mr. William Potter, be, and they are hereby, appointed a committee, to set off and bound the various tracts of land that heretofore have been appropriated, by the sachems of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, to that tribe, for their sole use, maintenance and support; he, the sachem of said tribe, agreeing and consenting to give and execute a good and effectual deed to said tribe; and also liberty of passing and repassing on his lands to the pond and sea, for the advantage of fishing; which the petitioners, in presence of the upper house of Assembly, agreed to accept of.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, ON THE SECOND MONDAY OF JUNE, 1764.

Whereas, Joseph Lippitt, Thomas Church, Job Randall, and John Barker, Esqs., presented unto this Assembly the following report, to wit:

Report of the Committee concerning the lands of the Narragansett tribe of Indians:

We, the subscribers, with Mr. William Potter, being appointed by the Honorable General Assembly, at their session in August last, to set off and bound the various tracts of land that heretofore have been appropriated by the sachems of the Narragansett tribe of Indians to that tribe, for their sole use, maintenance and support, &c., do report: That, agreeably to said appointment, we have been and viewed the said lands; and on examining said Indians, and others, cannot find any lands set off or appropriated by the sachems to said tribe as a tribe; but we find various tracts or pieces of land, which have been set off to particular persons or families, amounting, in the whole, to between two and three thousand acres; which, the sachem saith, is what he meant to give and execute a deed of to said tribe, and is still willing to do it, according to his agreement and promise at said General Assembly; but as there are large tracts of land, which are neither leased by the sachem, nor set off to any of the tribe, but seem to be in common, used when wanted, both by sachem and tribe, the petitioners insisting on that, or part of it, being set off with the rest. And whereas, there is a larger number of said tribe than the petitioners, who seem utterly against being set off, but choose to remain with the sachem, as heretofore; and say the petitioners may be set off by themselves, but they are not willing to be set off with them; but we not having authority to set off any lands to part of the tribe, unless we could have persuaded them to agree where and how much; so, after several days waiting on them, trying to get them to agree how much to set off, and where, but we could not, we were obliged to return, and do report as above said.

All which is submitted by Joseph Lippitt, Thomas Church, Job Randall, John Barker.

N. B. As the lands set off and improved by the tribe, or particular persons, are intermixed with other lands, some leased, and others unimproved, we think, if it be set off from the other lands, it must be surveyed, which is a work of considerable time.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, ON THE LAST MONDAY IN JUNE, 1767.

Whereas, a letter was laid before this Assembly, from Andrew Oliver, Esq., to His Honor the Governor, respecting a school house erected on the Indian lands, in the Narragansett country;

It is thereupon voted and resolved, that Thomas Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, be notified by a citation from the secretary, directed to some proper officer, to appear at the next session; and that, in the mean time, he do not by any means dispose of any of his lands; and that His Honor the Governor be, and he is hereby, requested to write to Mr. Oliver, and inform him of this vote.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT SOUTH KINGSTOWN, THE LAST WEDNESDAY IN OCTOBER, 1767.

It is voted and resolved, that Joseph Hazard, Daniel Coggeshall, James Helme, Benjamin Peckham, and Freeman Perry, Esqs., be, and they, or the major part of them, are hereby appointed a committee, to advertise all persons who have any demands on Thomas Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians in this colony, to bring in the same, upon oath, to the said committee; who, with the assistance of the said sachem, and five of his council, are empowered to settle his accounts, and ascertain what is justly due to each person; and also to sell and dispose of so much of the Indian lands as may be sufficient to discharge the just debts, and also the charges arising on this affair. Provided, nevertheless, that the said committee shall inquire into his personal estate, and apply so much thereof as they shall think proper, for the payment of said debts, before they proceed to the sale of the lands.

And it is further voted and resolved, that the said sachem be, and he is hereby, forever hereafter restricted from selling any more of said lands; and that the same shall not be chargeable for any debts he shall hereafter contract.

This Assembly, taking into consideration the letter from Andrew Oliver, Esq., laid before this Assembly at the last session, do vote and resolve, and by and with the consent of Thomas Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, in this colony, it is voted and resolved, that the said Thomas Ninegret, and five of his council, make, execute and give, to the secretary of this colony, a good and legal deed of an island in a certain swamp, in Charles-

town, in this colony, containing about three acres, whereon stands a school house, for the use of a school for said tribe of Indians, forever; with the privilege of a convenient passage to and from the same; that Matthew Robinson, Esq., be, and he is hereby, appointed to draw the same deed, and see the same executed; and that the whole charge accruing thereon be paid by said tribe.

1781019

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT PROVIDENCE, THE LAST WEDNESDAY IN OCTOBER, 1768.

It is voted and resolved, that Thomas Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, in conjunction with five of his councilors, be allowed to sign, and in common form to execute, a deed or deeds, to any person or persons, of so much land, belonging to him and his said tribe, as will be sufficient to pay and discharge all his debts, as settled and allowed by the committee of this Assembly, in the October session, in the year 1767; thereby conveying to said purchaser or purchasers an estate in fee simple; that as well the quantity of land so to be conveyed, be allowed by said committee, as also that the said committee do approve of the conveyances, by signing said deeds, certifying under their hands, that they approve of the same. And it is the design and intent of this Assembly, that none of those lands may be taken, sold and disposed of by the aforesaid sachem and his councilors, that are in the actual possession and under the particular separate improvement of any particular Indian or Indians, which they hold and use as their private parts or possessions. And it is further voted and resolved, that the said committee, or the major part of them, be, and they are hereby, authorized and empowered to take and receive all further claims and demands of debts which were contracted before the October session of the Assembly, in the year 1767, or from any of the creditors of the said sachem, within one month after the rising of this Assembly, and not after. And also said committee is hereby empowered to take and receive of and from the purchaser or purchasers of said lands, to be sold, as aforesaid, all and every sum and sums of money arising from the sale thereof, to and for the use of the said creditors of said sachem; and to pay said creditors their respective debts; therewith taking full discharges therefor, from each creditor for his respective debt or debts; and that the said committee be paid for their trouble out of said money rising from said sale, as this Assembly shall hereafter direct and order;

and the said committee render an account of their doings thereon, to this Assembly.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT EAST GREENWICH, ON THE LAST MONDAY IN FEBRUARY, 1769.

Upon the petition of Thomas Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, and six of his council—

It is voted and resolved, that Joseph Hazard, Daniel Coggeshall, James Helme, Sylvester Robinson, and Freeman Perry, Esqs., be, and they, or the major part of them, are hereby, appointed a committee, to complete the settling of the accounts of Thomas Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, in this colony, with the assistance of five of his council; and to sell and dispose of so much of the Indian land as will be sufficient to discharge his just debts; that therein they follow the directions and orders of this Assembly, as contained in the votes of the General Assembly relating to said matters, at their session in October, 1767, and October, 1768, with this addition, that they immediately proceed upon that business, and complete the same within three months after the rising of this Assembly; and that they have full power therein, and the same allowance therefor as the committee appointed by said votes heretofore made and passed.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, ON THE SECOND MONDAY OF JUNE, 1769.

It is voted and resolved, that James Helme, Joseph Hazard, and Sylvester Robinson, Esqs., be, and they are hereby, appointed a committee, to sell and dispose of the real estate of Thomas Ninegret, Indian sachem, for the payment of his debts: and the same to do in three months from the rising of this Assembly, agreeably to the restrictions and votes already passed for that purpose.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT EAST GREENWICH, ON THE SECOND MONDAY IN SEPTEMBER, 1769.

Whereas, James Daniel, William Sachem, David Phillip, Henry Harry, and Christopher Harry, the council of Thomas Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, preferred a petition,

and represented unto this Assembly, that the committee appointed to make sale of the real estate of said Thomas Ninegret, for the payment of his just debts, have sold some of the said lands; that it appears that the whole of his debts cannot be paid without selling a piece of land called and known by the name of Fort Neck; one part of which lies to the southward, and the other to the northward, of the post road; that part lying to the southward being all the land belonging to the said Thomas Ninegret that joins to the Salt Pond, upon which all the said tribe depend for their fishing; that when the committee were disposing of the land of the said Thomas Ninegret, he, together with the petitioners, considering that the tribe principally depended upon the fishery for a living, wanted to dispose of the said piece of land, called Fort Neck, to such person or persons as would be agreeable to them; but that the committee, being of opinion that the said land must be disposed of at public sale, could not allow them that privilege, and adjourned to the 27th day of this instant, September; and therefore they prayed this Assembly to grant them the liberty to sell and dispose of the said piece of land, called Fort Neck, to such person or persons as shall be agreeable to them, under the care and inspection of the said committee, and at the value of the said land.

And whereas, the petitioners further represented, that since the order of Assembly for selling the estate of the said Thomas Ninegret, for the payment of his debts, he hath contracted other debts for his necessary subsistance: and if it had not been for the favors he received from some particular friends, must have suffered; that every person to whom he owed any sum which could be brought to a justice's court, hath sued him, and he hath been obliged to make over every thing he hath of personal estate, even to the clothes on his back, to prevent his going to jail for his small debts; and that unless a sufficient quantity of land be sold to pay the small demands against him, he must immediately go to jail; and thereupon they further prayed, that the said committee may be empowered to sell a sufficient quantity of land to pay the just debts contracted by the said Thomas Ninegret since the General Assembly have restrained him from disposing of his estate; the demands against him being under the same inspection of the committee as those demands which were against him before the act of Assembly so restraining him. And the premises being duly considered—

It is voted and resolved, that the committee appointed at the last session, to sell and dispose of the real estate of Thomas Ninegret, Indian sachem, for the payment of his debts, be, and they are hereby, continued a committee for that purpose; and empowered

to complete the same, within three months after the rising of this Assembly.

And it is further voted and resolved, that the said committee be, and they are hereby, empowered, with the consent of the said sachem and five of his council, to sell a sufficient quantity of the said sachem's lands to pay all the just debts he now oweth.

And it is further voted and resolved, that the petitioners be, and they are hereby, empowered to sell and dispose of the said piece of land, called and known by the name of Fort Neck, to such person or persons as they shall think proper, either at public or private sale; the money arising from the sale thereof to be paid to the committee, and to be appropriated to the payment of the said sachem's debts; and the deeds of the estate or estates which shall be sold in pursuance of this act, shall be made and given in the same manner as is directed by an act of this Assembly, passed in October, A. D. 1768, appointing a committee to sell and dispose of the estate of the said Thomas Ninegret, for the payment of his debts.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD FOR THE COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND AND PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS, AT SOUTH KINGSTOWN, ON THE LAST MONDAY IN FEBRUARY, 1770.

Whereas, Esther Sachem, (calling herself queen of the tribe of Indians in this colony,) Thomas Sachem, her husband, and Henry Harry, with others, as her council, who preferred a petition unto this Assembly, praying that she, with her husband and council, and James Helme, Joseph Haszard, and Sylvester Robinson, Esqs., (who were a committee appointed by this Assembly, to dispose of the estate of Thomas Ninegret, deceased, late sachem of said tribe, for the payment of his debts,) may make a deed or deeds of the estate of the said Thomas Ninegret, for the payment of his just debts, in the same manner as the said Thomas Ninegret, in his life time, with his council, and the said committee, by act of Assembly, might have done; and whereas, Samuel Niles and others, (calling themselves a council, appointed by said tribe, for transacting their public affairs,) did appear before this Assembly, and for the settlement of the disputes and differences subsisting in said tribe, did mutually agree that the Hon. Joseph Wanton, Esq., the Hon. Stephen Hopkins, Esq., and Joseph Haszard, Esq., or any two of them, by their consent, and by order of this Assembly,) should be empowered to inquire into the subject matter of their disputes, and in

particular to ascertain and to set off all the lands which shall, upon inquiry and examination, appear to them to have been the lands or estates of the said Thomas Ninegret, deceased, for the payment and satisfaction of the debts due to his creditors and to his heirs, after such debts as are paid and satisfied; that the expense of such inquiry and examination be equally paid by the said two parties; and that the said report be made to this Assembly at the next session; and the premises being duly considered;

Be it enacted by this General Assembly, and by the authority thereof it is enacted, that the above recited agreement be, and hereby is, approved; and that the said Joseph Wanton, Stephen Hopkins, and Joseph Haszard, or any two of them, be empowered to do and transact every thing submitted to them by said agreement.

And be it further enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that the above-named James Helme, Joseph Haszard, and Sylvester Robinson, or any two of them, be empowered to take into their care and possession all such lands as shall be set off as the estate of the said Thomas Ninegret, deceased, and the same to improve, in such a manner as they shall think most for the interest of his heirs and creditors, until so much of them shall be disposed of as will be sufficient to satisfy and pay his just debts. God save the King.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD FOR THE COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND AND PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS, AT NEWPORT, ON THE SECOND MONDAY IN JUNE, 1770.

Whereas, Esther Sachem and Thomas Sachem preferred the following petition unto this Assembly, to wit:

Petition of Esther Sachem, and her husband, to the General Assembly, relative to Thomas Ninegret, late sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians:

To the Honorable General Assembly, to be holden at Newport, in the county of Newport, on the second Monday of June, A. D. 1770, humbly show Esther Sachem of Charlestown, in King's county, who is heir-at-law to Thomas Ninegret, sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, together with her husband, Thomas Sachem, that the General Assembly did take the affairs of her deceased brother into their care, long before his death, and appointed a committee to take an account of his debts, and dispose of so much of his lands as would discharge the debt against him; who proceeded so far as to take an account of his debts, and to dispose

of a small part of his lands; when the General Assembly interposed, and appointed a new committee, to set off what did belong to the sachem, that should be sold to discharge the debts against the estate; which said committee have done nothing; that, as the affair hath been several years in this situation, the creditors to said estate are uneasy, and the principal part of said estate is under a heavy mortgage, and unless the General Assembly orders something to be immediately done, all the creditors will sue at the August court; and that the mortgage is now in suit, and hath been continued two terms, and must be yielded up at the rising of the August court, unless the affair can be settled before; besides, the debts are upon interest, and increase fast, which, with the charges of two law suits, will swallow up the whole estate, if speedy remedy be not taken.

Therefore, they humbly pray the General Assembly to take their distressed circumstances into consideration, and order the last appointed committee to proceed immediately, and set off what lands shall be sold; and upon their setting off said land, that the former committee immediately proceed to dispose of the lands, and pay the demands against the estate, so far as the General Assembly have ordered them to be paid.

And they, as in duty bound, will ever pray.

ESTHER SACHEM, her ⋈ mark.
THOMAS SACHEM, his ⋈ mark.

July 11th, 1770.

On consideration whereof, it is voted and resolved, that the foregoing petition be, and hereby is, granted.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD FOR THE COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND AND PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS, AT EAST GREENWICH, ON THE SECOND MONDAY IN SEPTEMBER, 1770.

The Hon. Joseph Wanton, Governor; the Hon. Darius Sessions, Deputy Governor.

Whereas, the Hon. Stephen Hopkins, Esq., and Joseph Haszard, Esq., presented unto this Assembly the following report, to wit:

Report of the Committee appointed by the General Assembly, relative to the affairs of the Narragansett tribe of Indians:

We, the subscribers, being appointed a committee, by the General Assembly, to inquire into some disputes subsisting among the Narragansett tribe of Indians, and to endeavor to settle the same, do report:

That we repaired into the Indian country, convened all the principal Indians there before us, and prevailed with them all to agree, that as much of their land may be sold as will pay the late sachem Thomas' debts; provided, that no land be sold for that purpose but such as the tribe shall appoint; and that the General Assembly pass an act, that no more of the Indian lands may be sold afterwards, upon any pretence whatsoever.

The Indians requested that the committee appointed to adjust the sachem Thomas' debts may be empowered to examine for what the debts became due, notwithstanding they may now be reduced to mortgages, bonds, notes, &c., suggesting great impositions therein. The Indians further requested, that the General Assembly would appoint two of them to be Justices of the Peace, for punishing drunkenness, breach of the peace, and other offences amongst themselves. Then the Indians pointed out the following parcels of land to be sold:

1. The large house the late sachem Thomas lived in, with twenty-six acres of land adjacent to it.

2. The house the late sachem George dwelt in, with about sixty acres of land about it.

3. A tract of land, heretofore sold at vendue to Isaac Nye, but not yet measured, nor any deed given.

4. A small piece of land in possession of James Perry.

5. A small piece of land in possession of Joseph Hoxsie.

6. Nine acres and a half of land lying by a place called Wellshare.

And lastly, as much of the Cedar Swamp as will complete the payment of Thomas' debts.

Finally, the Indians did agree and promise to provide as good a support for the remaining branches of the royal family, as the small remains of their public lands, and the loyal affections of a poor people, can admit.

All which agreements and requisitions we promised the Indians to recommend to the General Assembly as fit to be confirmed and granted. And we do accordingly recommend them as worthy the notice and approbation of the General Assembly, and presume to subscribe ourselves,

Their faithful servants,

STEPHEN HOPKINS,
JOSEPH HASZARD.

East Greenwich, Sept. 10th, 1770.

And the said report being duly considered, it is voted and resolved, that the same be, and hereby is, accepted and approved; excepting that part thereof recommending it to the General Assembly to appoint Indian Justices of the Peace, which is disapproved by this Assembly.

It is further voted and resolved, that the several pieces and parcels of land and estates mentioned in the said report, be sold for paying the late sachem Thomas' debts; and that no other of the Indian lands be thereafter sold, on any pretence whatever.

It is further voted and resolved, that the committee appointed to adjust the said sachem Thomas' debts, and to sell the lands for payment thereof, be, and they are hereby, empowered to examine how the debts became due, notwithstanding they may now be reduced to mortgages, bonds, notes, or judgments of courts, which have been obtained by default; that no more of said debts be paid than shall appear to be justly due; and that the said committee be, and they are hereby, empowered to defend against all actions that have been, or shall be, brought against the late sachem Thomas' estate; and that all expenses and costs attending the defending in any action brought, or that may be brought, against the said estate, shall be defrayed out of the said estate.

And it is further voted and resolved, that the Hon. Stephen Hopkins, Esq., be, and he is hereby, added to the committee appointed to adjust the debts of the said Thomas, to examine how they became due, and to sell and dispose of the lands for the payment thereof.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT PROVIDENCE, ON THE LAST MONDAY IN OCTOBER, 1770.

Whereas, this Assembly, at their session in October, 1767, passed an act, appointing Matthew Robinson, Esq., to draw a deed, to be executed by Thomas Ninegret, late sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians in this colony, and five of his council, to the Secretary, of an island in Charlestown, for the use of a school for the said tribe of Indians, and to see the same executed, &c., as by the said act will appear; and whereas, the said Thomas Ninegret hath since deceased without having executed the said deed;

It is therefore voted and resolved, that the said act be revived, and that the present Queen of said tribe, with five of her council, be, and they are hereby, fully empowered to make, execute and give such a deed as in the said act is mentioned.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE FIRST WEDNESDAY OF MAY, 1771.

Whereas, the General Assembly did heretofore appoint the Hon. Stephen Hopkins, Esq., James Helme, Esq., Joseph Haszard, Esq., and Sylvester Robinson, Esq., a committee, they, or the major part of them, to settle and adjust the accounts and demands of the creditors of Thomas Ninegret, late sachem of the Narragansett tribe of Indians, in this colony, and to assist in the sale of so much of his lands as would discharge his debts, and the necessary expense attending said affair; and whereas, the said sachem is since deceased, and proper deeds of sundry tracts of land bargained and sold for that purpose were not in the life-time of said sachem duly made and executed to the purchasers of said lands, Be it therefore enacted by this General Assembly, and by the authority of the same it is enacted, that the aforesaid committee, or the major part of them, together with the council of the said late sachem, or the major part of them, make and execute deeds of so much of the lands of said sachem as will be sufficient for the purpose aforesaid.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, THE FIRST WEDNESDAY OF MAY, 1772.

Whereas, Henry Harry, Christopher Harry, James Daniel, Samuel Niles, James Niles, Ephraim Coheas, Thomas Lewis, John Shattock, and Joseph Tucky, the council for the tribe of Narragansett Indians, in this colony, represented unto this Assembly, that they are all of opinion it will be best to sell the little house, and the two acre lot, and the wood lot, (the exact quantity not being ascertained,) and as much of Fort Neck as will pay all Thomas Ninegret's just debts; and that they are all of one mind, to sell so much of Fort Neck as will pay those debts, and to reserve the lands which will be left to support all their poor; in consideration whereof,

It is voted and resolved, that the committee appointed to sell a part of the real estate of Thomas Ninegret, the late sachem, for the payment of his debts, proceed to do the same, agreeably to the above-mentioned proposal.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT PROVIDENCE, ON THE SECOND MONDAY IN DECEMBER, 1772.

Whereas, two of the council of the Narragansett tribe of Indians,

in this colony, are dead, and William Sachem (one of the said council) refaseth to sign the deeds for the sale of the lands of Thomas Ninegret, deceased, late sachem of the said tribe;

It is therefore voted and resolved, that the committee appointed to settle the estate of the said Thomas Ninegret, with two of the surviving council of the Indians, make and execute a deed or deeds of the lands they have already sold, or may hereafter sell, to pay the said Ninegret's debts; and that such deed or deeds be as good and valid, to all intents and purposes, as though the said deed or deeds had been made and executed by the committee and all the Indian council.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, HELD AT NEWPORT, ON THE THIRD MONDAY IN AUGUST, 1773.

Whereas, the following petition, signed by forty-three Indians of the Narragansett Tribe in this colony, was presented unto this Assembly, to wit:

Petition of the Narragansett Tribe of Indians to the General Assembly.

To the Honorable the General Assembly of His Majesty's colony of Rhode Island, holden at Newport, the third Monday of August, 1773, the petition of us, the subscribers, Indians of the Narragansett Tribe, in said colony, humbly showeth:

That some of our late sachems, through extravagance and indiscretion, had heretofore run themselves largely in debt; and for the discharging those debts we have consented to the sale of the greatest part of the most valuable lands belonging to the tribe; so that there now remaineth only one small piece of Fort Neck, by which they can get to the salt water, from which they fetch great part of the support of themselves and families. And being informed by the honorable committee appointed by the Assembly to settle the accounts and discharge the debts of the late sachem Thomas Ninegret, deceased, that they apprehend that they, with our consent, have sold lands sufficient to discharge the whole of said debts; we therefore humbly petition this honorable Assembly to pass an act to secure to the said tribe, forever, as well the said small part of Fort Neck, as all the other lands now of right belonging to them; and that the same be not, for the future, liable to the payment of debts.

We would further represent to this honorable Assembly, that when the late sachem Ninegret, by his deed of the 28th of March,

1709, in consideration of the protection of the colony, resigned to the Governor and Company of said colony, the lands then called the vacant lands, he, by the same deed, excepted and reserved to himself, for the use of the tribe, a certain tract of land, bounded on the east as followeth, that is to say: "Beginning at the brook where Joseph Davil's mill standeth, and runs into the Great Salt Pond; and so, from said brook on a straight light, northerly, to Pasqueset Pond, and by the brook that runs out of Pasqueset Pond into Pawcatuck River." That soon after, and while the intent of the parties was well known, by order and direction of the late Col. Joseph Stanton, and others of the committee appointed by the General Assembly to oversee the Indian affairs, the line was run from the said brook to Pasqueset Pond, and bounds made. That afterwards, some persons, who claimed lands to the eastward of said line, caused another line to be run from the most westernmost parts of said brook, viz: Cross' Mill Dam, to Pasqueset Pond. By the running of which last mentioned line, as well the burying ground and graves of our ancient sachems and fathers, as also several hundred acres of land, which were not intended to be granted by the deed aforesaid, are claimed, and, against right, held from the Indians, by sundry persons in Charlestown. We, therefore, humbly pray this honorable Assembly to authorize and empower the committee for settling the affairs of the late sachem Thomas Ninegret, or some one or more of them, to cause an exact survey of the said lines, and so much of the brook and Pasqueset Pond as may be necessary to illustrate the facts, to be taken; and that a draught thereof be laid before this honorable Assembly, for their advisement thereon.

And we do, on this occasion, approach the General Assembly with the greater confidence, because we look upon them as our guardians and protectors, agreeably to the consideration of the sachem Ninegret. The granting our prayer will oblige your petitioners, as in duty bound, ever to pray, &c.

And the said petition being duly considered, it is voted and resolved, that the same be, and hereby is, granted; that all the lands now of right belonging to the said tribe, be secured to them; and that the same, or any part thereof, shall not, for the future, be liable to the payment of any debts. That James Helme, Esq., or some other of the committee appointed for settling the accounts of the late sachem Thomas Ninegret, cause a survey of the lines of the lands claimed by the said tribe, and the lands claimed by some other persons in Charlestown, and held from the said tribe (as it is said in the said petition) against right; that a draught of the same

be laid before this Assembly at the next session; that he be, and hereby is, empowered to summon and swear witnesses respecting the same. That the secretary cause notifications to be set up in one or more public places in Charlestown, notifying the persons claiming said lands, to appear before the next session of Assembly, to be then heard thereon; and that the colony be at no charge respecting this affair, but that the charge thereof be paid by the said tribe.

AID TO THE POOR OF BOSTON.

On the 20th of Dec., 1774, Joseph Hoxsie and Christopher Babcock were appointed a committee to receive donations of the people of Charlestown, consisting of sheep and money, and to transmit the same to a committee chosen by the town of Boston. This committee were authorized to receive donations for the relief of those who were suffering by the reason of the Act commonly called the "Boston Port Bill." On the last day of March, 1774, the Boston Port Bill was passed by Parliament. It was enacted, that no kind of merchandise should any longer be landed or shipped at the wharves of Boston. The custom-house was removed to Salem, but the people of that town refused the benefits which were proffered by the hand of tyranny. To what extent the generosity of the inhabitants of Charlestown was extended to the people of Boston, I do not know; but it is gratifying to understand, that something was done to mitigate the sufferings of the people. During this period, the little girl in Connecticut sent her pet lamb, with a ribbon tied around its neck, to the poor of Boston. This has been the poets' theme, and many pieces have been written about Mary's little lamb.

THE PEQUOT INDIANS.

The Pequots occupied the neighborhood of New London, Groton and Stonington, with the Mohegans on the north of them. Sassacus, their sachem, had a strong fort between New London and Mystic River. The Pequots were considered to be the most warlike and cruel of all the New England tribes. The terrible murders perpetrated by them, and the awful tortures which they inflicted upon their English captives, were sure warnings to the white people, that something must be speedily done to check them, or the colonists would be totally annihilated.

On the first day of May, 1637, the General Court of Connecticut, assembled at Hartford, declared war against the Pequots, raised an

army of ninety men, and appointed Captain John Mason commander-in-chief of the expedition. The soldiers were enlisted, and sailed from Hartford, May 10th, 1637, accompanied by Uncas and seventy friendly Indians. The little fleet, which consisted of three vessels, met adverse winds, and finally sailed into Narragansett Bay. Here, on Tuesday evening, May 23d, the gallant little band landed, and immediately set out for the residence of Miantinomo. Mason marched the next morning, May 24th, for the Pequot fort. As he proceeded on his journey, he was reinforced by a large party of Narragansetts sent on by Miantinomo. Their line of march from Narragansett was along the old Indian path, traveled from time immemorial by the Indians, and which was the great highway for all the travel from Boston, and the north and east, to Connecticut and New York; following the course of the shore, perhaps very near the route of the present Post Road, through Tower Hill, Wakefield, Charlestown and Westerly. Mason reached the Niantic Fort* the next evening, May 24th, which he sur-

---

* THE NIANTIC FORT.

The Niantic Fort, alluded to by Capt. Mason during his famous march from Narragansett Bay, near Wickford, to Westerly, in 1637, was built on Fort Neck, which is about twelve miles to the east of Westerly, and perhaps eighty rods to the southwest of Cross' Mills. The land has steep banks on the south side, next to the water, and it projects into Pawaget or Charlestown Pond. The remains of the old fortress are still visible, with traces of ditches, and a wall of stone and earth. It was torn down by the white people, and the larger part of the stones used in building a wall to inclose the land. This fort contained three-fourths of an acre, and appears in the form of a square. There were three bastions, twenty feet square, one on each of three angles or corners, which completely covered the ditches and walls of the fort. It appears that the main entrance to the fort was reached at the south corner, near the pond, and the only corner without a bastion. On the 24th of May, 1637, while Mason and his troops halted here, it was then garrisoned by a large body of the Niantics, who would not allow any of Mason's men to enter the fortification. Undoubtedly, it was a strong and well fortified position. Here, then, is one particular instance on record, in which the condition of the Niantic fort was known to the English.

SHUMUNCANUC FORT.

There is now to be seen, in the western part of Shumuncanuc, on the land known as the George N. Crandall estate, and between Watchaug Pond and Burdickville, the remains of an old fortress, which resembles very much the one erected at Fort Neck, both in size and construction; but unlike the former in one respect, it had no bastions. The probability is, that these two forts were designed and constructed by the same tribe. This fort measured sixty yards square, and inclosed three-fourths of an acre of land. Tradition informs us, that this fort was built by the Niantics, as a protection to their fishing privileges, and a defense against the Pequots. The remains of this work are now faintly visible, and in a few years more, they will be removed by the ravages of time beyond the recognition of man. It was in this locality that the sachem Ninegret, who died soon after King Philip's war, or about the year 1676, lived and exercised kingly sway over his subjects. On his death, his first daughter succeeded him, and the ceremonies of her inaugura-

rounded until morning, to prevent any treachery by the Niantics, when, after a fatiguing march of twelve miles, he reached the fording place in Pawcatuck river. After dinner, Mason continued his march on to Taugwonk, in Stonington. Here he halted, and learned for the first time, that the Pequots had two very strong forts. He, however, resolved to move on and attack the fort at Mystic. The guides brought them to the fort, two hours before light, May 26th, 1637. Mason went forward, and when within a rod of the fort, was discovered by a Pequot, who cried out, "Owanux! Owanux!" Englishmen! Englishmen!

A hand to hand contest ensued; the wigwams and fortress were set on fire; and at this time the destruction was terrible beyond any human description. The number thus destroyed was about 400, the result of which was the complete overthrow of the Pequots as a tribe, and the consequent salvation of the English settlement on the Connecticut river. The English, in their retreat, were attacked by the enemy from the other fort at Weinshawks, but repulsed them with great slaughter. It was estimated that six or seven hundred perished in this fire and fight. Sassacus, their great sachem, fled to the Mohawks, who put him to death at the instigation of the Narragansetts. Thus the Pequot nation passed away.

THE NARRAGANSETT SACHEMS.

Canonicus was the Grand Sachem of the Narragansetts when the whites settled at Plymouth. History gives no account of his predecessors. It commences with him. He died June 4th, 1647. Miantinomo was his nephew, son of his brother Mascus. Canonicus, in his advanced age, admitted Miantinomo into the government, and they administered the sachemdom jointly. In the war between the Narragansetts and Mohegans, in 1643, Miantinomo was captured by Uncas, the Sachem of the Mohegans, and executed. Pessecus, the brother of Miantinomo, was then admitted Sachem with Canonicus. He was put to death by the Mohawks, in 1676. Canonchet, the son of the brave but unfortunate Miantinomo, was the last Sachem of the race. He commanded the Indians

---

tion took place at Chemunganock, which is now changed to Shumuncanuc. After the death of the Queen, her half brother Ninegret succeeded her, and reigned until his death, or about 1722. The Niantics, their wigwams and their fortresses, have been swept away from the earth. We can now clearly understand, from the wild and romantic appearance of the country, that the advantages for hunting and fishing, which induced the poor Indians to dwell here, were far superior to those of any other.

at the Great Swamp Fight, in 1675. This battle exterminated the Narragansetts as a nation. He was captured near the Blackstone River, after the war, and executed for the crime of defending his country, and refusing to surrender the territory of his ancestors by a treaty of peace. It was glory enough for a nation to have expired with such a chief. The coolness, fortitude, and heroism of his fall stands without a parallel in ancient or modern times. He was offered life upon the condition that he would treat for the submission of his subjects; his untamed spirit indignantly rejected the ignominious proposition. And when he was told his sentence was to die, "he said he liked it well, that he should die before his heart was soft, or he had spoken any thing unworthy of himself." His head was cut off, and sent to Hartford. The rest of his body was burnt. This ended the last chief of the Narragansetts, and with Canonchet the nation was extinguished forever.

THE ROYAL HEADS OF THE NIANTIC TRIBE.

Ninigret was the Sachem or Sagamore of the Nyantics, or the Westerly Tribe, and since the division of that town, now styled the Charlestown Tribe. Ninigret was tributary to Canonicus, Miantinomo, and his successors. He was only collaterally related to the family of Canonicus; Quaiapeu, Ninigret's sister, having married Maxanno, the son of Canonicus. The whites purchased Ninigret's neutrality, during the Indian war of 1675, and for his treachery to his paramount sovereign and his race, the "Tribe Land" in Charlestown was allotted to him and his heirs forever, as the price of the treason. The Ninigret Tribe never were the real Narragansetts, whose name they bear. It is a libel on their glory, and their graves, for them to have assumed it. Not one drop of the blood of Canonicus, Miantinomo, or Canonchet, ever coursed in the veins of a Sachem who could sit neuter in his wigwam, and hear the guns and see the conflagration ascending from the fortress that was exterminating their nation forever. Ninigret died soon after the war. From this Ninigret, the succeeding Indian Sachems were descended. By one wife he had a daughter, and by another he had a son, Ninigret, and two daughters; one of which is sometimes designated as the Old Queen. On Ninigret's death, the first-named daughter succeeded him, and the ceremonies of her inauguration took place at Chemunganock, now known as Shumuncanuc. These ceremonies were the presentation of peage and other presents, as an acknowledgment of authority; and sometimes a belt of peage was publicly placed on the Sachem's head, as an ensign of rank. On

THE NEWBERRY LIBRARY CHICAGO

her death, her half brother Ninigret succeeded. He died some where about 1722. His Will is dated 1716–17. He left two sons, Charles and George Augustus Ninigret. The former succeeded as Sachem, and dying, left an infant son Charles, who was acknowledged as Sachem by a portion of the tribe, but the greater part adhered to George, his uncle, as being of pure royal blood. The dispute was encouraged by different white people, who wished to obtain an influen e over the tribe, and to purchase their lands; and seems to have been ended only by the death of young Charles. George Augustus was acknowledged as Sachem in 1735. He left a widow and three children, Thomas, George and Esther.

On Thursday, the 6th of Sept., 1750, the bans of marriage being duly published at the church of St. Paul's, in Narragansett, no objection being made, John Anthony, an Indian man, was married to Sarah George, an Indian woman, the widow and Dowager Queen of George (Augustus) Ninigret, deceased, by Dr. McSparran. Thomas (commonly known as King Tom) was born in 1736, and succeeded as Sachem in July, 1746. While he was Sachem, much of the Indian land was sold, and a considerable part of the tribe emigrated to the State of New York, and joined the Indians there.

William Kenyon, late of Charlestown, deceased, in a statement to Wilkins Updike, says: "I knew King Tom Ninigret; he had a son named Tom, his only child. He went away, and died before his father. Tom's brother George having died, the crown descended to Esther, the next heir. I (continued Mr. Kenyon) saw her crowned, over seventy years ago. She was elevated on a large rock, so that the people might see her; the council surrounded her. There were present about twenty Indian soldiers with guns. They marched her to the rock. The Indians nearest the royal blood, in presence of her councillors, put the crown on her head. It was made of cloth, covered with blue and white peage. When the crown was put on, the soldiers fired a royal salute, and huzzaed in the Indian tongue. The ceremony was imposing, and every thing was conducted with great order. Then the soldiers waited on her to her house, and fired salutes. There were 500 natives present, besides others. Queen Esther left one son, named George; he was crowned after the death of his mother. I was one of the jury of inquest, (continues Mr. Kenyon,) that sat on the body of George. He was about 22 years old when he was killed. He was where some persons were cutting trees. One tree had lodged against another, and in cutting that one it fell, and caught against a third, and George, undertaking to escape, a sharp knee struck him on the head, and killed him; a foot either way would have saved him,

No King was ever crowned after him, and not an Indian of the whole blood now remains in the tribe."

Thomas Ninigret, who was better known as King Tom, was born in 1736, and succeeded as Sachem in July, 1746. At the age of ten years, he was crowned king of the Niantics. He received a common school education in England, where he was sent by his nation; and on his return from school, he brought a draft of a house with him; and soon afterward built the structure known as the Sachem house, which served him as a dwelling place during the remainder of his days. It is commonly reported among the people, that Thomas Ninigret was a large, fleshy man; that he had an uncommon appetite for strong drink; and that he became a confirmed inebriate toward the last years of his life. His wife, and Thomas Ninigret, his only son, left him and emigrated to the West. Idleness and intemperance soon reduced him to poverty and wretchedness. His authority was denied him; his friends deserted him; and, in brief, the most of his property passed out of his hands to cancel his debts. He died some time between the second Monday in September, 1769, and the last Monday in February, 1770. Very soon after his death, a considerable portion of the tribe lands was sold to defray his expenses. The King's mansion was purchased by Nathan Kenyon, Esq., and from him it descended to James Kenyon, his son, and finally to James Nichols Kenyon, his grandson, the present proprietor.

Esther Ninigret, the only sister of Thomas Ninigret, married Thomas Sachem; and by him she had a son named George, who met with a tragical fate. The coronation of Queen Esther occurred as early as 1770, according to the best information that can be obtained. The rock on which she was elevated by her friends and councilors, preparatory to the reception of the crown, is situated about twelve rods to the north of the late Thomas Ninigret's residence. It is an isolated rock, projecting about three feet above the ground, well adapted to such occasion; and it has become famous for this event.

George Sachem, who met a premature death by a tree falling upon him, was the son of Queen Esther. The place, which has often been pointed out to me, where he was killed, is located about sixty rods to the north of the school house pond, and at nearly the same distance from the child-crying rocks. I cannot understand, from any source, that he was ever crowned, although Mr. Wm. Kenyon, of Charlestown, made the assertion many years ago. But in his death, when his sun went down to rise no more, the nation's last and final hope expired.

CHARLESTOWN, HOPKINTON AND RICHMOND.

The Towns of Charlestown, Hopkinton and Richmond were formerly included in the township of Westerly. The town of Westerly was incorporated in 1669, and was then the fifth town in the Colony of Rhode Island.

An act was passed, August 22d, 1738, by the General Assembly, held at Newport, dividing the town of Westerly into two towns, the same to be known and distinguished by the names of Westerly and Charlestown. At this period, Charlestown extended from Westerly on the west, to South Kingstown on the east; and from the town of Exeter on the north, to the Atlantic Ocean on the south.

But on the 18th day of August, 1747, an act was likewise passed dividing the town of Charlestown into two divisions, to be distinguished by the names of Charlestown and Richmond; and the Pawcatuck River was selected as a natural and fixed boundary between the two towns. At the first census, taken in 1748, Charlestown had a population of 1,002; and in 1774 a population of 1,821; while the present population, according to the last census, taken in 1875, is 1,054.

At the first Town Meeting held in Charlestown, Sept. 4th, 1738, the following officers were elected:

Moderator—Justice Samuel Perry.

Town Clerk—Wm. Clark, who held that office from 1738 to 1747, the year in which Richmond Town was set off from Charlestown.

Town Council—Col. Joseph Stanton, Capt. Wm. Clark, Capt. John Hill, John Hoxsie, Capt. Daniel Stanton, Justice Samuel Wilbur.

Town Treasurer—John Hoxsie.

Town Sergeant—Nathaniel Potter.

Constables—James York, John Kenyon, Jr.

Assessors of Taxes—Capt. John Hill, Justice Samuel Perry.

Overseers of the Poor—John Hoxsie, Thomas Stanton.

Town Surveyor—Joseph Stanton, Jr.

1st Deputy—Col. Joseph Stanton.

2d Deputy—Samuel Perry.

Surveyors of Highways and Fence Viewers—Thomas Stanton, Isaac Sheffield, Joseph Clark, Joseph Hoxsie, John Kenyon, John Webster.

Flax Viewers—Thomas Stanton, John Hoxsie, Joseph Eanos, Isaac Sheffield, Wm. James.

Viewer of Codfish, Bone and Oil—Henry Green.

Sealer of Weights and Measures, and Packer of Fish—William Bently.

Grand Juror—John Knowles.

Petty Juror—Wm. King.

The following is a list of persons who hold office at the present time, July 4th, 1876:

Senator—Hon. George C. James.

Representative—Hon. Charles Cross.

School Committee—Elisha S. Peckham, Chairman; John A. Wilcox, M. D., Clerk· Wm. F. Tucker, Superintendent.

Surveyors of Highways—

Dist. No. 1.	Nathan K. Foster.	Dist. No. 12.	Jason P. Green.
2.	Stanton S. Green.	13.	Bowen Briggs, Jr.
3.	Samuel Browning.	14.	Jesse B. Reynolds.
4.	Horace Wilcox.	15.	George F. Burdick.
5.	Benj. Tucker.	16.	Charles D. Ennis.
6.	George W. Kenyon.	17.	Charles Burdick.
7.	Thomas Johnson.	18.	James W. Hoxsie.
8.	Green Card.	19.	B. D. Macomber.
9.	Gardner W. Sullivan.	20.	Gideon P.G.Hoxsie.
10.	Elisha S. Peckham.	21.	David C. Kenyon.
11.	Amos P. Greene.	22.	Edward T. Burdick.
		23.	Joseph A. Sullivan.

Town Clerk—Charles Cross.

Moderator—James N. Kenyon.

Town Council—Stephen C. Browning, Gardner W. Sullivan, Wm. Greenman, George F. Burdick, Jason P. Green.

Justice of the Peace, or Trial Justice—Oliver D. Clark.

Town Treasurer—George H. Ward.

Town Sergeant—Joseph C. Church.

Constables—John Congdon, Varnum Ennis.

Overseer of the Poor—Hazard G. Kenyon.

Surveyors of Lumber—Caleb Kenyon, Benj. Tucker.

Assessors of Taxes—Charles Holden, Hazard G. Kenyon, Newman B. Card, Stanton T. Stedman, James A. Kenyon.

Sealer of Weights and Measures—Charles Cross.

Pound Keeper—Reuben A. Healy.

Field Driver—Asa Noyes.

Packers of Fish—Benj. B. Green, Charles M. Burdick.

Auditors of Town Treasurer's Accounts—Charles Cross, John A. Wilcox, M. D.

Town Surveyors—Archibald Barber, Caleb Kenyon.

Wreck Masters—George H. Ward, Horace Wilcox.
Auctioneers—Henry C. Card, John Congdon, Joseph E. Taylor.

February Term of Supreme Court:

Grand Juror—Beriah C. Kenyon.
Petty Juror—Franklin E. Brown.

May Term of Court of Common Pleas:

Grand Juror—Benjamin B. Green.
Petty Juror—Henry S. Green.

Appointed by the Governor, at the May Session, A. D. 1876:
Commissioner of the Narragansett Indians—John A. Wilcox, M. D.
Commissioner of the Indian School—Wm. F. Tucker.

LIST OF PERSONS WHO HAVE HELD THE OFFICE OF TOWN CLERK, FROM SEPT. 4TH, 1738, TO 1876.

William Clark,	September	4th, 1738,	to	September,	1747.
Joseph Stanton, Jr.,	"	" 1747,	"	"	1753.
Robert Potter,	"	" 1753,	"	"	1755.
Joseph Hoxsie,	"	" 1775,	"	"	1760.
John Champlin,	"	" 1760,	"	"	1761.
Gideon Hoxsie,	"	" 1761,	"	"	1762.
John Champlin,		June, 1762,	to	November,	1763.
Joseph Hoxsie,		November, 1763,	to	June,	1769.
James Congdon, 3d,		June, 1769,	"	"	1772.
Joseph Stanton, Jr.,		" 1772,	"	"	1773.
James Congdon, 3d,		" 1773,	"	"	1783.
John Champlin,		" 1783,	"	"	1785.
Col. Peleg Cross, Jr.,		" 1785,	"	"	1787.
Benjamin Hoxsie, Jr.,		" 1787,	"	"	1791.
Col. Peleg Cross, Jr.,		" 1791,	"	"	1817.
Samuel Stanton,		" 1817,	"	"	1838.
John Stanton,		" 1838,	"	"	1847.
William H. Perry,		" 1847,	"	"	1849.
Gideon Hoxie, Jr.,		" 1849,	"	March,	1851.
John Stanton,		March, 1851,	"	June,	1852.
Charles Cross,		June, 1852,	"	"	

LIST OF PERSONS WHO HAVE HELD THE OFFICE OF TOWN TREASURER, FROM SEPT. 4TH, 1738, TO 1876.

John Hoxsie, from 1738 to 1739.
Samuel Wilbur, from 1739 to 1742.
Joseph Eanos, from 1742 to 1744.

Samuel Wilbur, from 1744 to 1745.
Joseph Eanos, from 1745 to 1747.
Benjamin Hoxsie, from 1747 to 1755.
John Hill, Jr., from 1755 to 1756.
Benjamin Hoxsie, from 1756 to 1758.
Gideon Hoxsie, from 1758 to 1760.
Benjamin Hoxsie, from 1760 to 1761.
Gideon Hoxsie, from 1761 to 1762.
John Champlin, from 1762 to 1764.
Joseph Hoxsie, from 1764 to 1778.
Benjamin Hoxsie, Jr., from 1778 to 1783.
Robert Congd n, from 1783 to 1788.
Tobias Saunders, from 1788 to 1789.
Jonathan Hazard, Jr., from 1789 to 1791.
Tobias Saunders, from 1791 to 1796.
Robert Congdon, from 1796 to 1801.
Nathan Taylor, from 1801 to 1802.
Christopher Saunders, from 1802 to 1818.
Hoxsie Perry, from 1818 to 1826.
Peleg Cross, from 1826 to 1833.
George W. Cross, from 1833 to 1864.
Preserved Davis, from 1864 to 1867.
George W. Cross, from 1867 to 1871.
George H. Ward, from 1871 to

GENERAL ASSEMBLY.

MEMBERS OF THE HOUSE OF DEPUTIES.

FIRST DEPUTY.	SECOND DEPUTY.	WHEN ELECTED.
Col. Joseph Stanton,	Samuel Perry,	Sept. 4th, 1738.
Samuel Perry,	Capt. Wm. Clark,	March 6th, 1739.
" "	Capt. Isaac Sheffield,	July 6th, 1739.
" "	Capt. John Hill,	March 4th, 1740.
Samuel Wilbur,	Christopher Champlin,	August 28th, 1740.
Samuel Perry,	Joseph Church,	March 3d, 1741.
Capt. Joseph Stanton,	Capt. Chris. Champlin,	August 25th, 1741.
Samuel Perry,	" " "	March 2d, 1742.
Wm. Clark, Jr.,	Nathaniel Lewis,	August 31st, 1742.
Maj. Chris. Champlin,	Capt. Nathaniel Lewis,	March 1st, 1743.
Stephen Hoxsie,	John Webster,	August 30th, 1743.
" "	Col. Chris. Champlin,	April 18th, 1744.
John Hicks,	Wm. Clark, Jr.,	August 28th, 1744.
Col. Joseph Stanton,	Joseph Hicks,	April 7th, 1745.

FIRST DEPUTY.	SECOND DEPUTY.	WHEN ELECTED.
James Congdon,	Samuel Perry,	August 27th, 1745.
Richard Bailey,	" "	April 18th, 1746.
Col. Chris. Champlin,	Wm. Clark, Jr.,	August 26th, 1746.
Col. Joseph Stanton,	" "	April 15th, 1747.
" "	James Congdon,	August 27th, 1747.
" "	" "	April 28th, 1748.
Col. Chris. Champlin,	Capt. Nathaniel Lewis,	August 28th, 1748.
Col. Joseph Stanton,	James Congdon,	April 19th, 1749.
Capt. Nathaniel Lewis,	Benjamin Hoxsie,	August 29th, 1749.
James Congdon,	Capt. Nathaniel Lewis,	3d Wed. April, 1750.
Col. Chris. Champlin,	" " "	last Tues. Aug. 1750
" "	" " "	3d Wed. April, 1751.
" "	" " "	last Tues. Aug. 1751
" "	" " "	3d Wed. April, 1752.
Capt. Nathaniel Lewis,	James Congdon,	last Tues. Aug. 1752
Capt. Joseph Stanton,	Col. Chris. Champlin,	3d Wed. April, 1753.
" "	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1753
Col. Chris. Champlin,	Robert Potter,	3d Wed. April, 1754.
" "	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1754
" "	Capt. Joseph Stanton,	April 16th, 1755.
James Congdon,	Nathaniel Sheffield,	last Tues. Aug. 1755
Col. Chris. Champlin,	Capt. Robert Potter,	3d Wed. April, 1756.
" "	Gideon Hoxsie,	last Tues. Aug. 1756
" "	" "	April 20th, 1757.
Capt. Robert Potter,	Joseph Hoxsie,	August 30th, 1757.
" "	" "	3d Wed. April, 1758.
" "	Peleg Cross,	last Tues. Aug. 1758
" "	Col. Chris. Champlin,	3d Wed. April, 1759.
Gideon Hoxsie,	Joseph Hoxsie,	last Tues. Aug. 1759
Col. Chris. Champlin,	Capt. Robert Potter,	3d Wed. April, 1760.
" "	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1760
" "	" "	3d Wed. April, 1761.
Joseph Stanton,	Capt. John Champlin,	last Tues. Aug. 1761
Capt. Robert Potter,	" "	3d Wed. April, 1762
" "	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1762
" "	" "	3d Wed. April, 1763.
" "	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1763
" "	Col. Chris. Champlin,	3d Wed. April, 1764.
" "	Gideon Hoxsie,	last Tues. Aug. 1764
" "	Joseph Hoxsie,	3d Wed. April, 1765
" "	John Congdon,	last Tues. Aug. 1765
" "	Gideon Hoxsie,	3d Wed. April, 1766

FIRST DEPUTY.	SECOND DEPUTY.	WHEN ELECTED.
John Congdon,	Gideon Hoxsie,	last Tues. Aug. 1766
Peleg Cross,	" "	3d Wed. April, 1767
" "	Capt. Robert Potter,	last Tues. Aug. 1767
Capt. Robert Potter,	Joseph Stanton, Jr.,	3d Wed. April, 1768.
Joseph Stanton, Jr.,	Capt. Robert Potter,	last Tues. Aug. 1768
Gideon Hoxsie,	Job Taylor,	3d Wed. April, 1769.
" "	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1769
" "	Col. Joseph Stanton,	April 18th, 1770.
John Congdon,	Joseph Hoxsie,	August 28th, 1770.
" "	Sylvester Robinson,	April 17th, 1771.
Nathan Kenyon,	Benjamin Hoxsie, Jr.,	August 27th, 1771.
Samuel Kenyon.	" "	April 15th, 1772.
" "	Stephen Perry,	August 25th, 1772.
Sylvester Robinson,	" "	April 21st, 1773.
" "	Jonathan Hazard,	August 31st, 1773.
" "	Jesse Champlin,	April 18th, 1774.
" "	" "	August 30th, 1774.
Joseph Hoxsie,	Samuel Kenyon,	April 19th, 1775.
Capt. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	Jesse Champlin,	last Tues. Aug. 1775
" "	Jonathan Hazard,	April 17th, 1776.
Col. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1776
Gideon Hoxsie,	Robert Congdon,	3d Wed. April, 1777
Col. Gideon Hoxsie,	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1777
Col. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	Jonathan Hazard,	3d Wed. April, 1778.
Col. Gideon Hoxsie,	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1778
Col. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	" "	April 21st, 1779.
Brig. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	" "	August 31st, 1779.
Col. Gideon Hoxsie,	Brig. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	April 19th, 1780.
" "	" "	August 29th, 1780.
Brig. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	Jonathan Hazard,	April 18th, 1781.
" "	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1781
" "	Col. Gideon Hoxsie,	3d Wed. April, 1782.
" "	Jonathan Hazard,	last Tues. Aug. 1782
" "	" "	3d Wed. April, 1783.
" "	" "	August 26th, 1783.
" "	Samuel Cross,	3d Wed. April, 1784.
" "	Nathan Kenyon,	August 31st, 1784.
" "	James Congdon, Jr.,	April 20th, 1785.
" "	" "	last Tues. Aug. 1785
Thomas Hoxsie,	Jonathan J. Hazard,	April 19th, 1786.
" "	" "	August 29th, 1786.
" "	" "	3d Wed. April, 1787.

FIRST DEPUTY.	SECOND DEPUTY.	WHEN ELECTED.
Jonathan J. Hazard,	Lodowick Stanton,	August 28th, 1787.
Gen. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	Jonathan Hazard, Jr.,	April 16th, 1788.
" "	" "	August 26th, 1788.
" "	" "	April 15th, 1789.
Joseph Hoxsie,	Peleg Cross,	August 25th, 1789.
Gen. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	Jonathan Macomber,	April 21st, 1790.
Joseph Hoxsie,	James Peckham,	August 31st, 1790.
Gideon Hoxsie,	Robert Congdon,	April 20th, 1791.
Benjamin Hoxsie, Jr.,	Capt. Amos Green,	August 30th, 1791.
" "	" "	April 18th, 1792.
Peleg Cross, Jr.,	Robert Congdon,	August 28th, 1792.
"	" "	April 17th, 1793.
Robert Congdon,	Edward Wilcox,	August 27th, 1793.
" "	" "	April 16th, 1794.
Edward Wilcox,	Gen. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	August 26th, 1794.
Gen. Joseph Stanton,	Edward Wilcox,	April 15th, 1795.
" "	" "	August 25th, 1795.
" "	" "	April 20th, 1796.
" "	Major Edward Wilcox,	August 30th, 1796.

In the Schedule of June, 1797, the title of "Deputies" was changed to "Representatives."

FIRST REPRESENTATIVE.	SECOND REPRESENTATIVE.	WHEN ELECTED.
Gen. Joseph Stanton,	Major Edward Wilcox,	April 19th, 1797.
" "	Col. Gideon Hoxsie,	August 29th, 1797.
" "	" "	April 18th, 1798.
" "	" "	August 28th, 1798.
" "	Capt. Jos'h Hoxsie, Jr.,	3d Wed. April, 1799.
Peleg Cross, Jr.,	Major Edward Wilcox,	August 27th, 1799.
" "	" "	April 16th, 1800.
" "	" "	August 26th, 1800.
Maj. Edward Wilcox,	Joseph Stanton, 3d,	April 15th, 1801.
" "	Joseph Stanton, Jr.,	August 25th, 1801.
" "	" "	April 21st, 1802.
" "	" "	August 31st, 1802.
" "	" "	April 20th, 1803.
" "	" "	August 30th, 1803.
" "	" "	April 18th, 1804.
" "	" "	August 28th, 1804.
" "	" "	April 17th, 1805.
" "	" "	August 27th, 1805.
" "	" "	April 16th, 1806.

FIRST REPRESENTATIVE.	SECOND REPRESENTATIVE.	WHEN ELECTED.
Col. Edward Wilcox,	Joseph Stanton, Jr.,	August 26th, 1806.
" "	" "	April 15th, 1807.
" "	" "	August 25th, 1807.
" "	" "	April 20th, 1808.
" "	" "	August 30th, 1808.
" "	" "	April 19th, 1809.
" "	Gen. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	August 29th, 1809.
" "	Dea. Daniel Stanton,	April 18th, 1810.
" "	" "	August 28th, 1810.
" "	" "	April 17th, 1811.
" "	Gen. Jos'h Stanton, Jr.,	August 27th, 1811.
" "	Joseph Cross,	April 15th, 1812.
Joseph Stanton, Jr.,	Asa Church,	August 25th, 1812.
" "	" "	April 21st, 1813.
" "	" "	August 31st, 1813.
" "	" "	April 20th, 1814.
" "	" "	August 30th, 1814.
" "	" "	April 19th, 1815.
" "	" "	August 29th, 1815.
" "	" "	April 17th, 1816.
Col. Edward Wilcox,	Joseph Cross,	August 27th, 1816.
Joseph Cross,	Peleg S. Thompson,	April 16th, 1817.
" "	" "	August 26th, 1817.
" "	" "	April 15th, 1818.
" "	Joseph Gavitt,	August 25th, 1818.
Joseph Gavitt,	Jesse Babcock, Jr.,	April 21st, 1819.
" "	" "	August 31st, 1819.
" "	Joseph Wilcox,	April 19th, 1820.
" "	Samuel Stanton,	August 29th, 1820.
Major Edward Wilcox,	" "	April 15th, 1821.
" "	" "	August 28th, 1821.
" "	" "	April 17th, 1822.
Thomas Hoxsie,	Arnold Hoxsie,	August 27th, 1822.
" "	George Thurston,	April 16th, 1823.
Joseph Wilcox, Jr.,	David Clark,	August 26th, 1823.
" "	" "	April 21st, 1824.
" "	" "	August 31st, 1824.
" "	" "	April 20th, 1825.
" "	" "	August 30th, 1825.
" "	" "	April 19th, 1826.
" "	" "	August 29th, 1826.
" "	Thomas Hoxsie,	April 18th, 1827.

FIRST REPRESENTATIVE.	SECOND REPRESENTATIVE.	WHEN ELECTED.
Joseph Wilcox, Jr.,	Joseph Stanton, Jr.,	August 28th, 1827.
" "	David Clark,	April 16th, 1828.
" "	" "	August 26th, 1828.
" "	" "	April 15th, 1829.
Caleb Kenyon,	" "	August 25th, 1829.
" "	Dan. King,	April 21st, 1830.
" "	" "	August 31st, 1830.
" "	" "	April 20th, 1831.
" "	" "	August 30th, 1831.
" "	" "	April 18th, 1832.
Edward Wilcox,	" "	August 28th, 1832.
" "	" "	April 17th, 1833.
Dan. King,	Caleb Kenyon,	August 27th, 1833.
" "	" "	April 16th, 1834.
Samuel Perry, Jr.,	" "	August 26th, 1834.
" "	" "	April 15th, 1835.
" "	" "	August 27th, 1835.
" "	" "	April 20th, 1836.
Caleb Kenyon,	George W. Cross,	August 30th, 1836.
George W. Cross,	James N. Kenyon,	April 19th, 1837.
" "	" "	August 29th, 1837.
" "	" "	April 18th, 1838.
" "	" "	August 28th, 1838.
" "	" "	April 17th, 1839.
Joseph Gavitt,	George A. Stanton,	August 27th, 1839.
" "	" "	April 15th, 1840.
" "	Asa Church, Jr.,	August 25th, 1840.
" "	" "	April 21st, 1841.
" "	" "	August 31st, 1841.
Asa Church, Jr.,	Gordon H. Hoxsie,	April 20th, 1842.

MEMBERS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY WHO HAVE SERVED UNDER THE CONSTITUTION ADOPTED IN 1843.

SENATE.

Asa Church, Jr., 1843 to 1846.
James N. Kenyon, 1846 to 1850.
Joseph H. Cross, 1850 to 1854.
James N. Kenyon, 1854 to 1855.
William Foster, 1855 to 1857.
Asa Church, Jr., 1857 to 1858.
William Foster, 1858 to 1859.

Caleb Kenyon, 1859 to 1860.
John Money, 1860 to 1861.
Elisha S. Peckham, 1861 to 1862.
George A. Stanton, 1862 to 1864.
John W. Money, 1864 to 1865.
Hazard A. Burdick, Jr., 1865 to 1866.
Stephen C. Browning, 1866 to 1871.
Beriah C. Kenyon, 1871 to 1874.
George C. James, 1874 to

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES.

Gordon H. Hoxsie, 1843 to 1844.
James N. Kenyon, 1844 to 1845.
Caleb Kenyon, 1845 to 1846.
Gideon Hoxsie, 1846 to 1847.
Asa T. Hoxsie, 1847 to 1848.
Joseph Gavitt, 1848 to 1854.
Thomas A. Pierce, 1854 to 1856.
John W. Money, 1856 to 1857.
Caleb Kenyon, 1857 to 1859.
John Congdon, 1859 to 1860.
Thomas A. Pierce, 1860 to 1861.
Calvin G. Miner, 1861 to 1862.
Asa T. Hoxsie, 1862 to 1864.
Hazard A. Burdick, 2d, 1864 to 1865.
Samuel B. Hoxsie, 1865 to 1866.
Caleb Kenyon, 1866 to 1869.
Joseph D. Wilcox, 1869 to 1872.
William D. Cross, 1872 to 1873.
Joseph C. Church, 1873 to 1874.
George Burdick, 1874 to 1875.
Charles Cross, 1875 to

TOTAL POPULATION OF WASHINGTON COUNTY, OF RHODE ISLAND, FROM 1708 TO 1875.

	Settled, or Incorporated.	1708.	1730.	1748.	1755.	1774.	1776.	1782.	1790.	1800.	1810.	1820.	1830.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1865.	1870.	1875.
CHARLESTOWN	1738	.....	.....	1,002	1,130	1,821	1,835	1,523	2,022	1,454	1,174	1,160	1,284	923	994	981	1,134	1,119	1,054
EXETER	1743	.....	.....	1,174	1,404	1,864	1,982	2,058	2,495	2,476	2,256	2,581	2,383	1,776	1,634	1,741	1,498	1,462	1,355
HOPKINTON	1757	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,808	1,845	1,735	2,462	2,276	1,774	1,821	1,777	1,726	2,477	2,738	2,512	2,682	2,760
NORTH KINGSTOWN	1674	1,200	2,105	1,935	2,109	2,472	2,761	2,328	2,907	2,794	2,957	3,007	3,036	2,909	2,971	3.104	3,166	3,568	3,505
SOUTH KINGSTOWN	1723	.....	1,523	1,978	1,913	2,835	2,779	2,675	4,131	3,438	3,560	3,723	3,663	3,717	3,807	4,717	4,513	4,493	4,210
RICHMOND	1747	.....	.....	508	829	1,257	1,204	1,094	1,760	1,368	1,330	1,423	1,363	1,361	1,784	1,964	1,830	2,064	1,739
WESTERLY	1669	570	1,926	1,809	2,291	1,812	1,824	1,720	2,298	2,329	1,911	1,972	1,915	1,912	2,763	3,470	3,815	4,709	5,408
WASHINGTON COUNTY	*1729	1,770	5,554	8,406	9,676	13,869	14,230	13,133	18,075	16,135	14,962	15,687	15,421	14,324	16,430	18,715	18,468	20,697	20,061

In 1730, Westerly embraced in its territory, Charlestown, Richmond and Hopkinton. A census taken by order of the King during the same year, gave Westerly the following population, viz: Whites, 1,620; Negroes, 56; Indians, 250. Charlestown, in 1748, had the following population, viz: Whites, 641; Negroes, 58; Indians, 303. In 1875, Charlestown had a population of 1,054. Of this number, 120 persons were members of the Narragansett Tribe, and 8 non-residents, or persons of color who did not belong to the Tribe.

* Washington County was originally called the "Narragansett country." Incorporated, June 16th, 1729, as King's County, with three towns, and same territory as at the present time. Name changed to Washington County, October 29th, 1781.

CHURCHES.

The first church established in this town received the following title: "The Church of England in Charlestown." It was also called the "Westerly Church." This church was built on a lot of land given for that purpose by George Ninigret, Chief Sachem of the Narragansett Indians. It joined the Champlin farm, and when the church went down, was held by them by possession. The town of Westerly was divided after the erection of the church, and it fell on the Charlestown side of the division line. The church was situated on the north lot of the late Champlin farm, now owned by Robert Hazard, son of Joseph, and fronting on the public road, to the north of the house now owned by James McDonald, and within half a mile of the residence of the then sachem. The deed was as follows:

To all People to whom these Presents shall come, greeting.

Know ye, t at I, George Ninigret, Chief Sachem and Prince of the Narragansett Indians, in the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, in New England, in America, for and in consideration of the love and affection which I have and bear for and towards the people of the Church of England in Charlestown and Westerly, in the county of King's county, in the colony aforesaid, and for securing and settling the services and worship of God amongst them, according to the usages of that most excellent church, within the said Charlestown, at all times forever hereafter, and also for and in consideration of the sum of Five Shillings of the currency of said colony, and of the old tenor, to me in hand actually paid by John Hill, Esq., Col. Christopher Champlin, both of said Charlestown and colony aforesaid, and Ebenezer Punderson, of Groton, in the county of New London and colony, now officiates a missionary from the Society, and I was the first Episcopal of Connecticut, clerk, the receipt whereof I do hereby acknowledge, have given, granted, bargained, sold, enfeoffed, conveyed, and by these presents do fully and absolutely give, grant, bargain, sell, enfeoff, and convey, unto the said John Hill, Christopher Champlin, and Ebenezer Punderson, their heirs and assigns forever, to the use of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, and their successors forevermore, (which Society were incorporated by Letters Patent under the great seal of England,) one certain tract of land lying in said Charlestown, in the colony of Rhode Island aforesaid, containing forty acres, and whereon the Church of England in said Charlestown now stands, in the occupation of the aforesaid Christopher Champlin, and is butted and bounded as

followeth: Beginning at a stake with stones about it, thence running south 38 degrees east 45 rods and a quarter, to a stone and heap of stones by the country road; and from thence easterly, as the road runs, 128 rods, to a stake with stones about it; from thence north 14 degrees west 40 rods to a small white oak tree marked on two sides; from thence south 50 degrees west 12 rods to a stake and stones; and from thence a straight line to the first mentioned corner; with all erections and buildings standing on said premises, with all the woods, underwoods, pools, water and water-courses, with every other appurtenance and privilege of any sort belonging to the said tract of land, or in anywise appertaining, and the reversion or reversions, and the remainders, rents, issues and profits of all and singular the premises.

To have and to hold, all and singular, the said tract of land, premises, with every of their privileges, commodities and appurtenances, unto the said John Hill, Christopher Champlin, and Ebenezer Punderson, their heirs and assigns forever, to the use and benefit and behoof of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, and their successors forevermore, to be by the said Society forever thereafter applied and appropriated for the benefit of the Episcopal minister for the time being of the Episcopal church in said Charlestown, in the said county of King's county, and his successors forever, and to and for no other use, intent or purpose whatsover.

And I, the said George Ninigret, do hereby, for myself, my heirs, executors, administrators, and successors in said Sachemship and Principality, and every of them, covenant and warrant to and with the said John Hill, Christopher Champlin, and Ebenezer Punderson, their heirs and assigns, and also to and with the said Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, and their successors, that I am at this present time, and by right of indefeasable inheritance, the true, lawful and absolute owner and proprietor of said premises, and the same are now free and clear of all manner of incumbrances whatever, and that I, my heirs, executors, administrators or successors, now do and forever shall and will defend all and singular the said premises, with their appurtenances, unto and to the use of them for the purpose aforesaid, against all claims and demands whatsoever. In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal, this 14th day of January, in the year 1745 old style, or 1746 new style. GEORGE —C NINIGRET.
mark.

Acknowledged the same day, and duly recorded in the Town Clerk's Office.

THE NARRAGANSETT INDIAN CHURCH.

Many attempts were made, at different times, for the conversion of the Indians; but the missionaries were generally unsuccessful.

"About 1741, in the New Light stir, a reformation was brought about among the Indians in Charlestown, (probably under the care of a Mr. Park,) and a Baptist church soon after formed. In 1750, a Baptist church arose out of this. The first pastor was James Simons, and after him the famous Samuel Niles, in his day one of the most eminent Indian preachers in America. Others succeeded him. Benedict visited them in 1812, and found a few of the female members of the church still living and active in religious affairs; three of them about 70 years of age. The male members were all absent on a fishing voyage."

According to the most reliable information that can be educed, the old Indian church was erected somewhere about one hundred and ten years before the erection of the present one, which took place sixteen years ago; hence the old structure was built not far from 1750, and located at a little distance to the north of the center of the town, within half a mile of the Indian school-house and pond, and on the same site upon which the new edifice now stands. It was a wooden structure, built without any regard to beauty, warmth, or convenience, and quite inferior to the present church; yet there have been very many good sermons proclaimed within its walls. Here the renowned Samuel Niles poured out the gospel tidings, with amazing eloquence, to the sin-laden sons of the forest.

The new stone edifice was erected in 1859; it is twenty-eight feet wide, forty feet long, and twelve feet high, with ample room for all ordinary purposes. At the present period of time, the church contains forty members, who are Adventists in their persuasion. For a long time, the Tribe have continued to hold their annual "Indian Meetings" here, which occur on the second Sunday in August. They congregate, on this occasion, from the eastern part of Connecticut and Long Island, and from all parts of this State, to participate in these meetings and festivities. The white people, as well as the colored population, collect here in large numbers, and some of them for the express purpose of selling provisions and beer to the hungry and thirsty multitude that attend these annual gatherings. Twenty-five years ago, it was the practice of the people to meet near the church; but the great concourse of people, and the proximity of the tents, seriously affected the meetings; and since then, the Indian Council have decided that all tents shall be erected at least one mile from the meeting-house.

THE SECOND BAPTIST CHURCH OF RICHMOND.

It appears on record, that this church was founded in 1774. The old structure, which was known for a long time as the Boss Meeting-house—alas, not a stick is left to mark the once memorable spot!—was situated on the northern limit of the hill skirting the southern edge of the Richmond-town Plain, and on the west side of the road, between Clark's Mills and Usquepaug village, and between Beaver and Usquepaug rivers, on what was commonly called the Robert Stanton purchase. But on the 8th of October, 1855, the Society, which was made the recipient of a fine building lot, through the generosity of Joseph Hoxsie, Esq., erected a house of worship on the aforesaid lot, and dedicated it. The new edifice is located in Charlestown, at a little distance to the south-east of Clark's village, on the corner where the highway crosses the Shore Line Railroad, and about midway between Shannock Mills and Kenyon's Mills. In 1873, William Marchant was Clerk of the church, which then numbered seventy-nine members.

FIRST FREEWILL BAPTIST CHURCH OF RICHMOND AND CHARLESTOWN.

On the 29th of September, 1845, Rowland G. Hazard, Esq., deeded a piece of land, situated between Carolina village and the depot, at nearly equal distance, to the above-named Society. The Association erected an edifice, which was dedicated and used by the people for nearly twenty years; but, finally, on the 27th of June, 1865, Hazard G. Kenyon and wife, and William C. Tucker and wife, transferred their right, title and interest in a lot of land in the village of Carolina Mills, to the "Rhode Island Association of Freewill Baptist Churches." Here a stone basement was constructed, and the church was moved down into the village, and placed upon the foundation, by Jesse Breed, of Westerly. After the removal, the edifice underwent a thorough renovation, and it is now an ornament and a benefit to the village. The organization of this church was perfected on the 3d of August, 1866. Leander W. Tucker is the present Clerk, and his minutes indicate a membership of thirty-nine persons.

CHARLESTOWN BRANCH OF THE GENERAL SIX PRINCIPLE BAPTIST CHURCH OF RICHMOND.

The General Six Principle Baptist Church of Richmond was instituted in 1725. Rev. Gilbert Tillinghast officiates as its present

pastor. In 1875, the Annual Report of the Association admitted a membership of four hundred and forty-eight persons. From this church originated the Charlestown Branch. The land on which the Charlestown Church stands was formerly owned by Ira Kenyon, Esq., who gave a deed of the same to John S. Hiscox, Trustee to the Society, June 24th, 1867. This edifice was erected at a cost of $1,500; it is twenty-eight feet wide and thirty-six feet long, and pleasantly located on high land overlooking the village of Burdickville and the surrounding vicinity. The church was consecrated to a divine Being, by religious ceremonies, on the 12th of January, 1871. Rev. Gilbert Tillinghast has been its regular Pastor, and Ira Kenyon, Esq., its faithful Clerk. In 1876, Mr. Kenyon's records contained the names of seventy active members. Mrs. Elizabeth Allen was admitted to a membership in the old church of Richmond in 1828; and has been a member of the new church since its organization.

FIRST BAPTIST CHURCH OF CHARLESTOWN.

Mr. Peleg Clark, Jr., of Westerly, was employed to build the church, which he completed to the satisfaction of his employers, in 1840. It is situated on the Post Road, in the vicinity of Quonocontaug Neck, and on a very pleasant elevation, commanding an extensive view of the ocean and surrounding country. The dedicatory exercises were consummated on the 11th of February, 1841. Rev. John H. Baker officiated at the dedication; and, on the next day, Feb. 12th, Wilson Cogswell was ordained a minister of the gospel, and installed the first pastor of the church. Joseph Brown succeeded Mr. Cogswell as a shepherd of the flock. In 1841, this church registered forty-three members, with Joseph W. Taylor clerk; and in 1873, seventy-one members, with Samuel B. Hoxsie clerk.

THE FIRST BAPTIST CHURCH AND SOCIETY AT CROSS' MILLS.

A deed was given by Joseph H. and George W. Cross to George Burdick, Esq., who was authorized to procure a situation for a building; and he transferred it to the Society on the 17th of June, 1876. The church, however, was built in the summer of 1873, at a cost of some $1,500, previous to the transfer of the property by Mr. Burdick. Soon after its completion, and at the organization of the church, Levi J. Cornell was chosen clerk, whose records indicate a membership of forty-three persons.

NARRAGANSETT INDIAN SCHOOL.

It appears on record, that the State began to have schools for the Narragansett Indians as early as 1765. Mr. Bennett was sent to them as teacher. The Sachem, Thomas Ninegret, petitioned "The Society to Propagate the Gospel," to establish a free school. In his letter, he closes in the following touching words:

"The prayer, that when time shall be with us no more, that when we and the children over whom you have been such benefactors shall leave the sun and stars, we shall rejoice in a far superior light."

In October, 1767, the General Assembly took into consideration a letter presented by Andrew Oliver, Esq., and voted that Thomas Ninegret and five of his council make and give to the Secretary of the Colony, a deed of an island in a certain swamp in Charlestown, containing about three acres, where stands a school-house for the use of the Indians. This agrees with what was called the old Indiar school-house.

As early as 1815, the old school building was superseded by the present one, and named the Narragansett Indian School-house, in honor of the famous tribe of Indians, whose descendants still hold a small portion of the land by reservation. It may seem strange that the Indians owned the first school-house; but it is nevertheless true. This structure stands on a small knoll, at the north end of a pond formerly known to the tribe as Quacumpaug Pond, but more recently named the School-house Pond. It is an old wooden building, having the following dimensions: Length, thirty feet; width, twenty-four feet; and hight, seven feet between floors. There is a rough stone chimney in the building, which gives it an ancient appearance. In this house the few surviving members of the Narragansett Indians hold their annual council, and it is here that they also have their school. Once was the time when this building occupied a central position in the community; but time has wrought a change; some of the tenants of the land have passed away, while others have moved to the northern and central sections of the township; leaving the structure far away from the larger number of its patrons. The building should be condemned at once. Necessity demands an immediate and a united action on the part of the tribe to secure better facilities for the instruction of their children. It is a cold, cheerless, dilapidated institution, and the surroundings, both in and out of the building, present any thing but a favorable impression.

THE OLD SCHOOL BUILDING.

Tradition informs us that there was a school building erected in the eastern part of the town, now known as District No. 1, as early as 1775, or before the Declaration of Independence. The probability is, that this building was used for school purposes during a period of twenty years or more; however, Gen. Joseph Stanton received it by lottery, about the year 1796, and converted it into a dwelling house. One hundred years ago, the seaboard contained by far the larger portion of the town's population and opulence. Here, too, lived the better educated class of citizens; and is it to be considered strange, that such enlightened people should have fostered and encouraged the advancement of education, or should have perpetuated, in a certain sense, the institution which gave them such pre-eminence and advantage? That education was deemed a great incentive and an indispensable requisite to future success, seems evident from their daily transactions of life. In the exigencies of the last century, the inhabitants of this locality founded three school buildings in succession, varying in the duration of tin ɔ.

THOMAS PERRY'S SCHOOL BUILDING.

Since my first examination and research of the records of the town, I have very fortunately found a statement of a school-house that was built by Thomas Perry, at Cross' Mills, in 1801. This structure was located on the south side of the Cedar Swamp, and between forty and fifty rods to the east of the residence of George H. Ward. A school was maintained in said house for a period of more than twenty-five years; but, finally, it was purchased by Doct. Dan King, who moved it up west about one mile and a half, to what was called "King's Factory," and changed it into a dwelling house. Of the information relative to said house, we have conclusive evidence; and that, from 1801 to 1828, it was the only school-house owned and used by the white people of Charlestown.

Before the school law of 1828 went into effect, the representatives of the several towns of the State were requested to furnish an exact account of the number of school-houses and schools in each town. In their report, we find one school-house, and from five to seven schools in the winter and two or three in the summer. Such substantiates the fact that the majority of schools was then kept in private residences.

FACILITIES BEFORE PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

Educational facilities prior to the establishment of public schools were exceedingly feeble in this vicinity. The people supported what were then recognized as private schools, the majority of them being kept in dwelling houses. In selecting a situation for a school, it was expedient for them to obtain a central location in the neighborhood, but this was not always accomplished, as there were very many obstacles in the way. Teachers, at this time, were hired for stipulated sums, receiving their wages from parents and guardians, who paid them in proportion to the number of pupils that each one sent to school. In this community, forty years ago, the practice was as common for a school officer to go into Connecticut to hire a teacher as it is now customary for a person to pay taxes. The school committee often granted certificates to persons whose qualifications and abilities to instruct and govern a school were quite inadequate for the task; and they seldom visited the schools to ascertain the results. Consequently, the schools were taught, many times, by very incompetent teachers; by those who could not perfo· n all the examples in the arithmetic, and, what is much more discreditable, were unable to give satisfactory explanations of such as they could perform. It frequently happened that persons taught school who had no knowledge of grammar, or, in other words, had never studied it. The average length of schools was between three and four months; for which reason, educational resources were quite limited.

DISTRICT SYSTEM.

In 1828, the General Assembly passed an act to divide the several towns into districts, with which the people readily complied. The district system in this town was established June 2d, 1828; and a subdivision was made November 19th of the same year, separating the town into six districts. Next year, on the 15th of April, a portion of the district at Cross' Mills and at Quonocontaug was set off, forming a new district, which was added to the catalogue as No. 7. The last district subdivision in Charlestown was made in 1871, when Carolina was taken from Pasquesett, and organized as the eighth school district. In the mean time, perplexities frequently grew out of the imperfect divisions and records of the districts; and, in 1874, the school committee re-bounded all the districts, giving more definite boundaries to them, and caused the same to be placed on record in the Town Clerk's office.

DISTRICT NO. 6—WASHINGTON.

In 1828, Joshua Card, Joseph Cross, Henry Greene, David Clark, Elisha Greenman, Wm. Card, Dan King, Jacob Perry, and others, agreed to build a school house. Henry Greene furnished the land, containing twenty-two square rods; and Elisha Greenman was appointed to superintend the work. According to date, this was the first school building erected by the white people of Charlestown, which continued to be used for school purposes; and it was named Washington, in honor of the first President of the United States. This district is situated in the northeastern part of the town. In 1871, Jason P. Greene, George W. Cross, Amos P. Greene, and Henry S. Greene, transferred the property to the district, with the proviso that when it should cease to be used for educational means, it should fall back to its original grantors; and, in the same year, the house was thoroughly repaired, and supplied with modern desks and seats.

DISTRICT NO. 4—SHUMUNCANUC.

Here, in the northwestern part of the town, the surface is very hilly, and the people named the district after the most important hill. The citizens of this section met pursuant to notice, on the premises of Abram Allen, Esq., and selected a pleasant location for a school. Mr. Allen gave, then and there, the land on which the building was to be erected; and Mrs. Elizabeth Allen, wife of Abram, named it "Union Hill," and paid one dollar for the honor of naming it. This building was raised on the 16th of September, and dedicated, by having a meeting in it, on the 13th of November, 1834. The first structure, however, was burned down, and on November the 10th, 1845, Arnold and Nancy Hiscox deeded a parcel of land to the district, nearer the centre, whereon the present school-house stands.

Mrs. Elizabeth Allen, who was born June 22d, 1772, is now living and enjoying good health; she is a member of the Six Principle Baptist Church of Charlestown, and possesses a remarkable memory for a person who has lived to see more than five-score years.

DISTRICT NO. 2—QUONOCONTAUG.

In this section of the State, some of the hills, streams, rivers and ponds, retain at the present time the original names given by the Indians. Quonocontaug is situated in the southwestern portion of the town, and this name appears first applied to a pond in the neighborhood, from which the district received it. Edward Wilcox, who was Lieutenant Governor from 1817 to 1821, transferred a lot

of land to the district, upon which a school house was built in 1838. Although a respectable number of teachers have gone forth from other schools, still this school is entitled to the honor of educating an unusual number of good and faithful teachers.

DISTRICT No. 3—COOKSTOWN.

This division joins the town of Westerly, and it is really a rural district. The first school officers elected were the following: Bowen Briggs, Moderator; Joseph W. Taylor, Clerk; Benj. F. Wilcox, Matthias Crandall, and Rowland Peckham, Trustees; Perry Healy, Treasurer; and Gardner Crumb, Collector. Bowen Briggs and Gilbert Stanton conveyed a piece of land to the district in 1839, and a school building was erected during the year.

DISTRICT No. 7—WATCHAUG.

The people of this district erected a school house in 1840, but a deed of the land on which the house stands was not granted until August 15th, 1864. Watchaug is located in the south part of the town, and derives its name from a large pond on the western boundary, so called by the Indians. There is no other district in Charlestown which has such a grand expanse of water within its limits, or bordering on its territory.

DISTRICT No. 1—CROSS' MILLS.

This district is situated in the southeastern section of the town, and named after the village within its limits. The citizens of the neighborhood built a house for educational purposes in 1843. From 1845 to 1860, perhaps no school in the town excelled this one in literary attainments; and in reference to teachers, without doubt this school has produced nearly as many as all the other schools combined. The school building was repaired and re-seated in 1874.

DISTRICT No. 5—PASQUESETT.

The citizens were in meditation a long time before any conclusion was reached; and finally, in 1850, they purchased thirty rods of land of Robert Hazard, and built a school house thereon. The district, which is situated in the northern and central part of the town, takes its name from a small pond lying on its eastern border. In 1874, the school house was enlarged and thoroughly renovated, and furnished with desks and seats of the latest pattern. The extent of territory and the advancement of the school considerably exceeds that of any other in the town. The Indian school house heretofore mentioned, is located in the southern part of this division.

DISTRICT NO. 8—CAROLINA.

In 1845, Rowland G. Hazard, Esq., erected a school house in Richmond, northwest of the village; and, on the 13th of May, 1871, the property, consisting of a house and lot, was sold to the district for $700. Meanwhile, the children from the northern part of the district of Pasquesett attended school here, as it was more convenient so to do, and paid their proportion of the school fund of Charlestown to the school in Richmond. But on the 27th of January, 1872, District No. 8 of Charlestown, and No. 2 of Richmond, were consolidated, and named Carolina Joint District. At this period, an addition was made to the school house, at a cost of $2,-487 63, making it a very commodious and useful school building. Immediately after the completion of the house, the school was divided into a primary and a grammar department, establishing a graded school.

IMPROVEMENT AND PRESENT CONDITION.

About forty-eight years ago, the public school system was established in the State of Rhode Island. It was truly the beginning of a new era of educational improvements; and the State, like a living body which is sensitive in every member, was touched by the noble and generous act, in all its sub-divisions. Indeed, literary interests were perceptibly awakened in the minds of the people; and, from that period onward, education has been steadily advancing in the direction of both a higher and a broader culture. The establishment of the permanent school fund and public schools gave life and vitality to the cause of education, and incited the people to a more united and determined effort to give better means of instruction to the rising generation. A few soul-inspiring men, faithful servants of a worthy cause, have taken hold of this national work, and have carried it forward to its present condition. The broad foundation of our common schools is favorably fixed, and, with wise legislation and prudent management, improvements will be made as long as time and necessity demand them. The common school is the place where a child should be taught the moral as well as the literary lessons of public life, for morality and learning are indispensable to a nation's success. Charlestown has now resident teachers enough to supply all her schools, and about fifty per cent. of them have attended State Normal Schools. The average length of schools for the year is a little more than eight months, showing quite a contrast in comparison with the school year of one half century ago.

SCHOOL SUPERVISION.

The School Committee which appointed the first Town Superintendent were elected in April, 1871, and organized soon after, by electing Samuel B. Hoxsie, Chairman; Benjamin F. Greenman, Clerk; and Dr. A. A. Saunders, Superintendent. The employment of a person to thoroughly inspect the schools, and to direct and assist the teachers in their daily labors, was an important step in educational progress. School supervision is the foundation on which the whole system of popular instruction rests. Unquestionably, what is most needed by our public schools, and what is most essential to their efficiency, is a constant, thorough, and impartial supervision. I believe that the more direct and frequent this oversight is, when judiciously exerted, the more satisfactory will be the results.

DISTINGUISHED PERSONS.

In connection with the public schools, perhaps, it may be proper to mention some of the persons who have labored faithfully for the advancement of education, and those who have become distinguished for their ability. Dan King was an earnest advocate for popular education, and his sons were educated for various professions. Joshua Card was a notable aid in the cause of public instruction. He was himself a teacher of good repute, and his youngest son, David Card, is now a physician at Willimantic, Connecticut. Dr. Joseph H. Griffin was an earnest laborer for the advancement of schools and the education of his children. Louis P. Griffin, his son, completed a course of studies in medicine, and began his practice in Chicago, Illinois. Samuel J. Cross was an able and efficient educator. He moved from Rhode Island to New York, where he became connected with a college during the remainder of his life. Wm. H. Perry, a teacher of large experience, has done much to promote the best interests of our schools. Kate Stanton, daughter of George A. Stanton, and a lecturer of some note, was formerly a teacher in this town.

EVENING SCHOOLS.

DISTRICT NO. 5—PASQUESETT.

The first Evening School of Charlestown was opened in 1871, by the author of this sketch, who organized and taught it without compensation. Reynolds K. Hoxsie, Esq., offered the basement of his new house at Carolina Station, for the benefit of the school, where he has since re-opened the room for the sale of dry goods

and groceries. Necessity, the mother of invention, seemed to demand the organization of the school, that a certain class of individuals who were deprived of the advantages of day schools by their several occupations might be better educated. Here the school, which registered twenty-five, and averaged eighteen pupils, continued sixteen evenings, with gratifying success. Through the labors of this school, a deep impression rested on the minds of the pupils; they were aroused to a conciousness that more thorough and extensive knowledge of the common branches was needful for the preparation of those who were to fill the various and responsible positions of life. No motive other than a generous one prompted this effort, which has proved an invaluable blessing to the pupils who attended the school, and to the surrounding community.

DISTRICT NO. 5—PASQUESETT.

In the autumn of 1872, having been convinced that illiteracy existed to some extent in our midst, I called together the children of Shannock Mills and vicinity, and established an evening school. This school was located in Charlestown; it continued ten weeks, numbered fifteen, and gave a general average of twelve pupils. I took upon myself the responsibility of furnishing room and means, without remuneration, to secure the largest attendance; and imparted instruction to them gratuitously. However, this school numbered less than the one taught at Carolina Station the previous year; as the former included the pupils of two villages, whereas the latter included those of only one village. I fully appreciate the motives which influence a community to make such exertion that will confer the highest educational benefit upon the largest number of persons. To advance the cause of education in this locality, seems to be the voice and inclination of the majority of the people.

CAROLINA JOINT DISTRICT.

On the 3d day of January, 1876, Abel Tanner, an earnest, able, and efficient educator, employed Wm. T. Collins of Hopkinton, and John Holden of Charlestown, as teachers. With their assistance, he established an evening school in Carolina Joint District, in the town of Richmond, which proved a real success, and met the approbation of all concerned. Idleness and stupidity were soon excluded from the premises; the latent energies of the mind were awakened and called into action; the enthusiasm and zeal of 1871 were rekindled; and the school marched onward to perfection amidst the congratulations of the pupils and the approval of the people. This

school held twenty-nine evening sessions, registered sixty-four, averaged fifty-eight, and closed February 24th, 1876.

During the next winter, Mr. Tanner, who was then trustee of the district, engaged Wm. T. Collins of Hopkinton, E. Anson Stillman of Westerly, and Wm. F. Tucker of Charlestown, and again opened the school, which continued only eighteen evenings, registered fifty-nine, and averaged forty-nine. The teachers worked earnestly and conscientiously for the advancement of those under their superintendence, while the pupils manifested an anxious desire to learn, and make the most of their opportunities. The best of discipline was maintained throughout the term, and the average attendance, for an evening school, was very good. The urgent need of maintaining an evening school of this grade and character, in this thriving village of some five hundred inhabitants, is obvious to any rational mind. It is my earnest desire that the success which the school has gained during the two past terms, and the interest and zeal manifested by the pupils for whose benefit it is organized, will secure its continuation. Term began December 12th, 1876, and ended February 13th, 1877.

DISTRICT NO. 4—SHUMUNCANUC.

The first evening school in this district was opened December 15th, 1876, and closed March 3d, 1877. Mr. Simon P. Nichols, of Usquepaugh, who was teacher in the day school, took charge of it, and performed his duties with marked success and ability. Owing to the small number of pupils in attendance, and the larger part of that number being members of the day school, the principal difficulty of the instructor was to awaken earnestness and enthusiasm in the minds of the pupils. Notwithstanding the many disadvantages under which the teacher has been obliged to labor, yet the time has not been wholly lost, nor the means entirely squandered. The entire number registered was sixteen, and the average attendance for the term was nine. The school closed its session of twenty-five evenings, of three hours each, with a public exhibition.

DISTRICT NO. 5—PASQUESETT.

In the latter part of September, 1876, the citizens and friends of education persuaded me to establish an evening school where it would accommodate to the best advantage the scholars of Shannock, Clark, and Kenyon's villages. My first business was to procure a suitable room in a central position. This desired situation I found in the possession of Simeon P. Clark, of whom I hired it, and fitted it up for the occasion. Clark's Hall is well known to the public; it

is the largest one in Charlestown; and it is generally used for religious meetings and educational gatherings. To select a competent corps of teachers was the next task that devolved upon me, and I very readily made a choice of Abel Tanner, Wm. T. Collins, and John Holden. The school became organized on the 16th day of October, 1876, and everything progressed finely and favorably. The pupils were divided into the following classes: In spelling, three classes; in reading, four classes; in arithmetic, four classes; in grammar, two classes; in algebra, one class; in penmanship, one class; and in Town's Analysis of Derivative Words, one class. The whole number of pupils registered during the term was 75; the average attendance, 57; average age of pupils in attendance, 20 years. The school closed its term of twenty-six evenings on the 5th day of February, 1877.

MANUFACTORIES.

Charlestown cannot be considered a manufacturing district, as there is no capital employed in cotton or woolen manufactories within its limits. A few manufacturers, however, reside in this town, but their places of business are located on the right bank of Pawcatuck River, and in the town of Richmond, where all the manufacturing establishments are situated, which furnish employment to a portion of the inhabitants in the northern part of this town.

On the 14th of February, 1776, Charles Church was authorized by a vote of the town to make thirty gun-barrels and bayonets for the use of the town; the gun-barrels were to be not less than three feet and six inches long; and that the said Charles Church be allowed one dollar per foot for gun-barrels thus made, and one dollar for each bayonet.

Caleb Crandall was authorized, at the same meeting, to stock in a strong and sufficient condition, for the use of soldiers, thirty small arms, and that the said Caleb Crandall be allowed $1 25 for each gun stocked as aforesaid.

Joseph Stanton and Caleb Crandall were likewise appointed a committee to make a contract with Daniel Saunders for thirty gun-locks and trimmings, and to agree with him upon the price of them.

KNOWLES' PURCHASE.

On the 17th of March, 1845, Lodowick Hoxsie* sold to John T.

* Lodowick Hoxsie, Esq., who bought the saw-mill and situation of Job Card, more than sixty years ago, or as early as 1815, ran the mill for a number of years after he came into possession of it. The mill was built by Mr. Card, at a very early date, but a portion of the old structure was removed since 1840.

and Jirah Knowles a mill privilege, situated on the south bank of the river at Clark's Mills. The new firm went to work, erected a mill, and manufactured linsey goods. Samuel A. Hoxsie bought the property, August the 1st, 1848, converted the establishment into a cotton mill, and made cotton yarn until 1856, when it was burned down. The site is now in the possession of Simeon P. Clark, who owns the land on both sides of the stream at the falls.

KING'S PURCHASE.

It is well known that Dan King bought a certain tract of land of Joseph Stanton, March 16th, 1831, and built himself a small mill, in which he manufactured negro cloth. "King's Factory," for so it was called, was situated on the road between Cross' Mills and Richmond Switch, now known as Wood River Junction, and about one and one-quarter miles west from the first-named place. Finally, on the 22d of February, 1841, John R. Congdon purchased the estate of Mr. King. Congdon then received John Miller as partner in the enterprise, and changed the mill into a twine-manufacturing establishment. Here the firm pursued this branch of business for a few years, but at last all went down, business, pond, and houses. The spindles have ceased to hum, the wheel has surely passed away, and there is not one building left—no, not one stick—at the present time, to remind one of the business that was transacted here. George F. Burdick, Esq., now cultivates the land where the pond once flowed. Of the manufacturing establishments of this town, such seems to be the destiny.

GRIST MILL.

The first information relating to a grist mill, is found on record in Ninegret's deed to the colony, dated March 28, 1709. This mill then belonged to Joseph Davill, and was located on the brook at Cross' Mills, where the present one stands; but I am unable to find, in my researches, the exact date when the mill was first built. This grist mill was in a good working condition when Joseph Davill owned it; and it has been in use up to the present time. This is the only grist mill in the town, and Peleg Cross and his heirs have held possession of it for a long time; it has, however, changed hands since the death of George W. and Joseph H. Cross, and it is new owned by Alfred Collins and Benjamin B. Greene.

SAW MILLS.

About 1½ miles south of Carolina village, on the road leading to

Cross' Mills, and something less than one mile to the north-east of the Indian cedar swamp, is a saw mill, which was owned by Joseph Jeffrey about one hundred years ago, and then known as the old Indian saw mill. The precise date of this mill is not known, it may have been built as early as Joseph Davill's mill, which was in good running order in 1709. Joseph Jeffrey sold this property to Caleb Kenyon, from whom it was handed down to his posterity. In 1864, Saunders Crandall purchased the estate of Caleb Kenyon's heirs; and, after the lapse of two or three years, he sold the farm to Benjamin F. Crandall, and the mill and privilege to Benjamin Tucker, who rebuilt and enlarged the mill, making several improvements. The building now contains a saw mill and a shingle mill, which are in operation during the larger part of the year. When Mr. Kenyon came into possession of this mill, the forests and swamps contained excellent timber. Oak, pine and cedar, are the principal kinds of lumber sawed at this establishment.

Tradition informs us that Joseph Jeffrey was a wheelwright as well as a sawyer by trade; and the people wishing to gain some knowledge of his workmanship, asked him to tell them how he succeeded in making such splendid wheels; whereupon he replied, "I guess and 'low, and the work generally comes all right."

TUCKER'S SHINGLE MILL.

In 1833, John Tucker, then a young man, built a dam, raised a pond, and erected a shingle mill. In three or four years after this, the Providence and Stonington railroad passed through the northern part of the town, within ten or fifteen rods of the mill. Carolina Depot, the nearest station to the establishment, is situated about one half of a mile to the east of it. Mr. Tucker informed me that since he commenced operations in 1833, his mill has turned out more than two hundred thousand shingles annually, or nearly ten millions. Possibly this mill has sawed, in forty-three years, more shingles than any other establishment in Washington County.

INDIAN BURYING GROUND.

About one mile to the north-east of Cross' Mills, and nearly the same distance to the north of the late Gen. Joseph Stanton's residence, now owned by Doct. John A. Wilcox, is located the ancient burial-place of the royal family of the Narragansett Indians. It is on a pleasant elevation, which commands an extensive view of the ocean and country. There is a little pond to the south of it, and

perhaps within eighty rods of the famous burying ground. There is one row of mounds raised above the next, where Indian tradition identifies them as the tombs of the sachems, great men, and their families. Many of the graves are very lengthy. The hill was formerly covered with wood, but during the great gale of the 8th of September, 1869, some of it was prostrated, and since then Joseph H. and George W. Cross, proprietors of the land, (now deceased,) have cut off a portion of the timber. This property, however, was recently sold at auction, to Edward T. Burdick and Benjamin B. Greene.

In May, 1859, an event of a peculiar nature, which has a direct bearing upon this subject, transpired in this town, and it may with propriety be mentioned here. The following citizens—Joshua P. Card, Charles Cross, George F. Babcock, John Congdon, Asa Noyes, Christopher P. Card, Oliver Fisk, Samuel Noca, and Benoni Henry —who formed a company of nine members, repaired to the noted "Indian Burying Hill," and there opened a grave, to ascertain in what manner the Indians buried their dead, and to obtain, or collect, if possible, a few of the relics said to be deposited in the graves, as it was customary for them so to do. The grave which they opened was covered with large flat stones, and contained a log coffin. Two logs were split open, making four pieces; these pieces served as bottom, sides and top of the coffin; and were firmly bound together with iron chains. A brass kettle was found at one end of the coffin, and an iron kettle at the other end. Quite a large collection of relics were taken out of this grave, and carried to the village at Cross' Mills, whence a portion of them were sent to Brown University in Providence, as I have been informed.

A suit was brought against these men, by Henry Hazard, Joshua Noca, and Gideon Ammons, of the tribe, for opening the grave and taking therefrom sundry articles, or, in other words, for crime and misdemeanor against the laws of the State of Rhode Island. They were arraigned before Joseph H. Griffin, Justice of the Peace, examined, and held to answer therefor before the Supreme Court at Kingston, where they were duly acquitted, and exonerated from blame. The justice court over which Mr. Griffin presided was held in the Ocean House at Cross' Mills, for the special occasion.

Subsequently, Dr. Parson, of Providence, opened quite a number of graves, to obtain a supply for a repository of scientific curiosities. Those who saw his collection make the assertion, that he did not accumulate one half as many relics as the party found in the first grave, against whom the prosecution was directed.

There is another Indian burying ground on Fort Neck, near the

site of the old fort, where several graves are now visible. On one of the grave stones, (and the only one on which there seems to be any letters,) is the following inscription: "Here lies the Body of George, the son of Charles Ninegret, King of the Natives, and of Hannah his wife, died December the 22d, 1732, aged 6 mo."

CHARLESTOWN LIBRARY ASSOCIATION.

At a meeting of the subscribers for a Library to be established in the town of Charlestown, held pursuant to notice given by a number of said subscribers, at the house of James Fry in said town, January 17th, A. D. 1849, John Stanton, Esq., was appointed Chairman of said meeting, and Wm. H. Perry, Secretary. The meeting proceeded to appoint a Committee to draft a Constitution; the following persons were appointed the Committee: Dr. Joseph H. Griffin, Wm. H. Perry, George W. Cross, Asa Church, and John Stanton. On motion, the meeting was adjourned to Wednesday, January 24th, 1849, at 6½ o'clock P. M., to meet at this place.

WM. H. PERRY, *Sec'y.*

At a meeting of the subscribers for a Library to be established in the town of Charlestown, held by adjournment at the house of James Fry in said town, Wednesday, January 24th, 1849, John Stanton, Esq., in the chair. The Committee appointed to draft a Constitution made report, presenting a draft of Constitution, and the same being read, was taken up by sections and acted upon, and finally the whole embodiment was adopted as the Constitution. John Stanton, Esq., was elected President; George W. Cross, Vice President; and Dr. Joseph H. Griffin, Secretary, of the Association. Dr. Joseph H. Griffin was appointed first Librarian, Samuel B. Hoxsie second, and Charles Anthony third Librarian. Wm. H. Perry was appointed Treasurer. A code of By-Laws was presented, taken up by sections and acted upon, and adopted as the By-Laws of the Association. On motion being made, the meeting was adjourned *sine die.*

JOSEPH H. GRIFFIN, *Sec'y.*

CONSTITUTION.

We, the subscribers, agree to associate and incorporate ourselves for the purpose of establishing and maintaining a Public Library in the town of Charlestown, under the provisions of an act entitled "An act to provide for the voluntary incorporation of Library, Academy and School Associations," passed at the June session of the General Assembly, A. D. 1847; and to be governed by the following Constitution:

ART. 1. This Association shall be called the Charlestown Library Association.

ART. 2. The officers of the Association shall be a President, Vice-President, Secretary, Treasurer, and three Librarians, and the three first-named officers shall constitute a Board of Directors, who shall manage the business of the Association, subject, however, to such rules and regulations as the Association may from time

to time adopt. A majority of the persons elected Directors shall be a quorum, and they shall meet from time to time, whenever notified by the President. Either of the two last-named offices, (i. e., Treasurer or Librariau,) may be held by either of the three first-named officers. The officers of this Association shall serve without pecuniary emolument.

ART. 3. The annual meeting shall be held on the fourth Wednesday of January in each year. All the officers of this Association shall be elected by ballot, if demanded by any five members, at the annual meeting thereof; *provided*, however, that the first election of officers shall take place at the time of the adoption of this Constitution. The Treasurer shall be required to give bond to the Association for the faithful discharge of his duties.

ART. 4. Any member, for disorderly or immoral conduct, or for refusing or neglecting to comply with the By-Laws of the Association, may be expelled, and any officer, for misconduct, may be removed, at any regularly notified meeting of said Association.

ART. 5. The Directors may make all such regulations as they think best for the government of the Library, and calculated to enlarge the benefits thereof; *provided*, they be not inconsistent with law, or the Constitution, or the By-Laws of the Association.

ART. 6. The Library shall be held by the Association, not in shares for the benefit of the shareholders, but in trust for the benefit of the public; to be open to all who shall comply with the regulations made by the Association or Directors. And for the purpose of continuing the legal existence of the corporation, the Association shall, from time to time, elect as members such persons as they shall think most likely to co-operate zealously in promoting its objects. But no person shall be elected or admitted as a member unless proposed at a previous meeting; *provided*, however, that all persons who shall have subscribed the sum of one dollar for the establishment of said Library before this Constitution is adopted, shall, on paying to the proper officer the amounts by them subscribed, within the time prescribed by the Association, become members of the same, without being propounded at a previous meeting, as fully and effectually as those subscribers who are admitted at the time said Constitution is adopted.

ART. 7. The President may at any time, and shall on the request of the Directors, or of any five members, call meetings of the Association, giving ten days public notice; but the Association may, from time to time, regulate the mode of notice, and may direct when such meetings shall be held.

ART. 8. This Constitution may be amended at any aunual meeting, *provided* notice of the intended amendment has been given at some previous meeting. The Secretary shall cause this Constitution, and all alterations or amendments thereof, to be recorded in the Records of Land Evidence of the town of Charlestown, as the law requires.

MEMBERS OF THE ASSOCIATION.

John Stanton,	Joseph B. Tucker,
Joseph H. Griffin,	Stephen C. Browning,
Asa Church, Jr.,	Joseph H. Cross,
George W. Cross,	James L. Austin,
Peleg T. Brightman,	John D. Browning,
Gordon H. Hoxsie,	Charles Cross,
Gilbert Taylor,	Benjamin B. Green,
Samuel B. Hoxsie,	James Fry,

J. P. Card.

Recorded January 2d, A. D. 1850, by G. Hoxsie, Jr., Town Clerk.

The Charlestown Library Association was established in 1850, and owes its origin mainly to the liberality of Amasa Manton, Esq., of Providence. By the expenditure of about one hundred and fifty dollars, he has been instrumental in raising in this town double that amount, and has thus secured the establishment of a library with five hundred good books. Since the accomplishment of this object, the citizens have added at least one hundred and fifty volumes to the catalogue, making in all about six hundred and fifty volumes. Who can estimate the innumerable blessings, individual and social, which will flow directly or indirectly from the dissemination of these books, and which will continue to flow still more abundantly when the liberal donor has himself passed from the earth, and another generation has risen up to have access to this library?

There is not one clause in the Constitution, By-Laws, Rules and Regulations of the Association, whereby it is made an itinerating library; yet the society established it, and divided the books into three divisions, locating them as follows: First division, at Cross' Mills, in charge of Dr. Joseph H. Griffin, first librarian; second division, at Quonocontaug Neck, in care of Samuel B. Hoxsie, second librarian; and the third division, at Carolina Mills, in care of Charles Anthony, third librarian. The volumes are now placed in cases, and are under the supervision of George H. Ward of Cross' Mills, Samuel B. Hoxsie of Quonocontaug, and Joseph B. Tucker of Carolina Mills.

This library, for the last ten or fifteen years, has been comparatively useless. I do earnestly hope that the friends of education will place these most powerful means of accomplishing the promotion of knowledge and virtue, upon a more sure basis, that the town may have its annual State appropriation, and that the people may avail themselves of the rare advantages which are indispensable to a well-informed community.

Abel F. Stanton, of Cross' Mills, is the present Secretary of the Association.

EDIFICES AND HALLS.

A brief history of these structures may cast a ray of light on the gradual advancement of better facilities for both public and private affairs. Larger and more commodious halls have been provided for the use of the people. Previous to 1848, this town had but one hall; since then, five more have been added to the number.

STANTON'S HALL.

As early as 1796, Gen. Joseph Stanton, through a lottery, obtained a school building, which he afterward enlarged and fitted up for a dwelling house. However, this building underwent several improvements, and about the year 1810, the house received the addition of a store and hall; and from that period onward to the time when the cars and steamboats were brought into use, it was a tavern of no small importance. Here many of the leading men of the country met, as it was on the most direct route between Newport and New London, and nearly midway between the two cities. In the noted and time-worn mansion, we find the oldest, and doubtless the first, hall ever erected in this town; but, during the last thirty years, it has ceased to be used for public convenience. The estate is now owned by John A. Wilcox, M. D., who has recently made some repairs on the buildings.

WARD'S HALL.

In 1848, the Ocean House, at Cross' Mills, contained a hall which was opened for public use. The most memorable event which transpired in this hall was the criminal prosecution brought against the party who opened the grave on "Indian Burying Hill." Peleg Sisson, Esq., in 1871, purchased this property, and divided the hall into smaller rooms; therefore, as a hall, it has passed into desuetude.

CROSS' HALL.

In 1855, Joseph H. and George W. Cross put up a stone building, 26 by 36 feet on the ground, and used the basement for a store and post-office, and the upper story for a public hall. The town meetings and town councils were convened in this hall from 1855 to 1876, or more than one quarter of a century; but the building has been vacated since the death of Joseph H. Cross, who died May 25th, 1876.

CLARK'S HALL.

In 1859, John T. Knowles erected a grain mill, 44 by 40; but, after taking another view of the situation, he finally converted the establishment into a four-family tenement-house. In 1869, Simeon P. Clark & Co. bought the estate of Samuel and Edwin Knowles, sons of John T. Knowles. During the same year, Mr. Clark employed Charles Maxson & Co. of Westerly, who changed the upper story of the building into a hall, put on a sharp roof in lieu of the flat one, supplied the hall with a belfry and bell, and made a very spacious and convenient room of it. Of the four halls in the town, this is the largest one, and the one most frequently used. The

chief object for which this hall was constructed, as Mr. Clark informed me, was to afford better accommodation to the people for religious and educational purposes. How wise a devotion for the people's promotion! This chapel seems to be in the most central place; and it is opened for religious meetings, for Sabbath-schools, for Singing-schools, for evening-schools, and for the general diffusion of knowledge.

CARD'S HALL.

Some time in the early part of 1871, Henry C. Card, of Cross' Mills, entered into a contract with Jonathan Tucker for a building having the following dimensions: Length, 36 feet; and width, 26 feet. Mr. Tucker completed the job according to agreement during the same year. This structure consists of two departments, a grocery store and a public hall; the latter, however, is now used by the town for public business.

SAMOSET HALL.

The structure, including the hall at Carolina Mills, was built in 1872. It is 50 feet in length by 30 feet in breadth; and it is superior to any other edifice of the kind in Charlestown, both in design and workmanship. Soon after the completion of this building, William D. Cross, the proprietor, established a cigar manufactory on the lower floor, where he is still actively engaged in the business.

The Richmond and Charlestown Teachers' Association, which was organized in the early part of December, 1874, has always assembled in this hall, as it is near the boundary between the two towns, and affords altogether the best accommodation to the people who attend such educational meetings. May this hall be in constant demand, and the center of refinement and learning!

INDEX.

Page.

Abrogation of the Laws respecting the Sale of Indian Land..... 30
Act to prevent Indians being Sued for Debt..... 16
Aid to the Poor of Boston..... 46
Allowance to Will Davel for the Loss of an Eye..... 15
Appointment of Overseers to lease out Ninegret's Land..... 15
Association, Charlestown Library..... 81
Association, Charlestown Library, Members of..... 82
Auditors, Appointment of, to audit Trustees' Accounts..... 21

Burying Ground on Fort Neck..... 80

Card's Hall..... 85
Carolina Joint District, No. 8..... 73
Carolina Joint District, No. 8..... 75
Charlestown, subdivision of..... 25
Charlestown Branch of the General Six Principle Baptist Church..... 66
Churches, Establishment of..... 63
Citation for Ninegret to appear at the next Assembly..... 32
Clark's Hall..... 84
Committee, Appointment of, to survey Lands in Westerly..... 18
Committee, Appointment of, to settle the late Ninegret's Affairs..... 43
Constitution and By-Laws of the Charlestown Library Association..... 81
Conveyance of Land by Ninegret to Cooke Ruffin's Son..... 16
Cookstown, District No. 3..... 72
Copy of a Resolution passed by the General Assembly..... 5
Council of Ninegret, petition of, to sell Fort Neck..... 37
Cross' Hall..... 84
Cross' Mills, District No. 1..... 72

Deed of Roger Williams and wife to his Associates..... 9
Deed of George Ninegret to the Church in Charlestown..... 63
Deeds, execution of, by Committee and two of the Indian Council..... 44
Deposition of Roger Williams relative to his Purchase..... 11
Disinterment of Indian Graves, suit against..... 80
Distinguished Persons..... 74
District System..... 70
Donation of Ninegret to the Town of Westerly..... 17

Edifices and Halls..... 83
Evening Schools, Pasquesett, District No. 5..... 74
Execution of Deeds by Thomas Ninegret and Council..... 35
Explanation of an Act exempting Indians from Debt..... 17

Facilities before Public Schools..... 70
First Town Meeting of Charlestown, Election of Officers..... 52
First Freewill Baptist Church of Richmond and Charlestown..... 66
First Baptist Church of Charlestown..... 67
First Baptist Church and Society of Cross' Mills..... 67
Fort Niantic, on Fort Neck..... 47
Fort Shumuncanuc..... 47
Founders of the State of Rhode Island, partial list of..... 11
Funds returned to the General Treasury by Ninegret's Trustees..... 17

General Assembly, appointment of Committee by..... 36
Grist Mill..... 78

Harbor, appointment of Committee for Inspection..... 28
Hopkins, Hon. Stephen, added to the Committee..... 42
House of Deputies, Members of, from 1738 to 1797..... 55
House of Representatives, Members of, from 1797 to 1843..... 58
House of Representatives, Members of, from 1843 to 1876..... 61
Improvement and Present Condition of Public Schools..... 73

Indian Burying Ground..... 79
Indians, Restriction of, against selling Land..... 34

Joint Resolution on the Celebration of the Centennial..... 4

Kenyon, William, his Statement concerning Thomas Ninegret..... 50
Knowles' Purchase..... 77
King's Purchase..... 78

Land of Stephen Wilcox for sale..... 18
Letter from Roger Williams to the General Court of Massachusetts..... 12
Library, remarks respecting..... 83
Lottery, proceeds of, to be used for turning the Pawcatuck River..... 31

Manufactories..... 77
Marriage of John Anthony to Sarah George, Queen..... 50
Memorial of Charles Ninegret to the General Assembly..... 19
Money loaned to Ninegret by order of General Assembly..... 16

Narragansett Indian School..... 68
Narragansett Indian Church..... 65
Narragansett Sachems..... 48
Ninegret, Charles, death of..... 24
Ninegret, Thomas, reminiscences of..... 51
Ninegret, George, conveyance of lands by, to the Church..... 24
Ninegret, Sarah, petition of..... 26
Ninegret, Charles, an infant, Act for relief of..... 28
Ninegret, Esther, marriage of..... 51
Ninegret, Thomas, petition of, against Taxation..... 29
Notice to Ninegret's Creditors to bring in their Claims..... 34
Notification of the Sale of Ninegret's Land..... 18

Old School Building..... 69
Oliver, Andrew, letter of, to the Governor, respecting a School House..... 34
Opinion of Indian Council relative to Fort Neck..... 43
Overseers of Ninegret, power to lease Lands for fourteen years..... 17

Park, Rev. Joseph, respecting service of his sons, restitution for..... 30
Pasquesett, District No. 5..... 72
Pasquesett, District No. 5..... 75
Pasquesett, District No. 5..... 76
Passage of an Act for the Payment of Debts..... 25
Pequot Indians, their Overthrow..... 46
Perry, Samuel, dismissal of, from Trusteeship..... 24
Petition of Tribe against the Sale of Indian Lands..... 31
Petition of Thomas Ninegret and six of his Council..... 36
Petition of Esther Sachem and her Husband..... 39
Petition signed by forty-three Indians..... 44
Petition for turning Pawcatuck River into Charlestown Pond..... 20
Plat of Ninegret's Lands..... 18

Prefatory Remarks..... 6
President Grant's Proclamation..... 3

Queen of the Tribe empowered to give Deeds..... 42
Quonocontaug, District No. 2..... 71

Recommendation of Indian Justices of the Peace..... 42
Report of Committee to the General Assembly..... 18
Report of Committee concerning Lands of the Narragansetts..... 33
Report of Committee relative to the affairs of the Tribe..... 40
Reservation of George Ninegret..... 23
Robinson, Matthew, appointment of, to draw Deeds..... 42
Royal Heads of the Niantic Tribe..... 49

Sachem, George, premature death of..... 51
Samoset Hall..... 85
Saw Mills..... 78
School Supervision..... 74
Second Baptist Church of Richmond..... 66
Senate, Members of, from 1843 to 1876..... 60
Shumuncanuc, District No. 4..... 71
Shumuncanuc, District No. 4..... 76
Stanton, Col. Joseph, purchase of, ordered to be confirmed..... 18
Stanton, Col. Joseph, account of, by whom audited..... 24
Stanton's Hall..... 84
Surveyors, appointment of, to set off Tribe Land..... 32

Taxation of Property, exemption of Tribe from..... 29
Thomas Perry's School Building..... 69
Town Officers for 1876..... 53
Town Clerks from 1738 to 1876..... 54
Town Treasurers from 1738 to 1876..... 54
Trustees of Ninegret, report of, to the General Assembly..... 18
Trustees Richard Ward and Samuel Perry..... 22
Trustees, removal of..... 27
Tucker's Shingle Mill..... 79

Vacant Lands, Deed to the Colony, March 28th, 1709..... 23
Vote of Assembly, requesting Ninegret and Council to give a Deed..... 34

Ward's Hall..... 84
Washington, District No. 6..... 71
Washington County, census of, from 1708 to 1875..... 62
Watchaug, District No. 7..... 72
Westerly, subdivision of, into two Towns..... 21

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

TOWN OF LINCOLN,

IN THE

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND.

COMPILED AND WRITTEN BY

WELCOME A. GREENE,

UNDER THE DIRECTION AND ADVICE OF CHARLES MOIES, ALFRED H. LITTLEFIELD AND GEORGE A. KENT, A COMMITTEE APPOINTED BY THE TOWN COUNCIL OF LINCOLN TO PROVIDE A HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE TOWN, IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE RECENT PROCLAMATIONS OF THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES AND THE GOVERNOR OF THE STATE OF RHODE ISLAND.

CENTRAL FALLS, R. I.:
F. L. FREEMAN & CO., STEAM BOOK, JOB AND LITHOGRAPHIC PRINTERS.
1876.

To the Honorable Town Council of the Town of Lincoln, County of Providence, State of Rhode Island:

GENTLEMEN,—Your honorable Board, agreeable to a resolution of Congress and a proclamation of the President of the United States, and also a resolution of the General Assembly and a proclamation of the Governor of this State, at a meeting held May 27th, appointed the undersigned a committee to make the necessary research and write, or cause to be written, a historical sketch of the town of Lincoln since its formation, in 1871. Your committee finding the duty somewhat arduous, requiring considerable time, more than they were able to devote to the work from the active business of life, employed Welcome A. Greene, Esq., to collect and arrange the necessary statistics. After a careful review of the matter presented,—which we find to be ably and concisely written, and as there is to be no general gathering in the town on this Centennial birth-day of the nation, on which occasion the manuscript might be read,—we take pleasure in presenting to the gentlemen of the Board and to the citizens of the town the following printed sketch, which may be purchased at the cost of publication at the Town Clerk's office.

Respectfully submitted.

CHARLES MOIES,
ALFRED H. LITTLEFIELD,
GEORGE A. KENT.

LINCOLN, July 4, 1876.

HISTORICAL SKETCH.

ALTHOUGH the territory embraced within the limits of our town was the scene of some of the earliest settlements in the State, and one of the hardest fought battles of King Philip's war was finished, if not commenced, within our borders, and, from that time down through the early history of the State, those living within our limits have been noticeable for their energy, intelligence and ability both in war, when we were unfortunate enough to be suffering from that curse, and in peace, when their faculties could be devoted to the more congenial pursuits of agriculture, business and the mechanic arts, yet the history of those earlier times would seem to belong to that portion of our mother town that retains the parental name of Smithfield, and a historical sketch of Lincoln should, strictly speaking, commence at a time now but a few years past.

Up to March 8th, 1871, the territory now comprised in the town of Lincoln had formed part of the town of Smithfield ever since the incorporation of that town, February 20th, 1730–31.

Before its division (in 1871) the old town of Smithfield was the largest town in the State, with a population of over thirteen thousand, and very much diversified in the feelings, business interests and occupations of its inhabitants.

A large section of it was almost exclusively agricultural. Another section had most of its interests pointing towards the manufacturing establishments along the Branch river at the north end of the town.

Another seemed bound by business and social ties to the then new town of Woonsocket, while a fourth, which now forms the town of Lincoln, had most of its business and trade along the lines of the Blackstone and Moshassuck rivers.

Owing to this diversity of occupations and interests, there had been, for many years, more or less discussion as to the advisability of a division of the town, but it was deemed rather a matter for discussion than for action till the year 1871, when, on the twenty-first day of January, at a special town meeting called for that purpose, a vote was had, declaring that the town was in favor of dividing it (the town) into three towns, according to a proposed act of the legislature then on the moderator's table.

A committee on division of the town was appointed, consisting of Hon. Charles Moies, George Kilburn, Esq., Mr. Thomas A. Paine and Mr. Job Shaw. This committee introduced the subject to the legislature at the January session, 1871, and under their able management it was so favorably received that it soon became manifest that a division would be authorized.

As soon as it become apparent that a division was probable, the question of a name for this town became one of importance. There was much division on this subject, and the names of "Smithfield," "South Smithfield," "Lonsdale," "Moshassuck" and others besides "Lincoln" were suggested and had their advocates, but it was finally deemed best by those having the matter in charge to name the town "Lincoln," in commemoration of the late martyred president of the United States.

On the eighth of March, 1871, the Legislature of the State of Rhode Island passed an act authorizing the division of the town of Smithfield, incorporating the new towns thereby formed and fixing the boundaries of the several towns therein interested. Those of Lincoln were as follows, viz.: commencing at a point on the north line of North Providence, where the Douglas Pike (so called) crosses said line, then (bounding the town on the south) running easterly along said line till it reaches the centre of the Blackstone river; thence running with the centre of the Blackstone river (bounding the town on the east) to a point in the centre of said Blackstone river, opposite the centre of the mouth of the Crookfall river; thence (bound-

ing the town on the west) running by and with the centre of the Crookfall river to a point where the road leading from the Providence and Worcester road (so called) past the house of Ephraim Sayles, crosses it; thence southerly in a straight line to the place of beginning.

Charles Moies, Job Shaw, Arlon Mowry and Cyrus Arnold were appointed a committee to run lines and set stone bounds between the several new towns.

These boundaries have remained ever since, and now are those of the town, (although a portion of the then town of North Providence has since been incorporated into the town of Pawtucket, so that this town now bounds on the south in part by North Providence and in part by Pawtucket.) This gave us a territory of a triangular shape, covering about fifteen square miles, with a population of 7,889 persons, and a valuation for State Tax of $4,406,107.

The young town started in life with no Town Asylum and no Town House—both of those used by the old town of Smithfield going to the present town of Smithfield.

The only inheritance received from the mother town was the sum of twenty-five hundred dollars in cash, the records and archives of the old town—which are now in the Town Clerk's office—and the duty of paying a share of the old town's debt, which was $26,000, the total debt being $53,000.

The town by the act was divided into two voting districts, (and has since remained so divided). Voting district number one being the same as voting district number three in the old town of Smithfield, and voting district number two embracing the rest of the town.

This town was to send two Representatives to the Legislature till the next State apportionment.

The town life dates, for the purpose of electing Senator and Representatives to the General Assembly from the first Wednesday in April, 1871, and for all other purposes whatever from the first Monday in June, A. D. 1871.

The first members of the General Assembly elected from the town of Lincoln were, Senator, Hon. Edward L. Freeman; Representatives, Edward A. Brown and Samuel Clark.

There has been no change in the general form of the town

government since its formation. The principal if not the only peculiarity of this town in its government, as distinguished from other towns of this State, is that while it is governed by a Town Council as other towns are, yet the south-easterly portion of it, embracing the most thickly settled part, is specially incorporated by the legislature under the name of "the Central Falls Fire District," with power to elect a Moderator, Clerk, Treasurer, three Assessors and a Collector of Taxes; to elect Firewards and Presidents of Firewards; to order, assess and collect taxes on persons and property within such district for fire extinguishing apparatus and keeping the same in order and using it; to prescribe the duties of firewards and of the citizens of said district in case of conflagration; to provide for suppressing disorders and tumult, for the lighting of streets and maintaining such police force as they may deem necessary. The reason for this is that it was not deemed just for the less thickly settled portions of the town to be taxed for these benefits, that would accrue almost exclusively to this Fire District, and which were not considered necessary or desirable in the other parts of the town, while to this district they were matters of absolute necessity. With this exception, our government is administered by a Town Council, consisting of seven members, who, together with seven Justices of the Peace, and a Town Treasurer, are elected annually by the people, with a Town Clerk, originally elected annually, but in the year 1874 elected for three years, under the changed law of the State. There is also annually chosen, in tax-payers' town meeting, a Moderator to preside at town meetings for the ensuing year.

The Town Council elect all necessary town officers and school committee annually.

The Town Council also acts as the Court of Probate for this town. The President of the Town Council, in addition to his duties as such, having to fulfill those of Chief Justice of the Court of Probate, the other Councilmen fulfilling those of Associate Justices of the same Court.

The first Town Council of Lincoln consisted of Hon. Charles Moies, John A. Adams, Joseph W. Tillinghast, Benjamin Comstock, Stephen Wright, Hazard Sherman and William D. Aldrich, elected the first Tuesday in June, 1871, and all well

known as having the interest of the town deeply at heart, and conspicuous for their honesty, integrity and administrative ability. They chose for the first President of the Town Council the Hon. Charles Moies, (who had been a member of the Town Council of the old town of Smithfield for fifteen years, and been President thereof for ten years of that time). He has been retained in that position ever since, and now holds the same by virtue of the votes of his fellow-citizens and co-councillors, thus showing the large confidence they have in his ability, energy and integrity, and it is no more than his due to say that the continual good order, quiet management, and the general satisfactory manner in which the town government has been carried on is largely due to his continued and continual labor, watchfulness and honest care in its administration.

The first Town Treasurer was Thomas Moies, Esq., in whom the citizens of Lincoln have had that continuous trust and confidence in their financial matters to re-elect him to that important and responsible position each year since, and he at present holds the office and we trust long will.

For the year 1871 the duties of the Town Clerk were performed and the office held by the Hon. Samuel Clark—now General Treasurer of this State—who had for many years performed those duties for the Town of Smithfield.

The Moderator of town meetings for this year was Thomas Moies, Esq.

For the first few months of the new town, Joseph M. Ross, Esq., who had been Trial Justice in the town of Smithfield for some years, held the position of Trial Justice, but in his resignation of the office, on the fourth day of September, 1871, the town early lost a valuable officer. He was succeeded by George F. Crowningshield, Esq., elected on the same day to be his successor, who has since been continually elected and re-elected to the same trust, and which he now holds, to the general satisfaction of our citizens, who all have the greatest confidence in his honor and integrity.

In describing the officers elected by the town I have not deemed it necessary to refer to the seven Justices of the Peace elected each year, as that office seems to be purely an honorary one.

At the first meeting of the Town Council, the Town Ordinances of the old town of Smithfield were passed and established as ordinances of the town of Lincoln; and on June 24th, 1871, Joseph M. Ross, John P. Gregory and Frederick N. Goff were appointed a committee to draw up, codify and report ordinances of the town of Lincoln, which duty they performed in a most satisfactory manner.

As before stated, this town originally had no Town Asylum, or place for the taking care of the unfortunate poor. Recognizing the great Christian duty of charity in the caring for the unfortunate who are unable to care for themselves, and find their lot cast amongst us, the Town Council appointed one of our judicious citizens, Mr. Henry Gooding, as overseer of the poor, and, after arranging with the town of Smithfield for the temporary care of such of the poor as could not be cared for at their own homes, but needed the accommodations of a town asylum, the town officers devoted themselves to securing a proper place for a town asylum.

After much negotiation it was finally decided to purchase the Christopher Kelly place (so called), for $3,000, and also an adjoining lot from the Lonsdale Company for $1,000, for a town asylum, and on the thirty-first day of December, 1871, the deeds of the estates were accepted and money ordered to be paid.

The total amount expended in the care of the poor in the first year of the town, over and above the expense of providing a town asylum, was $2,005.02; and of this was expended in the care of State paupers, or those having no legal settlement in this town, the sum of $1,083.12, leaving the amount necessary for the care of what may be considered as our home poor only $921.90, which, for a population of 7,889, is certainly a favorable showing, and indicates a prosperous state among our people generally at that time.

One of the most important cares and duties of the town government is to provide and watch over and keep in efficient operation a sufficient system of schools for the education of the growing generation, that when the time comes for them to assume the rights and fulfill the duties of citizenship they may be able to do so understandingly. Fully appreciating the

importance and necessity of this duty, one of the first acts of the Town Council was to appoint an able and efficient School Committee, consisting of Messrs. George A. Kent, Lysander Flagg and Henry H. Jenckes. They organized by the appointment of George A. Kent (who had been for six years previous a member of the school committee of the old town of Smithfield) as chairman, and so efficiently and satisfactorily did he perform his manifold and ardnous duties that he has been a member of the School Committee ever since, and been appointed each year to the position of chairman. Lysander Flagg was chosen Superintendent of Schools, and Henry H. Jenckes Clerk of the Committee.

In the year 1872 the members of the General Assembly chosen from this town were—Senator, Joseph Wood; Representatives, John A. Adams and William H. Davis.

The town officers elected in June, 1872, consisted of—Councillors, Charles Moies, Hazard Sherman, Stephen Wright, William D. Aldrich, Edward A. Brown, Albert P. Carpenter and Jonathan Chace; Town Treasurer, Thomas Moies; Town Clerk, Benjamin A. Reynolds; Moderator of Town Meetings, Thomas Moies; Trial Justice elected by Town Council, George F. Crowningshield.

Mr. Samuel Clark, formerly Town Clerk, had been chosen as General Treasurer of this State, and consequently desired to relinquish the position of Town Clerk, and Mr. Reynolds had been chosen as his successor, but had never qualified himself for the office, and consequently Mr. Clark was obliged to continue to hold over and perform the duties thereof through this year, which, though it was a serious tax on both his time and energy, he did with his accustomed cheerfulness and ability.

The School Committee for this year consisted of George A. Kent, chairman, Lysander Flagg, Superintendent, Henry H. Jenckes, Clerk.

At the first meeting of the Town Council of this year, they voted not to grant licenses to sell liquor within its limits, and it will be a satisfaction to many to be reminded of the fact that the Council of this town has always set its face resolutely against the liquor traffic; always, when it had the power, refusing to grant licenses for the same; always maintaining offi-

eers for the suppression thereof, and doing everything in its power to suppress the hydra-headed monster of intemperance.

Up to 1872 the town had been without any Town House or hall, or even office of its own; the Town Clerk's office having been in a building on the premises of and belonging to the Town Clerk, Mr. Clark, and the Council meetings and Justice Courts having been held in various halls in Central Falls. But in this year a committee, consisting of Charles Moies, Albert P. Carpenter, Jonathan Chace and Henry S. Fairbanks, having the matter in charge, decided upon the present location of the Town House, on Summit, near Broad Street, Central Falls, and the land was purchased from Andrew Jenks, for $1,812, in September, 1872. The erection of a Town House was immediately commenced, and the same was finished and ready for occupancy in the month of October, 1873, having cost, together with the land, furniture, &c., $13,485.98.

On October 25th, 1873, it was voted that the Trial Justice Courts be held thereafter in the hall of that building, where they have been held ever since.

In April, 1873, the members of the General Assembly elected from this town consisted of, Senator, Stephen A. Jenks; Representatives, John A. Adams, William H. Davis and Henry S. Fairbanks.

There had been a new State apportionment of representation within the year past, and owing to its advance in population Lincoln was now entitled to three Representatives, instead of two as before.

The town officers elected in June, 1873, consisted of Councillors Charles Moies, John A. Adams, Alfred H. Littlefield, Jonathan Chace, Samuel D. Learned, William H. Aldrich and William B. Monroe; Town Treasurer, Thomas Moies; Town Clerk, William H. Gooding; Moderator of Town Meetings, Thomas Moies. These officers were all duly qualified, and, upon the accession of the new Town Clerk, the town was enabled to dispense with the services of Mr. Samuel Clark, who had been a true and faithful servant both of the old town of Smithfield and the town of Lincoln for many years, until he had been invited by the freemen of Rhode Island to go "up higher," to the position of General Treasurer, and who con-

tinued then, urged on only by a feeling of patriotism, though the duties must have been very irksome and vexatious to him to perform the labors of Town Clerk till one was chosen and duly qualified, a space of over one year.

In June of this year Mr. George F. Crowningshield was elected Trial Justice of the town, which office he would hold, by virtue of the new law of the State, for three years.

The School Committee elected by the Council this June consisted of George A. Kent, chosen chairman, Lysander Flagg, chosen superintendent, and Rev. Clement J. Whipple, chosen clerk. In this year it became necessary, under the changed law of the State, for the School Committee to decide by lot which should hold for one, two or three years, and each incumbent, as his term expired, to be replaced by one holding three years from that date. Lots were drawn, and Rev. Clement J. Whipple was lotted for three years, Lysander Flagg for two years, and George A. Kent for one year.

In the year 1873 there were more internal improvements in the town than any other. The Town House was built; a new iron bridge was built at Valley Falls, and a substantial bridge was built, under the superintendence of George Kilburn, Esq., at Berkeley, to take the place of the tumble-down structure that had been there for years, and a large sum was expended for repairs on the bridge at Ashton. The total amount expended for our share of these two new bridges (one half the expense being borne by the town of Cumberland), was $10,500.

In addition to the above improvements, and the usual opening and fixing of new streets always going on in a town that is rapidly increasing in population, it became necessary this year to go to large expense in grading and draining Washington street. A committee, consisting of John A. Adams and Alfred H. Littlefield, was appointed to attend to the same. It became obvious to this committee that the only expedient method of providing for the drainage of Washington street was to purchase the land of Edward Dwyer and turn the drainage of a large portion of the street into it, and this was finally done.

These improvements, together with the opening of the new streets necessitated by the growing and spreading of the manufacturing part of the town, were absolutely necessary; and yet

their immediate beneficial influence was confined in great part to the south-easterly and easterly parts of the town.

The increased taxation necessary to pay for such expenses, together with the knowledge of the fact that the town owed heavily in its share of the debt of the mother town of Smithfield, caused a strong feeling to spring up in the more rural part of the town to the effect that they were being dragged into a vortex of debt by the pushing, enterprising, but (they deemed) ill regulated spirit of the manufacturing population of the Central Falls Fire District. The inhabitants of the latter, at the same time, had, many of them, the feeling that they could not get their needed improvements authorized and performed by the Council so fast as their best interests required, and that they never should be able to do so as long as they were tied to the excessively conservative spirit of their rural co-citizens.

The result of these feelings was that petitions were drawn up in various parts of the town, petitioning the legislature to set off portions of the town of Lincoln to adjacent towns,—principally to set off the village of Central Falls to the town of Pawtucket.

Party spirit ran high upon this subject, but the advocates of the different plans did not succeed in infecting the legislature with their views, where a more conservative spirit prevailed, and the different projects for a division of the town died an easy death in the legislative portfolios.

In the year 1874, it was finally ascertained what our proportion of the town debt of Smithfield would be, and the Town Treasurer was, on the thirty-first day of January, 1874, authorized to hire $25,000, under the direction and approval of Charles Moies and John A. Adams, for the purpose of liquidating the debt. The debt to be paid was $26,000. The committee and Treasurer proceeded to hire what money was needed and with it pay the debt.

The members of the General Assembly chosen in the month of April, 1874, for the ensuing year, were—Senator, John A. Adams; Representatives, Henry S. Fairbanks, Edward L. Freeman and William H. Davis.

The town officers elected in June, 1874, were—Councillors,

Charles Moies, John A. Adams, Alfred H. Littlefield, William J. Hood, Samuel D. Learned, William H. Aldrich and William B. Monroe; Town Treasurer, Thomas Moies; Town Clerk, William H. Gooding, elected for three years under the new law; Moderator of Town Meetings, George A. Kent.

On June 15th, Mr. Frederick N. Goff was authorized to serve as Trial Justice in the absence or inability of George F. Crowningshield.

Mr. George A. Kent, whose term of service in the School Committee expired in June of this year, was re-elected for the term of three years.

Mr. Lysander Flagg, who had served with great ability on the School Committee since the incorporation of the town, retired from that board this year, and his place was filled by the Rev. James H. Lyon, who, on the first meeting of the committee for organization, was elected Superintendent. The board was otherwise organized as the year before.

In the autumn of this year the question of dividing the town was resurrected again in a new shape, and appeared in the form of petitions to set off a portion of the villages of Valley Falls, Lonsdale, Ashton and Albion to the town of Cumberland, of which notice was given to the Town Council on October 31st, 1874, that it would be presented at the ensuing January session of the Legislature; and also two petitions to set off a portion of the town of Lincoln to the town of North Providence, of which the Town Council was notified on November 28th, that they would be presented at the ensuing January session of the Legislature.

There did not seem to be so much enthusiasm on the matter of division this year as in the year before. This was probably on account of the feeling among the people, who had suffered uneasiness at the rapid increase of the debt, that they had succeeded in passing a vote at the last town meeting (June, 1874,) that no moneys should be expended, in any department of appropriation, beyond the amounts specifically appropriated, and that they had just taxed themselves very heavily to be able to pay up the debt. So a general feeling had spread abroad that a conservative policy was the best, and there was no feeling of indignation in the town generally when these projects were suf-

fered to die in the Legislature in the same manner as those of the year before.

There have since been no attempts made to carry out this further division of the town, and we hope that the statements hereinafter contained, showing the rapid increase in wealth, population, highway and other facilities of the people, will satisfy all our townsmen that we had better be slow to change our position in the State. A proper blending of the conservative with the most enterprising classes is more conducive to the general welfare of the town than to have our population made up too exclusively of either class.

In the year 1873 we had been troubled to an unusual extent, chiefly among the operative class living in the villages on the Blackstone river, by the prevalence of small-pox: In the winter of 1873–4 it grew to be a very serious scourge, but it was not till the winter of 1874–5 that it reached its height. At that time it attained to such a degree of prevalence as, in the neighborhood of Manville, to cause what might almost be called a small-pox panic, and it became necessary to stop the public schools in that district on account of its rapid spread. The town officers had done everything that lay in their power to fight the dread disease with all the appliances of modern medicinal skill, but were much impeded in their good endeavors by the willfulness and ignorance of a small class of the population—mostly French Canadian factory operatives—to which class the cases were almost exclusively confined, and who caused much trouble by concealing the fact of the disease in their families and refusing to be vaccinated.

Finally, when it became absolutely necessary, a rigid system of examination and compulsory vaccination was adopted and insisted on, without exceptions, and by its aid the prevalence of the disease was overcome, but not till it had cost the town the sum of $6131.59 in money, the loss of many lives and much mental and bodily suffering in the community. The disease has not been prevalent in this town since.

It had long been felt that the Town Council had not, under the law, sufficient power in the matter of laying out streets. A law had been made giving to the Town Councils of North Providence, Cranston, Woonsocket and Pawtucket the powers

in those respective towns that were felt to be needed by the Town Council in this, and in December, 1874, the Town Council stated the necessity of the amendment of the law so as to give the same powers to the Council in Lincoln as in these other towns, and requested that a petition to the Legislature be drawn to so amend the law. The law was so amended, June 10th, 1875.

The members of the General Assembly elected in April, 1875, for the ensuing year from the town were—Senator, John A. Adams; Representatives, Henry S. Fairbanks, Edward L. Freeman and Elisha S. Aldrich.

The town officers elected in June, 1875, were—Councillors, Charles Moies, John A. Adams, Alfred H. Littlefield, William J. Hood, Samuel D. Learned, William H. Aldrich and William B. Monroe; Town Treasurer, Thomas Moies; Moderator of Town Meetings, Thomas Moies.

Daniel Pearce, Esq., was elected by the Council to perform the duties of Trial Justice, in the absence or inability of George F. Crowningshield, during the ensuing year.

The Rev. James H. Lyon's term as member of the School Committee having expired, he was re-elected for three years.

The School Committee organized by choosing the same officers as in the year previous.

On the 31st of July, 1875, the Town Council again declared the sentiments of the town's people generally in voting that no licenses be granted to sell intoxicating liquors in this town for the year ensuing.

During the January session of the Legislature, 1876, there was a new apportionment by the State of the Representative delegations of the towns in the General Assembly, and owing to our increased population our delegation was increased in number from three to four, to date from the next election.

The members of the General Assembly elected in April, 1876, for the ensuing year from Lincoln were—Senator, Hon. Jonathan Chace; Representatives, Thomas Moies, Alfred H. Littlefield, Elisha S. Aldrich and Edward L. Freeman.

It will be noticed that the Hon. Edward L. Freeman, besides being Senator for the first year of the town, has been elected to the position of Representative for three consecutive years.

This honorable record is of itself a valuable guarantee of his abilities and the trust reposed in him by his fellow-citizens, but when we add to that the facts that he had for three years represented the old town of Smithfield in the General Assembly, and that for two years of the time for which he has represented Lincoln he has performed the onerous duties of Speaker of the House of Representatives in such an able and impartial manner as to call forth the plaudits and commendations of all parties, both his political friends and foes, and a re-nomination for the office for a third year (which he declined to accept), and take into consideration the general high standing which the delegation from Lincoln has always held in the Legislature, we find ample reason for stating that our delegations to the Legislature have been made up of men whom the people ought to delight to honor and who are an honor to their town.

The town officers elected in June, 1876, were—Councillors, Charles Moies, John A. Adams, Alfred H. Littlefield, Samuel D. Learned, William H. Aldrich, William B. Monroe and Benjamin Comstock; Town Treasurer, Thomas Moies; Moderator of Town Meetings, Samuel Clark.

The term of office of George F. Crowningshield, as Trial Justice, having expired, he was re-elected for three years by the Town Council, and Josephus R. Merriam was appointed for the ensuing year to serve and perform the duties of Trial Justice in his absence or inability to serve.

The term of office of Rev. C. J. Whipple, as a member of the School Committee, having expired, he was re-elected for the term of three years by the Town Council.

Under the vigilant care and guardianship of these, our town rulers, our municipal affairs are conducted, as they always have been, with rigid scrutiny, honest attention, and what is the crucial test of their ability, success.

There are certain departments of our town organizations and interests of our citizens, an account of which cannot well be woven into the sketch of the general history of the town, and it will be given here, as an account of them is needed to show conclusively whether our short lived town is a success or a mistake.

HIGHWAY DEPARTMENT.

In the year 1871, there were, by estimation, about fifty miles of roads in this town. Now there are over fifty-four and a half miles, besides a large number of streets laid out and travelled on but not yet accepted by the town.

In the course of five years the sum of $73,519.80 has been spent on the opening and keeping in repair of the highways and bridges of the town, and their condition generally is good, better than before the old town of Smithfield was divided.

POOR DEPARTMENT.

In addition to what has already been said it only remains to say that in the course of five years, three of them years of unusual hardship and suffering to the poorer classes, it has only been necessary to expend $15,239.16 in the care of the poor in our town, and $5,359.35, or thirty-five per cent., of that has been for the care of State paupers.

The money has mostly been spent under the efficient eye and care of Mr. Henry Gooding, and the system has been to give, so far as possible, temporary aid at their homes to those needing it, thereby saving them from the fancied degradation of being sent to the poor house, and fostering and sustaining, so far as possible, in the unfortunate poor a spirit of independence.

SCHOOL DEPARTMENT.

As before stated, one of the first acts of the first Town Council of Lincoln was to appoint a School Committee. Fortunately we had a good system of schools, organized under the old town of Smithfield, and they have been kept up and their standard generally and gradually raised in the last five years.

From June 1st, 1871, to April 30th, 1876, we have expended (besides the sums that may have been raised in the districts by district taxes) the sum of $74,157.43, paid out by the Town Treasurer on account of schools.

We have 39 Teachers, 12 School Districts and 11 School houses. Our schools stand high. The committee in their annual reports have nothing to say but in commendation of the *schools*, (that is of the teachers and scholars attending), but it

would seem that we suffer from a cause almost inseparable from a large manufacturing population, namely, that the poorer operatives cannot be made to understand that their children's education is of more importance than what little wages they are able to earn; so that too many children of school age go to the factory and too few go to school. But our efficient School Committee are alive to the exigencies of the occasion, and in words of lively eloquence are calling (in their annual reports) on our people to awake from this neglect of the rising generation, and we confidently believe that this spot on the fair fame of our town will ere long be wiped away.

TOWN DEBT.

Owing to the necessities for the expenditure of money heretofore referred to, the town found itself, in 1873, in debt, owing a Lincoln town debt of about $12,000, and on account of the old town of Smithfield debt, a then unknown amount.

It was considered that enough money would be raised by the tax of $1.20 per $100 in that year to pay off the Lincoln town debt, but, owing to the large number of outstanding claims against the town that had not then been presented, on the 30th of April, 1874, the town still found itself with a Lincoln town debt of about $5,300, and its portion of the old Smithfield town debt, ascertained to be $26,000, to be paid.

Resolutely putting their shoulders to the wheel, our citizens pressed onwards through the heavy track of debt, paving their way out by heavy taxation, assessing this year a tax of $1.00 per $100, and by April 30th, 1875, had paid up the Lincoln town debt, all but $15,000 of the old Smithfield debt, had paid an unexpected call for $3,600 on account of small-pox cases, and had $7,614.73 cash on hand, with orders outstanding for about $2,000.

A tax of eighty cents on every $100 was ordered in June, 1875, and on the 30th of April, 1876, the town had paid, in addition to its ordinary expense, an extraordinary one of $4,114.13, (a judgment for land damage, in opening a street, against the town), paid $10,000 of the old Smithfield debt, owed in all kinds of demands (including balance of old Smithfield debt) not to exceed $5,800, and had a cash balance on

hand of $4,363.72, leaving the actual net debt less than $1,500. Therefore we may say that we are practically out of debt—that that heavy burden has been cast off, and if our town continues to be as well and economically ruled in the future as it has been in the past, we may look forward to a long era of light taxation.

VITAL STATISTICS.

The number of births in Lincoln in the five years since its incorporation have been 1,512; average per annum, 302. Number of deaths in same time, 826; average per annum, 165. Number of marriages in same time, 298; average per annum, 59 2-5.

GENERAL STATISTICS.

But the question will be asked with interest, has the town advanced or retrograded in wealth and population during these five years?

I have gathered a few statistics which will show better than general words the extent of our changes from the position we stood in in 1871 and where we stand now.

In should be remembered when considering the following statistics, that the last three years of the five covered by them have constituted a period unexampled in the history of this century as one of business depression and loss; that failure after failure of business concerns—many of them heretofore considered as among the most solidly reliable of their kind in the country—has been the order of the daily affairs of our land, and if a community did not go backward instead of rapidly, or even at all, increase in wealth and population, it would be a matter of congratulation.

In view of these facts, the steady increase of wealth and population of our town seem much more than the same advance would be in ordinary times a matter of felicitation and an evidence that the business interests of the town are founded upon a rock so firmly that no ordinary business storms—none of any kind that we shall probably see in our day—are likely to shake them down and spread disaster and ruin among our citizens.

We have seen that in March, 1871, we had a population of

7,889, with a valuation for State tax of $4,406,107. In September, 1871, the Town Assessors' valuation was,

Real Estate,	$3,811,000	
Personal Estate,	1,425,000	
		$5,236,100

IN SEPTEMBER, 1872.

Real Estate,	$4,407,500	
Personal Estate,	1,505,700	
		$5,913,200

IN SEPTEMBER, 1873.

Real Estate,	$4,782,100	
Personal Estate,	1,681,900	
		$6,464,000

IN SEPTEMBER, 1874.

Real Estate,	$5,143,800	
Personal Estate,	1,740,400	
		$6,884,200

IN SEPTEMBER, 1875.

Real Estate,	$5,471,450	
Personal Estate,	1,743,600	
		$7,215,050

These are official figures, but there has been a large increase since the last valuation, and a low estimate for the present time (July 4th, 1876,) would be,

Real Estate,	$6,050,000	
Personal Estate,	1,743,600	
		$7,793,600

Showing an increase in a little over five years of 76.88 per cent.

In order to show that this estimate for the present value is within the bounds of reason, I will state that our present valuation for State tax is,

Real Estate,	$6,488,395	
Personal Estate,	2,097,628	
		$8,586,023

an increase of 94.86 per cent. over the valuation of 1871.

Our population has increased from 7,889 in 1871, to 11,569 in 1875, and is probably considerably larger to-day.

In 1871 there were in our town 1,015 houses. In 1875 there were 1,487 houses, a very large proportion of which are owned by those who live in them.

The number of families in 1871 was about 1,517. In 1875 there were 2,222 families.

In the various branches of cotton manufacture—our largest manufacturing interest—we had, in 1871, seven establishments, using 1,655 horse power, part steam and part water power; employing 2,333 persons; paying annually, as wages, $713,500; using annually materials amounting in value to $1,309,472, and producing annually goods to the value of $2,610,640.

In 1875 we had six establishments, using 4,847 horse power, part steam and part water power; employing 3,525 persons; running 294,852 spindles—making more spindles than any other town in the State; paying annually, as wages, $1,207,753; using annually materials amounting in value to $1,713,948.80; producing annually 10,922,547 yards of print cloths, 14,867,126 yards of sheetings, shirtings and twilled goods, 700,000 dozen spools of cotton, with a total production in value of $3,285,606.

(The relatively small increase in value of finished goods is owing to the depressed state of the market, manifesting itself in the value of goods.)

Since the above figures (kindly furnished by Dr. Snow from the Rhode Island census of 1875,) were obtained, there have been erected two large mills, one for making cotton cloth and one for cotton thread, employing, in the aggregate, over 700 horse power, within our town limits.

In the Bleaching business we had, in 1871, two establishments, using 470 horse power; employing 295 persons, and bleaching fifty millions yards of cloth annually. Now we have two establishments, employing 500 persons; using 1,500 horse power, and bleaching one hundred and forty-three million yards of goods annually.

In the woolen manufacturing we have one establishment, employing 130 hands, using 110 horse power, using annually 450,000 pounds of wool, and producing annually 350,000 yards of cloth.

The number of Tanneries in 1871 was one, using fifty horse power, employing fifteen men, and making annually $100,000 worth of goods. In 1876 we have two establishments, using 150 horse power, employing 110 men, and making annually $450,000 worth of goods.

Our Gas companies in 1871 numbered two, used ten horse power, employed twenty-two men, and made 18,012,000 cubic feet of gas annually. In 1876 we have two, using thirty-two horse power, employing twenty-nine men, and making 34,308,-000 cubic feet of gas per annum.

Among the industries peculiar to this town we have the Pawtucket Hair Cloth Company, running 450 looms, using 150 horse power, employing 125 hands, paying in wages $51,500 annually, and making 425,000 yards of hair cloth per annum. This is the only establishment in this country making hair cloth by the use of automatic hair weaving looms, and this company own the patents for the only looms of the kind in the world. The only places outside of Lincoln, R. I., where these looms are used are in Pawtucket (where about seventy-five are used in making crinoline and padding goods) and a place in England where about 160 looms are employed in making hair cloth. With these exceptions, all the hair cloth made in the world is woven in hand looms, making a much inferior article at a much greater expense.

We have also a monopoly of the Lime business in this State, having three manufacturers, The Dexter Limerock Company, The Harris Limerock Company, and Stephen Wright, who, together, employ about forty men, run from six to eight kilns, and make from 40,000 to 50,000 casks of Lime per annum.

The Lime manufacturers in this town are not simply the only ones in this State, but the Lime made here is of a superior quality and commands in the market a higher price than any other lime, wherever manufactured.

We have within our town a File manufactory—the American File Company, employing 150 persons and making 1,080,000 files per annum; one Curled Hair Company; one Iron Foundry; one Brass Foundry: two Printing Houses; three Spool manufactories; two large slaughtering establishments, and numerous smaller manufacturing establishments. In fact the great busi-

ness of the town is manufacturing of one kind or another. Of our whole population we had employed in various manufactories, in 1871, 3,479 persons; in 1875, 4,353. In 1871 we used 3,005 horse power; in 1875, 5,604. In 1871 we used materials to the value of $2,350,146; in 1875, $2,894,269. In 1871 we paid in wages $1,134,136; in 1875, $1,593,012. In 1871 we produced finished goods to the value of $4,718,910; in 1875, $5,168,286, (a very much less total value than it would be were the market in the same state as in 1871). And since these statistics were taken we have added a large mill for the production of cotton cloth, employing 150 hands, and a large mill for making thread, using over 600 horse power, to our resources.

And while our main business is manufacturing, our agricultural interests are not by any means contemptible.

We have 139 Farms, of a cash value of $736,500; farm implements to the value of $17,639; 524 acres of ploughed land; 284 horses; 600 milch cows; 77 working oxen; 189 other cattle; 17 sheep and lamps; 271 swine.

The farming people find a ready market for their produce among the manufacturing people.

Besides the branches of business above specially spoken of, we have within our town one ledge, producing an excellent faced stone for building; one hundred and fifty retail places of business; six Physicians; two Law offices and twelve Churches.

The moral record of our people generally stands well. Since the town was organized there has been but one murder committed within its limits, and but very few crimes demanding the attention of a tribunal higher than our Justice Court.

Our people are essentially a peaceable, law-abiding class; taking that which they are able to earn and resting content therewith, and not striving to deprive their neighbor wrongfully of his own.

Thus we find ourselves this fourth day of July, A. D. 1876. Thus we realize, indeed, that "Peace hath her victories as well as war;" that to so guide and govern the administration of the town as to promote its growth, increase its business and the comforts of its inhabitants; to care for the educational interests

of the young, to preserve the physical health of the people, to strive to preserve in them their moral purity, are acts worthy of a higher praise than carrying blood-stained guidons on a field of battle. Yet we would not be understood as casting discredit on the remembrance of those who fought and fell that we might have an opportunity to gather here in this centennial celebration.

Though the life of our town has been so short and peaceful that we could not, if we would, weave a blood-spotted laurel into its civic crown, yet we remember with reverence and love those martyrs of old Smithfield, who were then our co-citizens, whose lives exhaled in the noxious vapors of war that we might enjoy the pure air of peace, and we shall ever look upon with pride, and delight to honor, the many survivors of the stern conflicts of war who, though then citizens of Smithfield, went from our limits, and were our friends and neighbors.

But it is with the earnest wish and prayer for peace in all future time, and that those who, in the future, have the guidance of the destinies of our town, may have wisdom, patriotism and ability to guide them aright through the trials of coming years, and that the next centennial fourth of July will show a record for the town of Lincoln which we now scarcely dare hope for, that we close this brief sketch.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

FORTIFICATION DEFENSES

OF

NARRAGANSET BAY

SINCE THE

FOUNDING, IN 1638,

OF THE

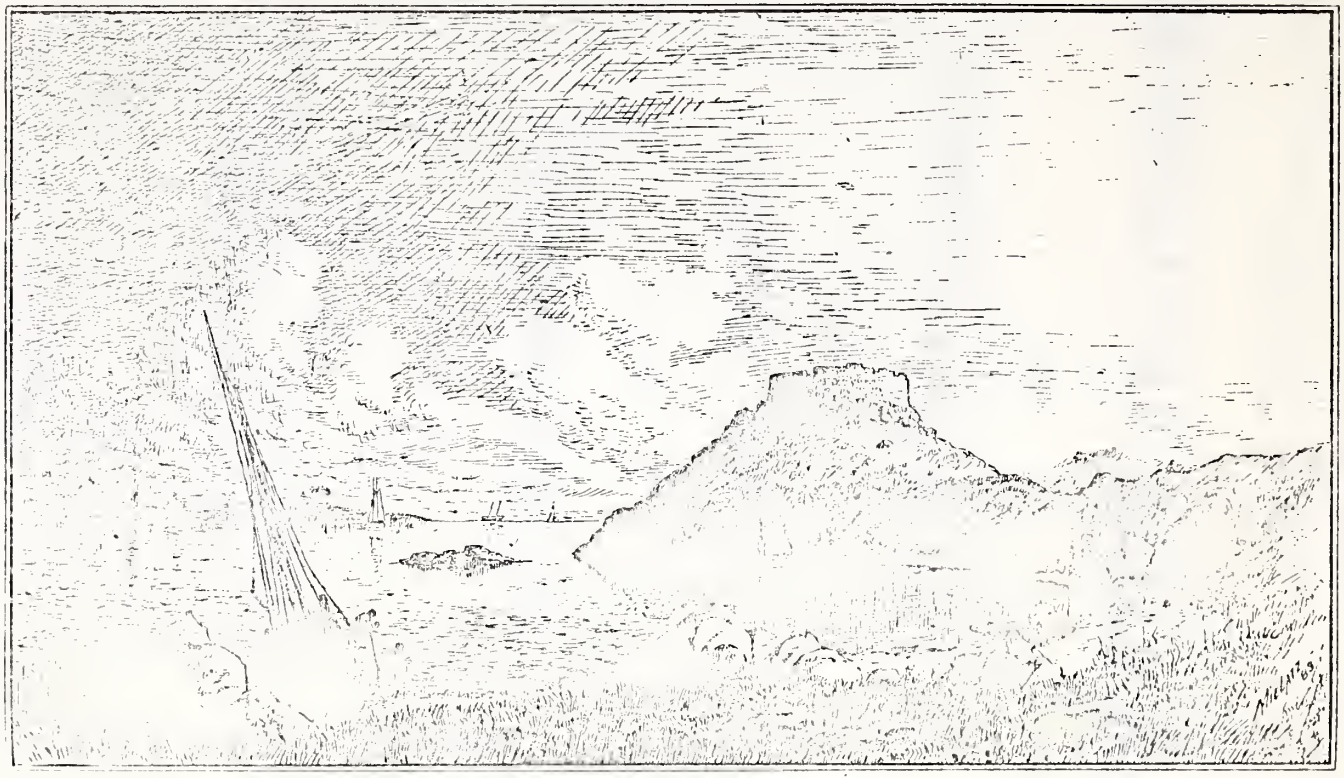
COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND.

BY

BVT. MAJOR-GENERAL GEORGE W. CULLUM,

COLONEL OF ENGINEERS, (RETIRED), U. S. ARMY.

WASHINGTON:
1884.



THE DUMPLINGS TOWER.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

FORTIFICATION DEFENSES

OF

NARRAGANSET BAY

SINCE THE

FOUNDING, IN 1638,

OF THE

COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND.

BY

BVT. MAJOR-GENERAL GEORGE W. CULLUM,
COLONEL OF ENGINEERS, (RETIRED), U. S. ARMY.

WASHINGTON:
1884.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

DEFENSES OF NARRAGANSET BAY, RHODE ISLAND.

Roger Williams, the great and good man who initiated the Christian Colony of Rhode Island in 1636, was so just in all his dealings with the native Indian Tribes, that peace and good will reigned for many years within its borders. But, after the beheading of Charles I., the government of England being in a very unsettled condition and much discord existing among the people of the Colony, it was ordered, in 1650, that all of its arms should be thoroughly repaired and that each town of the Colony should be required to build a magazine.

When a new war broke out between the Narraganset and Long Island Indians, the people of Providence became alarmed by some hostile demonstrations, and, therefore, in 1656 erected a fort on Stamper's Hill. It was so called because that, soon after the settlement of Providence, when a body of Indians approached the town in a threatening manner, the inhabitants, by running and *stamping* on this hill, made the hostiles believe that they were greatly outnumbered. The ruse had its desired effect, the Indians quickly retiring. This fort was probably the first ever erected by the colonists in Rhode Island.

The war of 1664, between England and Holland, during which the Dutch settlements in America were captured by the British aided by the Colonists, showed the necessity of sea-coast protection against armed cruisers; hence, in 1666, Rhode Island petitioned the home government to erect fortifications for the defense of Narraganset Bay. The report that a Dutch fleet was on its way, in 1667, to recover New York, produced great alarm in the Colonies. Hence the General Assembly of Rhode Island took every precautionary measure for defense, and recommended that Newport should mount great guns for its protection; but no permanent fortifications appear to have been then erected.

During King Philip's war of 1675–'76, inland stockades and earthworks were constructed, but no sea-coast fortifications.

In 1690, the year in which James II. was defeated at the battle of the Boyne in Ireland, a French fleet having made its appearance off our coast, some of the seaports were put in a state of defense by temporary batteries. No permanent works, however, could have been erected in Rhode Island, for, in answer to the rebuke of the mother country that the Colony "had not supplied her quota of men and money in aid of the King," the Assembly, in 1696, stated "that the exposed condition of Rhode Island, with forty miles of coast line and three great inlets from the sea *undefended*, had demanded all her strength for self-protection."

The treaty of Ryswick having restored peace to all Europe, October 30, 1697, there seemed to be no pressing necessity for fortifications in Narraganset Bay. This general pacification, however, was of short duration, hence it was deemed prudent to provide for the defense of Newport harbor by erecting an earthwork on Goat Island.*

The Earl of Bellomont, a man of singular ability and strength of character, had been appointed by King William III., March 16, 1697, "to be Governor of the Provinces of New York, Massachusetts Bay, and New Hampshire, and to be Captain-General, during the war, of all of His Majesty's forces, both there and in Connecticut and Rhode Island." The latter Colony he visited in 1699, and January 10, 1700, the Lords of Trade made a report to the King on the Forts in the Plantations, in which they say "Rhode Island being the most important place on the south-west side of Cape Codd, is so situated as to be a very convenient harbour for shipping and security to that part of the

*Cachanaquoat, a Chief Sachem of the Narraganset Indians, sold to Governor Benedict Arnold and James Greene, May 22, 1658, three small islands in the Bay, *Nuntee-Sinunk* alias Goat Island, *Weeksuck-Shasitt* alias Coaster's Harbor Island, and Dyer's Island, for six pounds and ten shillings. Greene, May [illegible] 1672, transferred to Arnold his entire claim to enable the latter "to pass over his right in ye sayd two islands (Goat and Coaster's Harbor) unto ye Town of Newport if they will pay him ten pounds in current pay for the six pounds and ten shillings which he disbursed yeares agone on ye acompt." The Town of Newport, May 1, 1673, made the purchase of these islands from Arnold.

The middle part of Goat Island was reserved for the fortifications, and the two ends, containing about [illegible] acres, were laid out in forty-three building lots. After the Revolution (1794) the State of Rhode Island transferred to the United States the existing fortifications and the land occupied by them; and, April 16, 1799, the Town of Newport sold to the United States, for $1,500, the remainder of the island, no payment, up to that time, having been received from the purchasers of the lots on the two ends.

The Breakwater and Lighthouse Pier, running from the north end of Goat Island, was built by Captain (now General) Cullum, in 1836–'38, and a part of the superstructure and Lighthouse were completed by Lieutenant James L. Mason, of the United States Corps of Engineers. On Henry Jackson's History Map in the Redwood Library, Newport, R. I., it is stated that they were constructed by Alex. M. McGregor, who was only the master mason.

Country in case it were put in a state of defense, which *it has never yet been*, by the mean condition and refractoryness of the inhabitants," and "recommend an appropriation of £150 for fortifications for Rhode Island and Providence Plantations."

Doubtless, in consequence of this report, Colonel William Wolfgang Romar, "His Majesty's Chief Ingineer," was sent to examine Narraganset Bay; for, June 22, 1700, the Earl of Bellomont says to the Lords of Trade: "I send your Lordships Coll. Romar's Memorial (marked H), which I have turned into English, wherein he gives so particular an Account of the principal Rivers, Bays, and places fit to be fortified, that there is little to be said or remarked by me."

The small appropriation of £150 for fortifying Rhode Island waters, probably did not supply more than enough for an earthen battery on Goat Island, Newport harbor, the first notice of which is to be found in a bill, passed May 7, 1701, by the Assembly of Rhode Island, to sustain the governor in enforcing the navigation act, which provided that "the commander of the fort to be appointed by the governor" should have power to bring to any inward bound vessel by the usual mode of firing "a shot afore her foremast," &c. This small earthen battery (probably thrown up in 1700) the first erected on Goat Island, being found inadequate for the defense of the harbor, a new one was ordered to be constructed, May 6, 1702, by the Assembly which enacted: "That for the better defense of his Majesty's interest and good subjects, against the public enemy that shall endeavour to invade or assault his Majesty's subjects in this Collony, there shall be a fortification or battery built at the charge of the Collony, in such convenient place near the harbour of Newport, sufficient to mount twelve pieces of ordnance or cannon." This was a small work, but it must be remembered that the population of the Colony did not then exceed ten thousand.

Though "*his* Majesty," William III., had died, March 8, 1702, over eight weeks before this enactment, the news had not then reached the Colony. As soon, however, as the new work was completed, it took the name of Fort Anne, after the queen of England, who succeeded William III. Subsequently it was much enlarged by appropriations made from time to time by the Assembly. When peace was restored to the world, in 1714, by the Treaty of Utrecht, its garrison was disbanded.

Upon the accession of George II. to the British throne, June 10, 1727, Rhode Island voted an address to His Majesty, in which it is stated that "a regular and beautiful fortification of stone with a battery" had been built at Newport, capacious enough for mounting fifty cannons, which His Majesty was asked to supply.* Not till three years later was its name of Fort Anne, which it had borne through two reigns, changed to Fort George, a designation which it retained till the outbreak of the Revolution, when, and until 1784, it was called Fort Liberty. This work was completed in 1735, though not fully armed, its cost having amounted to £10,000 in the depreciated currency of the Colony.

War having been declared in 1739 between England and Spain, the Assembly of Rhode Island ordered Fort George to be repaired and furnished, without delay, with ammunition and suitable guns; and, in 1740, watch towers were directed to be placed on Point Judith, Castle Hill, Brenton's Point, Sachuest Point, and "on Conanicut Island," to transmit intelligence of every hostile demonstration.

Soon after, January 27, 1741, pending the second war with Spain and in anticipation of hostilities with France, the Assembly of Rhode Island directed the battery at Fort George to be enlarged so as to mount ten or more additional cannon. In 1749, the work was reported to be provided with twenty-five guns in the lower battery and twelve cannon on platforms.

The war of England against Spain and France now extended to both hemispheres, and the colonies were required to do their part on this continent. Rhode Island had her share in the colonial expedition of 1745 against Cape Breton under William Pepperell, afterwards knighted for his brilliant capture of the strong and costly fortress of Louisburg. The year after, Rhode Island was to have taken part in the fourth attempt against Canada; but the public mind was soon to be diverted from schemes of conquest to the more imminent necessity of defense against the great armada with which France threatened to retake Louisburg and conquer New England. The greatest alarm pervaded the colonies, and the Assembly of Rhode Island, convened in extra session,

* Some of these guns were subsequently supplied through the influence of Sir Charles Wager, who was First Lord of the Admiralty in the ministry of Sir Robert Walpole.

ordered that a new battery be added to Fort George, a large garrison be provided, and an ample supply of ammunition be procured for the work.

Upon the news of the armistice between the belligerent powers, which preceded the conclusion of the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748, the garrison of Fort George was disbanded; but a few years later the work had again to be prepared for the renewal of hostilities between England and France on the question of the boundaries of their North American possessions.

The "Old French War" followed, during which Braddock was defeated, Fort William-Henry captured, Abercrombie repulsed at Ticonderoga, Fort Du Quesne taken, and Canada conquered. In this long struggle the Colonies materially aided the mother country, besides providing for the defense of their Lake and Atlantic coasts. No point along the latter was more important than Narraganset Bay. Hence Fort George was fully repaired and almost rebuilt by liberal appropriations made by the Assembly of Rhode Island. In 1761, this work was reported, with "twenty-six mounted guns," to be in excellent fighting order.

The Peace of Paris, in 1763, thanks to the genius of Chatham and the valor of Wolfe, had transferred all of French North America to Great Britain; but this colossal contribution to the power of the latter was attended with consequences which were destined to wrench an empire from exulting Albion. In the nine years' contest, which had just terminated, the Colonies had realized their military prowess, became acquainted with the customs of martial life, were taught to endure the hardships of the camp, had learned the stern lessons of self-sacrifice, became habituated to discipline and to confidence in themselves, and, though sometimes defeated and thrown to the ground, Antæan-like they rose renewed in their strength for new contests.

Only two years had elapsed after the Peace of Paris before ungrateful Britain began that series of oppressions which culminated in American independence. Of that attractive history we must limit ourselves to narrating the heroic part taken by little Rhode Island on the shores of Narraganset Bay. The first act of its open resistance was a mêlée, July 9, 1764, between a boat's crew of the British schooner St. John attempt-

ing to carry off an alleged deserter from Newport, which was forcibly resisted, and led to the seizure by the town's people of Fort George, whose guns were trained upon the Admiral's ship—the Squirrel—against which eight shots were fired. The next year a mob of sailors took possession of and destroyed one of the boats of the English ship of war—Maidstone—engaged in impressing seamen in Newport harbor; then, in 1769, came the scuttling of the British armed sloop—Liberty—and the dragging of her boats in triumph through the streets of Newport; and, three years later, the Gaspée was captured and burned by armed Rhode Islanders in the upper part of Narraganset Bay. All of these daring acts took place long before the battle of Lexington opened, in 1775, the grand drama of the American Revolution.

Forseeing that the die must soon be cast, the Assembly of Rhode Island, December 5, 1774, ordered the dismantling of Fort George to prevent its use by the enemy, and for safety removed to Providence its forty cannon and a large supply of ammunition. Batteries were erected also on Fox, Sassafras, Field, Kettle, and Bullock's Points, to defend Providence river; upon the west side and southern end of Popasquash Neck to guard the passage between it and Prudence Island; and upon the southern extremity of Warwick Neck to command the entrance to Greenwich Bay. In quick succession, other places were so protected as to guard against the aggressions of British ships, whose crews were burning houses and barns, plundering the islands and shores, keeping the watch-worn inhabitants in constant alarm, and even threatening to destroy Newport. Such were these depredations that the Continental Congress was memorialized to protect Rhode Island with its one hundred and thirty miles of coast-line and two navigable rivers exposed to the enemy.

Early in 1776, the Marine Committee of Congress, by active exertions and at great expense, had fitted out a squadron of eight vessels, mounting over one hundred guns, which sailed upon a cruise under Commodore Hopkins of Rhode Island. He had been very successful in making captures; and, being desirous of obtaining a supply of powder, then very scarce, he made a descent upon Nassau, New Providence, the capital of the Bahama Islands, captured its two forts with over an hundred cannon and a large amount of military stores, besides taking

many prisoners of war, including the governor and lieutenant-governor. On his return, he encountered a British frigate of twenty guns, off Block Island, which escaped from him and ran into Newport harbor. This was the signal for the British fleet to go out in pursuit of the audacious Commodore. The night after, April 6, 1776, a slight battery was thrown up on Brenton's Point and armed with several pieces of heavy artillery, which compelled the frigate, Hopkins had encountered, to retreat further up the bay, but the next day she escaped to sea. Shortly after, the Scarborough of twenty, and Cimetar of eighteen guns, with two prizes, anchored in Newport harbor a little to the south of Rose Island. Two row-galleys from Providence recaptured these prizes, and, with the assistance of a battery, thrown up on North Point * (present site of Fort Greene), compelled the enemy's vessels to seek refuge under Conanicut Island. From this position they were driven by a battery erected at the Dumplings, and were obliged to put to sea, April 14, 1776, under a vigorous cannonade from Brenton's Point and Castle Hill, where a small earthwork had been hastily thrown up, the remains of which are still to be seen. Narraganset Bay was now free from all British cruisers, and on *May 4, 1776*, Rhode Island, by a solemn act of the General Assembly, declared her Independence of the mother country, two months preceding that by the Thirteen United Colonies.

Howland and Bristol ferries already had been fortified, and, to prevent further incursions through the main entrance to the Bay, old Fort George, now called Fort Liberty, was immediately reconstructed; a stronger earthwork was erected upon Brenton's Point; and the battery on North Point was enlarged and armed with thirteen of the guns captured at Nassau by Commodore Hopkins (see Plate I, Fig. 1). These defended Newport harbor and the middle entrance to the Bay; but the west passage was without fortifications.

The British Army, March 17, 1776, had been driven by Washington from Boston; or, as the Earl of Suffolk absurdly spoke of this inglorious retreat in the House of Lords: "General Howe thought proper *to shift his position* in order, in the first place *to protect Halifax*, and after that object was secured, *to penetrate by that way into the interior country*."

---

* From this Point a royal salute was fired, March 18, 1766, upon the repeal of the British Stamp Act.

It now became necessary for the fleet of England to possess some more secure and capacious roadstead. No place offered such great advantages as Narraganset Bay, where her ships could ride at anchor within its land-locked waters; and no safer base was to be found for the lodgement of her army than the sea-girt isle of Rhode Island. Once in possession of this natural fortress, Britain, with her army and navy, could menace every Atlantic port, and almost bid defiance to the United Colonies.

Accordingly, December 7, 1776, while Washington was in the Jerseys with most of the American army, Sir Peter Parker, with a British fleet of eleven vessels of war (seven line-of-battle ships and four frigates), convoying seventy transports having on board six thousand troops, passed unobstructed through the west passage into Narraganset Bay and rounded the north end of Conanicut. On the following day the British and Hessian troops, under command of Sir Henry Clinton, disembarked on Rhode Island and marched into Newport. Consternation spread on every side; the islanders fled, with their effects, to the main land; every defensible point on Narraganset Bay was occupied by American troops; and the entire State of Rhode Island became a vast camp confronting the enemy.

Brigadier-General Mulmedy, a French officer, reported at Providence, December 13, 1776, as Chief Engineer and Director of the American Forces, and was vested by the Assembly with plenary powers "to erect such works and at such places as he shall think proper."

According to Blaskowitz's Chart of Narraganset Bay, made in 1777, the following American Forts and Batteries existed, viz.:

	Guns.	Caliber.
Providence Fort	50	18 and 24 p'ds.
Popasquash Battery	6	18 pounders.
Bristol Fort	8	18 pounders.
Batteries at either end of Bristol Ferry	3	18 pounders.
Howland Ferry Defenses	7	18 and 24 p'ds.
Fort Liberty, Goat Island, in Newport Harbor	25	18 and 24 p'ds.
North Point Battery (site of present Fort Greene)	20	18 and 24 p'ds.
Dumplings Rock Battery	8	18 pounders.

The armament of the American Batteries at Fox, Sassafras, Field, Kettle, Bullock and Warwick Points are not included in the above.

Upon the British occupation the works on Conanicut, Goat, and Rhode islands fell into their possession.

At the same time that the Americans were erecting defensive works, the British engineers were not idle. They soon began to throw up redoubts on the east side of Rhode Island near Fogland Ferry; on the left bank of Lawton's Valley; and on Butt's Hill near the north end of the island. In 1777 (see Plate II.), they intrenched Newport with a strong continuous line, which ran northerly along the crest of the height rising above the right bank of the inlet to Easton's Pond, then turned westerly towards Wonumetonomy (corrupted to Tomony) Hill, and continued north of this height to Coddington's Cove. Five advanced works protected the northern branch; some batteries, of later construction covered the western branch; Wonumetonomy Hill was occupied by a strong redoubt; and a heavy battery was erected at Coddington's Cove.* To further strengthen this line, a thick abattis was placed outside of the fortifications, and the inlet to Easton's Pond was deepened by damming it at intervals. At Barker's Hill, near the Sakonnet or Eastern Passage, was a large redoubt, and near it a smaller one to guard the approach to the right of the British intrenchments, while minor earthworks occupied advantageous positions about the lines.

An attack from Tiverton upon the British works, by General Spencer with nine thousand American troops, was projected in October, 1777, but various untoward circumstances prevented its accomplishment.

Important events were transpiring elsewhere at this time. The battle of Germantown had been fought October 4, and on the 17th, Burgoyne's army had surrendered at Saratoga. The spirit shown in the former notwithstanding the loss of Philadelphia, and the success of the latter, convinced the French court that the Americans were strong and in earnest. Hence the Treaty of Alliance, between France and the United States, was signed February 6, 1778; but it was not till July 29, following, that Count d'Estaing, with a fleet of twelve ships of the line

* The ruins of redoubts and batteries are still visible on Bliss' Hill, Van Rennsslaer's Place, Governor Collins' former residence, Bailey's farm, and Coddington's Cove, besides a more advanced work near the three north of Coddington's Cove, which probably was thrown up in 1778.

and four frigates, appeared off Rhode Island and blockaded the entrances to Narraganset Bay. The next morning two of his ships ran up the West Passage under the fire of a British semi-circular battery, near Bonnet Point on the Main (see Plate I., Fig. 4), and a rectangular flanked redoubt on the southern part of Conanicut Island, near Beaver-Head (see Plate I., Fig. 5).* The daring of these French ships, supported by a large fleet in the offing, caused the British to abandon the Bonnet and the batteries on both shores of Conanicut Island; and burn, blow up, or sink the whole of their armed vessels (mounting 212 guns) in Narraganset waters. All was now alarm in the British camp; yet, from some unaccountable delay and want of concert between the French fleet and the American army, ten precious days elapsed without striking an effective blow upon the demoralized enemy.

It was not till August 8 that d'Estaing entered Newport harbor in force, when the British withdrew their outposts from the head of the island and concentrated their entire army within their Newport lines; and, not till the next day, were the four thousand French troops landed on Conanicut, and the advance, by Sullivan with his motley assemblage of ten thousand men, made from Tiverton and Fort Barton (on its heights) to occupy the abandoned British posts. The opportune moment for a telling attack upon the enemy unfortunately had now passed, for Lord Howe, with a British fleet of thirty-six sail, hove in sight, whereupon the French troops re-embarked, and the next morning d'Estaing put to sea to engage the English admiral. As we are not writing the history of the war, we must omit an account of the naval actions which followed; the injury done by the tempest to both fleets; and the causes of d'Estaing's failure to further co-operate with his American ally.

The French fleet sustained considerable damage, in entering and leaving Newport harbor, from the heavy cannonade kept up by the British batteries at and near Castle Hill, on Brenton's Point, Goat Island, and North Point. All of the Conanicut batteries had been abandoned, their guns spiked, and their magazines destroyed, in anticipation of the occupation of that island by the French.

---

* The remains of both the Bonnet and Conanicut batteries are still visible.

The American light troops, August 10, 1778, advanced to within a mile and a half of the British intrenchments; but, in consequence of the great storm, it was not till the 15th that the main body of Sullivan's army pushed forward and encamped within two miles of the enemy's works. That night a battery, for seventeen pieces of heavy artillery, (see Plate II.), was commenced on Honeyman's Hill to support our right flank and to command the British defenses on Bliss' Hill. For five days, from the 16th to the 20th, our siege-works were pushed forward with vigor and extended to the left, where batteries were established to threaten the enemy's right. An incessant cannonade was kept up from four batteries to which, on the 23d, we added a fifth. Such was the effect upon the enemy that the British, on the 19th, began an inner line of intrenchments, on a convex curve extending from a strong redoubt near the northern end of the "Cliffs'" (Fearing's Place)* to the North Battery on the Bay. Besides the two strong works at the extremities of this line, there were three intermediate batteries and two detached redoubts—one within and one without this line—the former to sweep any approach by Easton's Beach and the latter to command the opening between the two lines of intrenchments.

Count d'Estaing returned to Newport on the 20th, which greatly encouraged the besiegers; but, on the next day, he sailed for Boston to repair damages to his fleet.

Apprehending the approach of the British fleet with reinforcements to the garrison of Newport, Sullivan abandoned his design of storming the English intrenchments, though all but one of the enemy's outworks, facing eastward, had been vacated. On the evening of the 28th, Sullivan raised the siege and retreated to Butts' Hill, forming his line of battle, supported by batteries and intrenchments, across the head of the island (see Plate II.). The so-called "Battle of Rhode Island," which took place on the next day, will be passed over, as it forms no part of our sketch, except to say that the works on Butts and Turkey Hills played a conspicuous part in that contest.

During the century which has elapsed since these stirring events, much criticism has been proffered respecting the military operations

*Slight remains of this redoubt are still visible.

of August 28-30, but comparatively little on what transpired earlier in the month.

We have already spoken of the fatal inaction during the ten days after the arrival of the French fleet, which, with the loss of time by the great storm, deferred the initiation of siege operations till the night of the 15th.

As a military engineer, after a very careful examination of the ground occupied by the British intrenchments and the American siege-works, I am constrained to say that Sullivan's points of attack were not well chosen. Between him and the enemy was a deep ravine, at the bottom of which was Easton's Pond and its deepened inlet. Any regular approaches by saps, down the slope of Honeyman's Hill, would have been exposed to a deadly plunging fire from the British out-works and intrenchments; and, had it been possible to reach the bottom of the ravine, there was still a stream or pond to pass and the opposite slope to ascend under a destructive raking fire of infantry and artillery, which would have tried, if not have baffled, the valor of the best disciplined troops. It is true that the American batteries had lessened the enemy's power of destruction, yet there was still a large reserved strength in the British lines sufficient to defeat any attempt to storm them. The accumulation of batteries on the left of our position would indicate that it was designed to turn the right of the British front line by a strong column moving over the narrow pass between Easton's Pond and the sea. This assault probably would have fared no better; and, with such troops as would have constituted the American attacking force, it would have been utterly impracticable after the construction of the second British line; which, besides its own fire, had its inner redoubt to sweep with artillery the narrow defile over which the column must move, and its outer redoubt to command the entire opening between the lines.

Had Sullivan marched down on the west side of the inlet of Easton's Pond, and made his attack from the north, instead of from the east, upon the salient made by the north and west branches of the British outer line, he probably would have been successful. At the north the ground for attack was very favourable, there being little or no ravine. Batteries planted there would have enfiladed the whole northern branch of the British line, and taken partially in reverse all the out-works

along its front. The redoubt on Wonumetonomy Hill might still have held out; but so it would in any attack from the east.*

The British remained undisturbed on Rhode Island till October 11, 1779, when a fleet of fifty-two transports arrived from New York to carry away their troops and military-stores, besides forty-six families of Tories. After destroying the lighthouse at Beaver-Tail and leveling the battery at North Point, the vessels, as fast as they were loaded with stores and ordnance, were moored off Brenton's Point to receive the troops, who burned the barracks they had left. Before sunset of October 25, 1779, Rhode Island was relieved of its detested foe, which had left nothing behind but the utter desolation it had wrought during its occupation of nearly three years. The suffering of the inhabitants was extreme, particularly during the following winter, which was so cold that for six weeks Narraganset Bay was frozen over, and the ice extended seaward to Block Island and as far as the eye could reach.

The next year the murky cloud, which had so long hung over Narraganset Bay, was lifted, and the bright sunlight succeeded on the arrival, July 10, 1780, of Admiral de Ternay, with a fleet of forty-four armed vessels and transports bringing into Newport over five thousand French troops, commanded by Count de Rochambeau. The following day the army landed, and was put in possession of all the defenses of the harbor; and on the succeeding night the city was ablaze with a brilliant illumination in honor of its guests, among whom were some of the most distinguished noblemen of France. Soon British tyranny was forgotten, and "the wounds inflicted by Hessian ruffianism were healed by the balm of French politeness."

Washington, who came to Newport, March 6, 1781, to confer with Rochambeau about an active campaign, had a most notable reception by the citizens of Newport and the officers and troops of the French army. The splendid ball then given, and its gay assemblage of fair women and brave men, was a brilliant episode in the Revolutionary annals of Rhode Island.

---

*After exhausting all sources of information in Rhode Island, I fortunately found, in the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society, a manuscript map of Narraganset Bay, clearly showing the British Lines of Defense covering Newport, and also the works of the American Siege Operations. I deemed it so valuable that I, at once, ordered a copy of it to be made at my own expense; but, subsequently, the Society decided to produce a photographed fac-simile, of which Plate II. embraces all the essential parts relating to the military operations in 1777–'78.

From various memoirs, particularly that of the Count de Deux-Ponts, we learn most of the details of the operations of Rochambeau's army in Rhode Island. Soon after its arrival, the British fleet of twenty ships threatened to force a passage through the main channel into Narraganset Bay. To guard this entrance, Rochambeau threw up batteries, armed with twelve pounders, on Brenton's Point, while the French navy occupied others on Conanicut Island; but these latter were abandoned, July 27, 1780, as they were accessible on all sides to British assaults. When the reports of Sir Henry Clinton's intention to attack the allied forces were confirmed by information received from General Washington, the French commander, with the aid of the Rhode Island militia, repaired and remodeled all the works thrown up by the British when they held Rhode Island; and added others, particularly redoubts on Coaster's Island, and a strong work on Rose Island* armed with forty pieces of heavy artillery. With such a powerful battery to defend the right of the line of seven heavily armed French ships, and the guns and mortars of Brenton's Point to protect its left, the whole presented a formidable array of land artillery and naval broadsides to guard the main entrance to the bay. Till the departure of Rochambeau, June 10, 1781, he, with the assistance of many officers of engineers, continued to strengthen all the batteries, particularly those on Goat Island which had not been destroyed upon the British evacuation. Among the new works thrown up by the French was a battery on Hallidon Hill (see Plate I., Fig. 3) as this height commanded, at short artillery range, all the batteries at Brenton's Point and on Goat Island. It was then called Fort Chastellux, after the Chevalièr de Chastellux, one of Rochambeau's *Mareschaux des Camp.* After the Revolution it was known as Fort Harrison, being on the Harrison farm, and since, it has acquired the name of Fort Denham from some local association. What remains of it is situated in front of the "Thorp" cottage. Other batteries on the southern shore of Rhode Island were built during the Revolution, of which the remains of one are still visible on the "Ocean Drive," near the southwest extremity of the island, at Winans' cottage.

---

*This small island, called Conskuit by the Indians, was purchased, in 1675, by Peleg Sanford from the Sachem Mausup.

Brigadier-General de Choisy, with a small body to garrison the defenses (600 French recruits and 1,000 local militia), was left at Newport when the French army marched from Rhode Island to Yorktown, Va., the field of glory of the allied forces.

The departure soon after, August 25, 1781, of the French fleet with the heavy artillery and remaining troops to the Chesapeake, obliged the Assembly of Rhode Island further to provide for the defense of the state by mounting additional batteries at North and Brenton's Points, and by strengthening those at Pawtuxet, and Field and Kettle Points to guard against any approach by Providence River. These were timely precautions, for Sir Henry Clinton had formed a plan to seize the French stores and magazines at Providence and probably to capture Admiral de Barras fleet at Newport. Fortunately the expedition was accidentally delayed till the 28th, when the bird had flown, much to the chagrin of General Clinton and Admiral Graves, who had anticipated a certain conquest.

The capture at Yorktown, October 19, 1781, of the British army under Cornwallis, virtually terminated the war of the Revolution, and successful negotiations for peace soon followed. Consequently the garrison at Butts' Hill was disbanded in July, 1782.

The war had left the United States with a heavy debt, therefore all expenses were curtailed, particularly those for the military, no longer required. The whole force retained, at the conclusion of peace, amounted to less than seven hundred men, under command of General Knox; and even this miniature army, before the end of the session of Congress, was reduced to twenty-five men to guard the stores at Pittsburg, Pa., and fifty-five for West Point, N. Y., and the other magazines—in all eighty men.

Without garrisons, our military posts went rapidly to decay, including, of course, those at Newport which had been dismantled. However, by the Act of the Assembly of Rhode Island of October 4, 1784, the fort on Goat Island was armed, the barracks repaired, and the work made to assume "some degree of respectability." It had borne the name of various British sovereigns during its colonial existence of three-quarters of a century; of "Liberty," pending the war of Independence; and, now, it was to assume the name of the illustrious Washington.

From this work was probably fired the first salute announcing that Rhode Island, May 29, 1790, had finally joined the Union of the Thirteen United States, by her adoption of the Federal Constitution. Fort Washington,* in 1792, according to the inspection returns, had an armament of three twenty-four, five eighteen, and two six pounders, when the Assembly ordered the "purchase of a reasonable quantity of powder to be made use of at the said fort upon special occasions."

The first European Coalition was made against the French Republic in 1793. Soon, both England and France so grossly violated our neutrality upon the ocean that Congress, in 1794, ordered the building of six frigates; added a corps of artillerists and engineers to our small army; and made appropriations for fortifying our principal ports on the Atlantic coast. The appropriation for Newport harbor was applied to the works on Goat Island (see Plate VI.), Bechat Rochefontaine, March 29, 1794, being appointed temporary engineer. He was soon succeeded by Stephen Rochefontaine, who, February 26, 1795, was made the Commandant of the newly organized corps of artillerists and engineers. The name of the latter, as the constructing engineer of the works on Goat Island, is still to be found, neatly cut, upon a stone (turned upside down) in the foundation of one of the new buildings at the Navy Torpedo Station. It is stated, in a report communicated, January 18, 1796, by the Secretary of War, to the United States Senate, that: "For the defense of Newport harbor there have been erected, on Goat Island, a fort, a citadel and an air-furnace. The excellency and importance of this harbor, in time of war, recommend a further expenditure to render the defense complete. To finish the fort, erect an artillery store, and make a covered-way round it, as in a regular fortification, the expense is estimated at about six thousand dollars. There have also been erected a citadel on Tomony Hill, back of the town of Newport, for the protection of its inhabitants, and a battery and guard-house at Howland's Ferry at the northern end of the island, to keep open a communication with the Main, in case of an invasion. But, to secure effectually this communication, a citadel should be erected on Butts' Hill, that position commanding Howland's Ferry and Bristol Ferry. The cost of it is estimated at 1,800 dollars."

* The name of "Washington" was given, October 4, 1784, by the Act of the Assembly of Rhode Island

France had continued her piratical aggressions upon our commerce, and our minister, sent to Paris, had been treated with contempt and indignity; yet, such was the strength of the Gallican feeling among our people, that, not till 1798, were vigorous measures adopted to protect the nation from further insult. The outrageous conduct of the French Directory towards our government; the efforts of their agents to sow sedition throughout our country; their acts to invigorate opposition to the constituted authorities; their disregard of the law of nations and of solemn treaties; their rebuffs of our repeated efforts to adjust differences; their attempts to bribe our envoys, failing which they were expelled from French soil; and their continued seizure of our merchantmen till our losses amounted to $15,000,000, could not fail to rouse the United States to resistance. Forbearance had reached its utmost limit, and at once preparations were instituted to maintain the dignity and honor of the nation. Important additions were made to our navy, and a separate department for its control created; a marine-corps established; many new regiments of infantry, troops of cavalry, and more artillerists and engineers added to our regular forces; a provisional army, with Washington at its head, authorized; liberal appropriations for fortifications granted; our treaties with France abrogated; our commerce with her suspended; and a quasi war instituted by legalizing the capture of her armed vessels, which resulted in several engagements with her cruisers.

With such a threatening aspect of affairs, and an ample justification for a declaration of war, the construction of the sea-coast fortifications was pressed forward with vigor. The importance of Narraganset Bay demanded that full provision should be made for the defense of its main entrance. Accordingly immediate measures were taken to repair and strengthen some of the old works, to rebuild others, and to add an entirely new one. All were placed under the supervision of Major Louis Tousard, who had succeeded Lieutenant-Colonel Rochefontaine, when the latter, May 7, 1798, was dismissed from service. Tousard was born in France in 1749; lost an arm in the action of Butts' Hill, August 29, 1778, during the war of the Revolution; was commissioned a Major of Artillerists and Engineers, February 26, 1795; and was disbanded, January 1, 1802, upon the organization of the present Corps of

Engineers created by the law of March 16, 1802. He subsequently was a United States revenue officer, and died in New Orleans, La.

The works repaired, enlarged, rebuilt, and constructed in 1798–1800, for the defense of the main entrance to Narraganset Bay and Newport harbor, were:

On Brenton's Point, east side of entrance (see Plate III.), "an enclosed indented work of masonry" for twelve guns, with a brick magazine, and soldiers' barracks and officers' quarters for one company.

On the Dumplings rock, Conanicut Island, west side of entrance (see Plate IV.), an elliptical stone tower to mount eight heavy guns on the sea-side, half in casemates and half in barbette.

On Goat Island, in the centre of Newport harbor (see Plate VI.), a small enclosed irregular work of masonry and earth mounting twelve guns, besides flank batteries mounting eighteen guns, with a brick magazine, and soldiers' barracks and officers' quarters for one company.

On Brenton's Cove, south of Goat Island (see Plate I., Fig. 3), a small battery occupying the site of an old French battery (Fort Chastellux) on Hallidon Hill.

On North Point, an elliptical stone-scarped battery (see Plate I., Fig. 2), for twelve or thirteen guns.

On Rose Island, a regular masonry work (see Plate V.), with four bastions (two circular and two polygonal) designed for sixty guns, with bomb-proof barracks within for three hundred men.

Of these works, the Dumplings Tower and Rose Island Fort were never finished, armed, or garrisoned. The former is sometimes called Fort Louis; but there is no official authority for the name. Possibly Major Tousard may have so called it after his own Christian name, or after Louis XVI., who had been our ally in the Revolution. It has also been called Fort Brown, having taken the designation of the old battery near it, so named after its first commander—"General" Brown—who fired upon the British vessels of war—the Scarborough and Cimetar—April 14, 1776, to drive them from Newport harbor. During this century the Dumplings Tower has been crumbling into a picturesque ruin (see Frontispiece); and some years since served as a target for the sensational Captain John Magruder, when commanding Fort Adams, against which to practice his artillerists in distant firing. The work on

Rose Island was called Fort Hamilton, after the patriot statesman Alexander Hamilton. It has never been used except for a quarantine station for the port of Newport.

The elliptical battery on North Point, when completed, was named Fort Greene, after Rhode Island's most distinguished general in the Revolution; the work on Goat Island, which had borne so many aliases, finally, in 1798, was re-christened Fort Wolcott to commemorate the revolutionary services of Governor Oliver Wolcott, who had just died, December 1, 1797,* its former name of Fort Washington having been appropriately transferred to the work on the Potomac River opposite to Mount Vernon; and the new work on Brenton's Point, when nearly completed in 1799, was named Fort Adams.

An account of the imposing ceremonies of christening this latter fort we will condense from the relation given in the Newport Mercury of July 9, 1799.

The twenty-third anniversary of American Independence (July 4, 1799) was ushered in by a Federal Salute of thirteen guns from Fort Wolcott; and, before noon, the company of Captain John Henry of the Artillerists and Engineers, United States Army, which was to garrison the new work, marched at the head of the column composed of the Major-General of the State of Rhode Island and the Militia Staff, the Newport Ancient Artillery, the Newport Guards, and a large concourse of patriotic citizens.

The gateway leading to the battery not having been finished, Major Tousard had constructed a temporary arch, decked with wreaths of evergreens and flowers, and over its key-stone was a tablet inscribed:

FORT ADAMS.

THE ROCK ON WHICH THE STORM WILL BEAT.

At a quarter before twelve o'clock, Major Tousard addressed the assemblage in the following concise and energetic words:

"Citizens! Happy to improve every occasion to testify my veneration for the highly distinguished Citizen, who presides over the Government of the United States, I have solicited the Secretary of War to

* It was also in compliment to his son, then the able Secretary of the Treasury.

name this Fortress—Fort Adams. He has gratified my desire, and I hope the brave officers and soldiers, who are and shall be honored with its defense, will, by their valor and good conduct, render it worthy of its name, which I hereby proclaim—

FORT ADAMS."

When the address was ended, the American Flag was run up and saluted with thirteen guns from the battery and three hearty cheers from the whole assemblage. The guns from Fort Wolcott returned the salute, as did also the Newport Artillery, the Newport Guards following with the same number of platoon discharges.

After the collation (provided by Major Tousard) had been fully enjoyed, Major Henry's company "paraded in line with the guns of the battery, with the officers in front headed by Majors Tousard and Jackson." The several independent companies, general and staff officers, and citizens passed them in review, the officers and colors saluting. When the column returned under the entrance arch, three guns were fired from the battery, which terminated the memorable ceremony.

Notwithstanding the outrageous treatment of our former embassies to France, much to the surprise of the whole country, President Adams, early in 1799, appointed new envoys to the French Directory; but, before their arrival in Paris, Napoleon was at the head of the new government. With the change of rulers came a change of policy. A qualified treaty was agreed upon, and pending its final ratification, Mr. Jefferson, the head of the Gallican party in the United States, was inaugurated President, March 4, 1801, which terminated our hostilities with France.

The Treaty of Amiens, concluded a year later, gave peace to all Europe; but this hollow truce was of short duration. Again our lucrative commerce became a prey to the mandates of Napoleon's Berlin and Milan decrees and England's orders in council. To the aggressions of Great Britain were added those of searching our ships upon the high seas and the impressment of our seamen. The United States temporized till forbearance ceased to be a virtue. War was inevitable; yet, only two years before the sword was drawn, our Secretary of War said to Congress that: "No further appropriation on account of fortifica-

tions was proposed in the estimate for the year. But, in case of war, additional works will be required. Their situation, nature, and extent, depending upon the emergencies which may require them, cannot be ascertained." The Secretary—William Eustis—being a New England man, deigned to add: "The island of Rhode Island, from the peculiarity of its local situation, bordering on the ocean, accessible at all seasons of the year, affording a safe and commodious harbor, fertile in itself, commanding other islands, well stocked with provisions, and a central station from which to harass the trade of the continent, offers to an enemy advantages not combined in any port, and requires additional means of defense." Whereupon this great and liberal statesman recommended: "To meet the expenditures required *at this and other places*," that "*one hundred and fifty thousand dollars be appropriated on account of fortifications.*"

What a magnificent provision to prevent British fleets from seizing this "*central station*," *and all of our other Atlantic ports!*

According to the report of this Secretary of War, made to Congress December 11, 1811, only six months before war was declared against Great Britain, there were but *seventeen* guns in Fort Adams, and *thirty-eight* in Fort Wolcott, in all *fifty-five* pieces of ordnance, large and small, to defend Narraganset Bay against the most powerful fleets of the world! Doctor Eustis probably proposed to defend our harbors on the Jeffersonian plan, by gunboats ready to be launched upon the appearance of the enemy, or by heavy cannon on traveling-carriages fired by the local militia from the shores of the ports assailed.

President Madison, June 1, 1812, sent a confidential message to Congress, in which he recapitulated all the causes of our complaint against Great Britain; her impressment of our seamen; her infringement upon our maritime jurisdiction, and disturbance of the peace of our coasts; her paper blockades, unsupported by any adequate force; her violation of our neutral rights by her orders in council, and her inflexible determination to maintain these orders against all appeals to her justice; her suspected instigation of Indian hostilities against our people; and her conduct, which, taken altogether, amounted to actual war against the United States, while we remained at peace with her.

War was declared against Great Britain June 18, 1812; but, *not till a*

month after, was there appropriated by Congress half a million of dollars for coast defense. In consequence of thus rushing headlong and wholly unprepared into a war with the most powerful nation on earth, our seaboard was kept in a continuous state of alarm; our coast trade was almost annihilated; destructive incursions were made into our bays and inlets, even to our capital; and large bodies of militia were constantly being called out, at vast expense and inconvenience, to protect our inadequately fortified harbors. Though no hostile fleets entered Narraganset Bay during the war, the feeble garrisons of the works defending the main channel were kept in constant apprehension; several times the state forces were summoned to resist attack; and many vessels were chased or captured by the British squadron within sight of Rhode Island. Most of these troubles would have been spared to the State by a few strong forts and batteries, the total cost of which would have been far less than the actual expenses incurred in trying to meet them. Congress, in 1816, had to appropriate nearly fourteen millions of dollars to pay the militia required in the latter months of the war.

This war, of 1812–'15, had so clearly demonstrated the almost defenseless condition of our sea-coast, that, the year after its termination, liberal appropriations were made for fortifications; and a Board of Engineers was organized to study the whole problem of national defense, and to devise the necessary fortifications to protect the entire coasts of the Atlantic and Gulf of Mexico. This Board was composed of General Joseph G. Swift, the Chief Engineer of the Army; General Simon Bernard, a distinguished French engineer who had done good service under Napoleon; and Lieutenant-Colonels William McRee and Joseph G. Totten, of the Corps of Engineers.

President Monroe, taught by "the faithful admonitions of experience," in his first inaugural message, March 4, 1817, took occasion to call attention to the absolute necessity of fortifying our coasts and frontiers, even though it might be at a very heavy expense, as the only certain security against the cost, anxiety, distress, and destruction of property which a superior naval force, with a few thousand troops on board, might at any time impose upon us. He urged, also, the formation of an army competent not only to garrison and preserve these fortifications, but to meet the first invasion of a foreign foe.

The Board of Engineers, April 7, 1820, submitted its project for the defense of Narraganset Bay, to which there are three entrances. The Eastern, or Sakonnet Passage, was already closed by the Stone Bridge, opposite Tiverton; the Western Passage was to be shoaled with a sunken dyke, below Dutch Island, in such manner as to allow coasters freely to pass over it, but to exclude all vessels of war; and the Middle, or Main Passage, was to be barred, effectually, by permanent fortifications on Brenton's Point, the Dumplings Rock, and Rose Island, while Forts Greene and Wolcott were to defend the inner waters about Newport.

From the report of this Board we learn the condition and value, in 1820, of the then existing fortifications, which had been built in 1795-1800, to be as follows:

Fort Adams (see Plate III.), which crosses its fire with Fort Wolcott, and defends on that point the entry to Newport harbor, gives also some fire on the Middle Passage into Narraganset Bay. The tracé of this fort is so irregular, and its angles are so multiplied for no purpose of defense or convenience, that it seems rather the result of chance and caprice than even of the infancy of the engineering art. It consists of two parts, one appearing to have been added to the other at a later period. The southern part has a development of about seven hundred and fifty feet, measured on its interior crest, and a command of fifteen feet over the country, and forty-five over low water. Its parapet is from twelve to fifteen feet thick, its rampart from twenty-three to twenty-five wide, and its scarp wall less than ten feet high. This part contains a bomb-proof barrack. The northern part has a development, measured in the same way, of about four hundred feet, and has a command of forty-two feet over low water. Its parapet is from twelve to eighteen feet thick, the terre-plein of its rampart is on a level with the parade, on which is a wooden store-house and a hot-shot furnace; has no masonry scarp, and is covered with an earthwork six feet high. From these two parts, constituting Fort Adams, about twenty guns could be directed upon the entrance of the bay and as many more upon Newport harbor. The Board of Engineers considered it useless, as it "could neither resist four days against an attack by land, nor contain the formidable armament" demanded by the position.

Dumplings Tower (see Plate IV.), on Conanicut Island, is an elliptical stone structure, its transverse axis being one hundred and eight feet long, and its conjugate axis eighty-one feet to the exterior of the scarp-wall, which varies in height from twelve to twenty-six feet, owing to the inequalities of the site. Under the terre-plein of the front of the Tower are four casemates, fifteen to eighteen feet long, fifteen feet wide, and seven to eight feet high to the crown of the arch; and above were emplacements for four heavy barbette guns behind a stone parapet of five feet in thickness. Its command, when finished, would be fifty-four feet above low water. "When," says the Board of Engineers, "we take into consideration that Dumplings Point is an essential position for defending the central pass into Narraganset Bay, and that the channel is one mile broad at this place, we must perceive that the effect of this Tower is almost null for that purpose, and that its co-operation with Fort Adams, to accomplish so important an object, has never been calculated and is totally inefficient."

Fort Hamilton (see Plate V.). This unfinished work, on Rose Island, is of a rectangular form, six hundred by five hundred and twenty feet, with flanking towers, fifty feet in diameter, on the northwest and southwest angles, and regular bastions at the two other angles. The south front, which sees vessels coming up the channel after passing Brenton's Point and the Dumplings, the east front (except its curtain), and the northwest flanking tower are nearly finished; the remainder of the work being merely sketched. The scarp-walls are low, the parapets where finished about sixteen feet thick, and the rampart twenty-five feet wide. The command of the fort is but eight feet above the ground, and seventeen above low water. Its location, on the site of the old French battery of 1780, is good, as it crosses its fires with those of all the other works. "It is to be regretted," says the Board of Engineers, "that the sketch of this fort offers none of the requisites for occupying this position in a manner suitable to the principal object which it should have in view. The towers are of no use, and seem only placed there to spoil the general tracé and disposition of the works." The bomb-proof barracks at this work are now untenable.

Fort Greene (see Plate I., Fig. 2), is an elliptical barbette battery for twelve or thirteen guns, with a palisaded gorge. The work has a de-

velopment, measured upon its interior crest, of two hundred and forty feet; its parapet is twenty-one feet thick; its rampart twenty-six feet broad; its scarp-wall twenty feet high; has a command of twenty-nine feet above low water; and within the work is a brick barrack and guard-house, a bomb-proof magazine, and a hot-shot furnace. The Board of Engineers say, "this battery is sufficient for its purpose."

Fort Wolcott (see Plate VI.), is a large but low battery, having an enclosed redoubt in the middle whose head flanks the front of the battery. The development of the redoubt, measured upon its interior crest, is seven hundred and forty feet, of which three hundred and twelve look towards the sea; its parapet on the gorge is twelve feet thick, and in other parts eighteen; its rampart is twenty-one feet wide; and its command is thirteen feet above the ground and thirty-six above low water. The two wings of the battery measure eight hundred and forty feet of interior crest development, of which three hundred and twenty-five feet are on the right and five hundred and sixteen to the left of the redoubt; their parapets are twenty-five feet thick; and their command is twenty-seven feet above low water. Within the redoubt is a powder magazine; behind the left wing is a brick barrack; and within either wing are hot-shot furnaces. The whole work could mount fifty guns; and its fires, which cross those of Fort Adams and Fort Hamilton, would suffice to cover the harbor of Newport.

From the foregoing description of the works existing in 1820, it will be seen that the Board of Engineers considered those at Brenton's Point, the Dumplings, and on Rose Island as almost worthless; while those at North Point, and on Goat Island, would suffice for interior defense when covered by new channel fortifications.

For the Dumplings, where the United States owns nearly seven acres of land, the Board of Engineers submitted a project, designed by General Bernard, for a very large and costly work. Across the Point, extending from shore to shore, was to be a strong line of three bastioned fronts, with two advanced redoubts occupying higher elevations; and within this enclosing line were to be ten heavy batteries, along the rocky shore, to fire seaward upon ships endeavoring to force a passage through the channel. The entire armament of the work was to be three hundred and eighty-six pieces of artillery of all calibers. This work,

never commenced, would be entirely unsuited to the present requirements of this excellent position, where eventually a strong fortification must be built.

For Rose Island, where the government owns twenty-three acres of land, the Board of Engineers proposed a small fort, on the site of the present unfinished work, three hundred and eighty-four yards in perimeter, to mount nearly one hundred guns, in barbette, chiefly on the three sea fronts.

For Brenton's Point, then the most important position of all those to be fortified in Narraganset Bay, the Board of Engineers deemed it necessary to construct, immediately, a powerful work, not only to defend the main entrance against an enemy's fleet, but to hold the position against a large land force till it could be relieved by our own troops, which would require time to be organized and marched to the attack of the enemy. It properly was observed that the strength of the work should be fully equal to the objects to be secured, that is to provide against such a contingency as had actually occured. Large fleets during the Revolution had invaded Narraganset Bay, and for three years Rhode Island had been held by a strong hostile army which we had not been able to dislodge. It is true that our population and resources had increased, but even in 1820 we were but a feeble power as compared with some of the nations of the old world which might assail us. History was full of illustrations of large fleets and armies being quickly transported to distant points; therefore, there must be no stint in our preparations to meet such foreign expeditions as might be sent to secure a lodgment in Narraganset waters—a bay so capacious, so approachable, occupying so important a strategic position on our northern coast, and acknowledged to be the best roadstead upon our Atlantic seaboard.

"With the opening of this anchorage properly defended, hardly a vessel of war could come, either singly or in small squadrons, upon the coast, in the boisterous season, without aiming at this port, on account of the comparative certainty of an immediate entrance. And this would be particularly the case with vessels injured by heavy weather, or in conflict with an enemy; with vessels bringing prizes, or pursued by a superior force. The use of this port would almost necessarily bring

with it the demand for the means of repairing and refitting; and the concentration of these upon some suitable spot would be the beginning of a permanent dock-yard. For the same reason that ships of war would collect here, it would be a favorite point of rendezvous for privateers and their prizes, and a common place of refuge for merchantmen.

"But the same properties that make Narraganset Roads so precious to us would recommend them to the enemy also; and their natural advantages will be enhanced in his eyes by the value of all the objects these advantages may have accumulated therein.

"If this roadstead were without defense an enemy could occupy it without opposition, and, by aid of naval superiority, form a lodgment on the island of Rhode Island for the war. Occupying this island with his troops, and with his fleets the channels on either side, he might defy all the forces of the Eastern States; and while, from this position, his troops would keep in alarm and motion the population of the East, feigned expeditions against New York, or against more southern cities, would equally alarm the country in that direction; and thus, though he might do no more than menace, it is difficult to estimate the embarrassment and expense into which he would drive the government."

Entertaining these views, the Board of Engineers say "the defense adopted for Narraganset Roads must be formidable in the important points, because they will be exposed to powerful expeditions" of the enemy which "may take possession, and bend his whole force to the reduction of the forts on the island, which cannot be relieved until a force has been organized, brought from a distance, conveyed by water to the points attacked, and landed in the face of his batteries; all of this obviously requiring several days during which the forts should be capable of holding out. To do this against an expedition of ten or twenty thousand men demands something more than the strength to resist a single assault. Unless the main works be competent to withstand a siege of a few days, they will not therefore fulfil their trust, and will be worse than useless."

With these premises, in the then feeble condition of the country, very different from the present state of affairs, the present Fort Adams was planned and built. It consists of a pentagonal masonry main-work, bastioned on the three sea-fronts, and casemated throughout for gun-rooms

and habitations for the garrison. The principal channel-front has three tiers of fire, the others two, the upper batteries of the whole being in barbette. Covering the two land fronts is a crown-work separated from the main-work by a deep dry ditch. Exterior to all, except the main sea front, is a covered-way with the usual places of arms, traverses, &c. Upon a commanding hill in the vicinity is a formidable casemated masonry redoubt, connected with the fort by an earthen caponnière, so arranged as to form a strong barbette battery towards the ship channel. These various defenses cover about twenty acres, and were designed to mount nearly five hundred pieces of artillery of various calibers. For beginning the construction of this work, Congress, in 1824, appropriated $50,000, of which $22,500 were applied to enlarging the site* to one hundred and sixty five-acres, which were purchased by the United States at various times after 1794. Lieutenant Andrew Talcott, August 10, 1824, was assigned, temporarily, to the duty of making the preliminary arrangements for building the work; and, February 22, 1825, Lieutenant-Colonel Joseph G. Totten, Corps of Engineers, who had planned it, was charged with its construction. He continued personally to direct the work till his promotion, December 7, 1838, to be the Chief Engineer of the Army, at which time Fort Adams approached completion. Most of the young officers of engineers served their apprenticeship here, this work being a kind of school of application for the Corps of Engineers.

During the war of the Rebellion, the West Passage being entirely undefended, permanent batteries were commenced on Dutch Island,

---

* Brenton's Point, upon which this fort is situated, is the extreme north-westerly point of Brenton's Neck, which constitutes the lower part of the island of Rhode Island south of an east and west line through the Lime Rocks in Newport harbor. The original proprietor, William Brenton, left Hammersmith, England, and landed in Boston in 1634. He brought with him a commission from Charles the First, dated 1633, and termed a grant, which allowed him to take so many acres to a mile of all the lands he should survey in the New England Colonies, by which authority he became possessed of extensive tracts on the Merrimac River and elsewhere. In 1638, he removed with his wife to the present site of Newport, R. I., and was one of the nine gentlemen, who, February 28, 1639, united themselves into an active body politic for the purpose of forming a township in the Island of Aquidneck, which they termed a "Plantation." In doing this their first object was to choose a spot which would prove the most lucrative situation for a commercial town with a good harbor. Accordingly the place selected was Newport, of which, probably, William Brenton was the surveyor. He had already taken possession of the "Neck" and named it "Hammersmith," in which were two thousand acres of land, having the richest soil and presenting the most picturesque scenery. On Redoubt Hill, where are situated the present quarters of the commanding officer of Fort Adams, he made a clearing in the dense forest and built a brick dwelling, one hundred and fifty feet square, which commanded a magnificent view of the ocean and bay, and was surrounded with well laid out parks, beautiful gardens, extensive orchards, silver lakes, and roads and foot-paths meandering everywhere.

which it is designed to occupy with works mounting sixty heavy guns, arranged in amphitheatre on its southern slope and upon the summit of the island. An interior keep should be added for reserve magazines and other purposes.

Though large sums have been expended upon the fortifications of Narraganset Bay, its entrances are far from being adequately protected against the present heavily-armored steam fleets with their enormous guns. The art of war, like almost everything else, has had its evolution. War-chariots, the Greek phalanx, and the Roman legion, have yielded to the thin formations of modern armies in battle. The sling, the pike, the cross-bow, and the matchlock have given place to the improved magazine-rifle for our infantry. The catapult, the culverin, and the small smooth-bore cannon, have been superseded by heavy rifled artillery, sometimes of pieces weighing one hundred tons, and throwing projectiles of two thousand pounds with prodigious force to great distances. Fleets of row-galleys, of wooden sailing-ships, and of side-wheel steamers, have been surrendered, first for light-plated, and now for the heaviest armored propellers. And, in like manner, thin earthern parapets, masonry scarp-walls, and low barbette batteries are now to be displaced by heavy iron turrets and the strongest combinations of earth, masonry, and shields of hardened steel.

In this changed condition of things our sea-coast fortifications have lost much of their power of offense and defense; yet they are far from being useless, as is often supposed by civilians. On the contrary, they are most useful adjuncts to any new system of works which we may hereafter construct. With our increased population they are still adequate to resist for a sufficient time any land attack; armed with our present guns, converted into rifled artillery, they could protect our harbors against naval marauders, and our channel torpedoes from boat expeditions; and, with slight modifications and some large ordnance, would be able to cope with any, except heavily armed and armored ships. But we must be prepared for *all* future contingencies, hence we require better shielded and stronger armed fortifications.

Fortunately, with the greatly increased range of modern artillery, we have very advantageous positions, within good supporting distance, for new fortifications for the defense of the middle and western entrances

into Narraganset Bay. For the eastern entrance the bridges at Tiverton obstruct the passage of ships into its waters.

As we have before stated, Dumplings Point offers an admirable position for powerful batteries to directly oppose the approach of fleets advancing up the Middle Passage.

Lower down are Castle Hill and the Ridge of Conanicut Island, opposite the mouth of Mackerel Cove, both admirable sites for strong citadels, only a mile and a half apart, which distance could be lessened to a mile and a quarter between elevated batteries lining either shore, and protected by the higher enclosed works. Therefore hostile ships, proceeding up mid-channel, would be within the effective range of five-eighths or three-quarters of a mile of the heavy armament of these defenses.

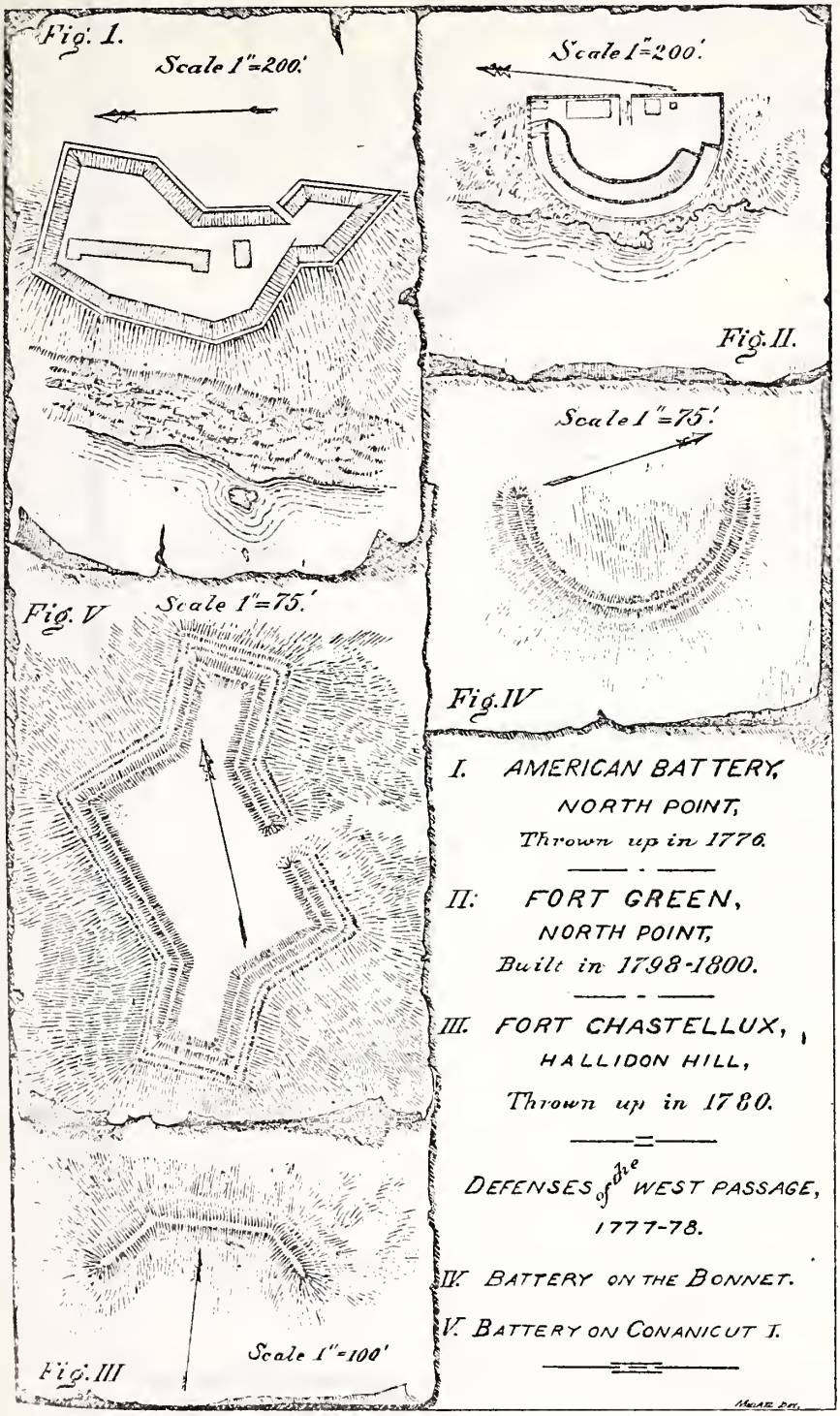
The citadel on Conanicut Island, co-operating with another at the Bonnet on the Main, with shore-batteries, would in like manner and at like distances defend the West Passage; while the fires from Dutch Island would enfilade approaching ships.

With such strong works and batteries on these several points, well armed, and aided by properly placed channel torpedoes, Narraganset Bay would be secure against the most powerfully armed fleets.

To this new system of more advanced works, Fort Adams would be a most valuable interior adjunct, not only for offense, but as a safe and defensible position wherein to keep magazines and ordnance stores, commissary and hospital supplies, and, at the same time, be a secure refuge for the sick, wounded, and non-combatants.

In concluding this Paper I must tender my most sincere thanks to Colonel Elliot, the Engineer Officer now in charge of the Defenses of Narraganset Bay, for his valuable assistance in making the measurements of the West Passage Batteries, and his great kindness in putting at my disposal the services of his draughtsman—Mr. Mielatz—who has so accurately and artistically delineated the sketches from which the map and plates, illustrating this paper, were engraved.

Plate I.



I. AMERICAN BATTERY,
NORTH POINT,
Thrown up in 1776.

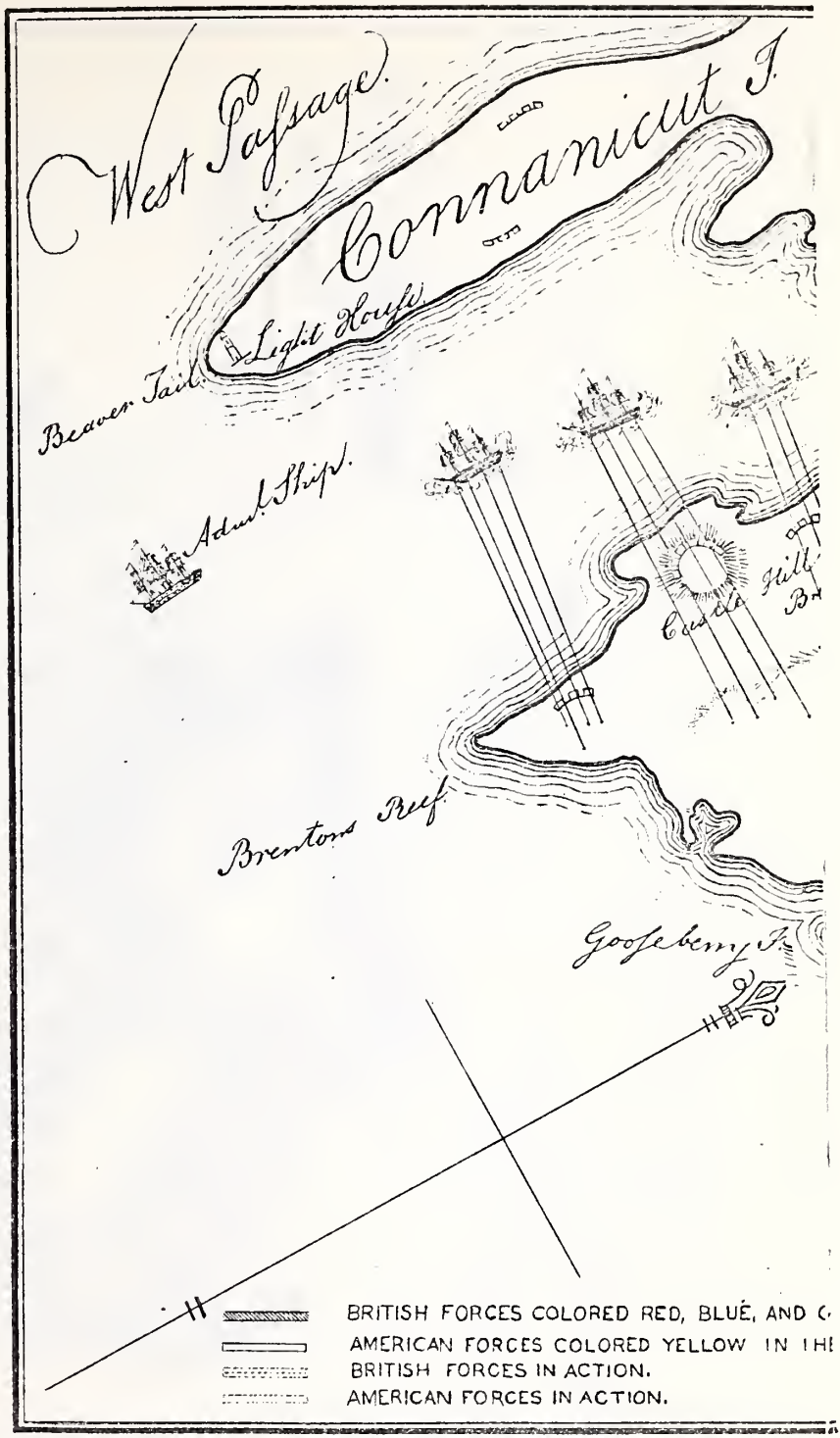
II. FORT GREEN,
NORTH POINT,
Built in 1798-1800.

III. FORT CHASTELLUX,
HALLIDON HILL,
Thrown up in 1780.

DEFENSES of the WEST PASSAGE,
1777-78.

IV. BATTERY ON THE BONNET.

V. BATTERY ON CONANICUT I.


West Passage.
Connanicut I.
Light House
Beaver Tail
Adml. Ship.
Brentons Reef
Gooseberry I.
BRITISH FORCES COLORED RED, BLUE, AND G
AMERICAN FORCES COLORED YELLOW IN THE
BRITISH FORCES IN ACTION.
AMERICAN FORCES IN ACTION.

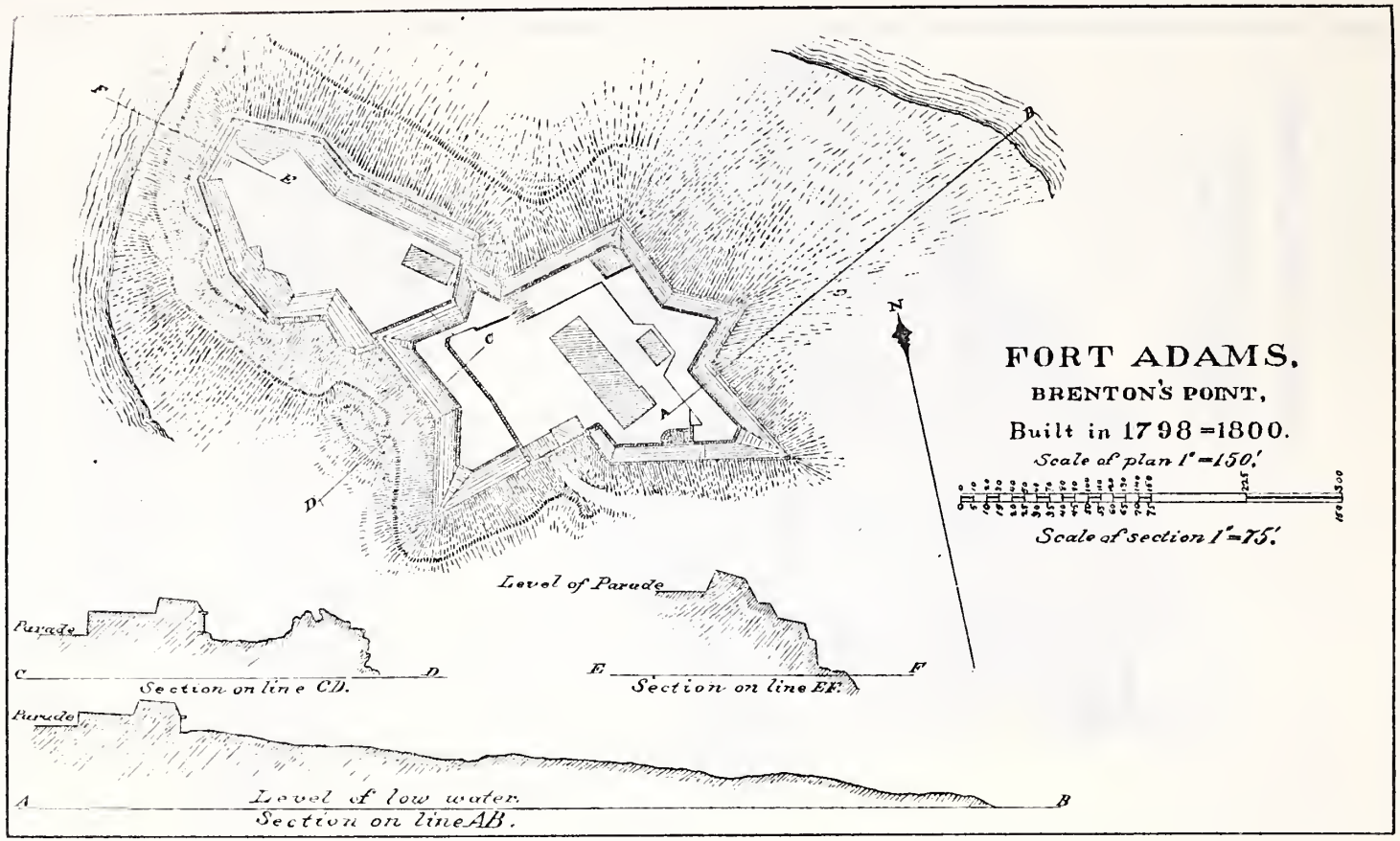
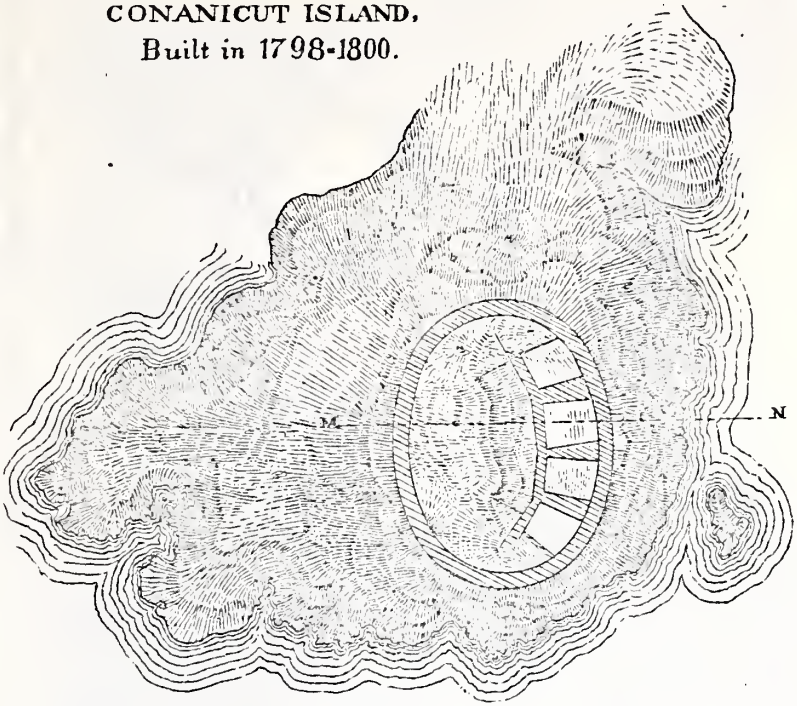

FORT ADAMS.
BRENTON'S POINT,
Built in 1798=1800.
Scale of plan 1"=150'.
Scale of section 1"=75'.
N
A
B
C
D
E
F
Level of Parade
Parade
Section on line CD.
Section on line EF.
Parade
Level of low water.
Section on line AB.

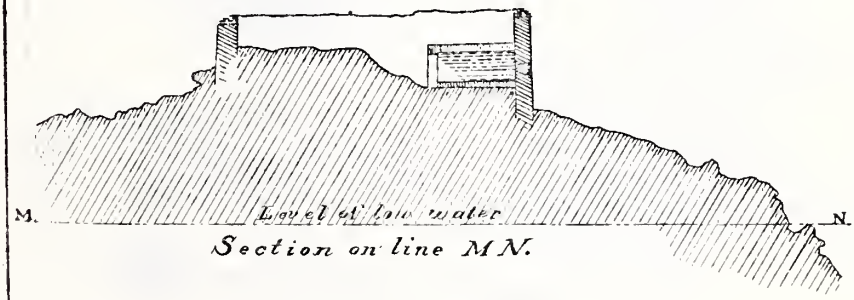
Plate III.

DUMPLINGS TOWER.

CONANICUT ISLAND.

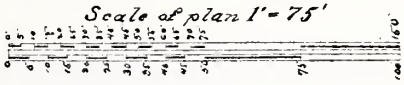
Built in 1798-1800.





Section on line MN.

Scale of plan 1" = 75'



Scale of section 1" = 50'

Plate V.

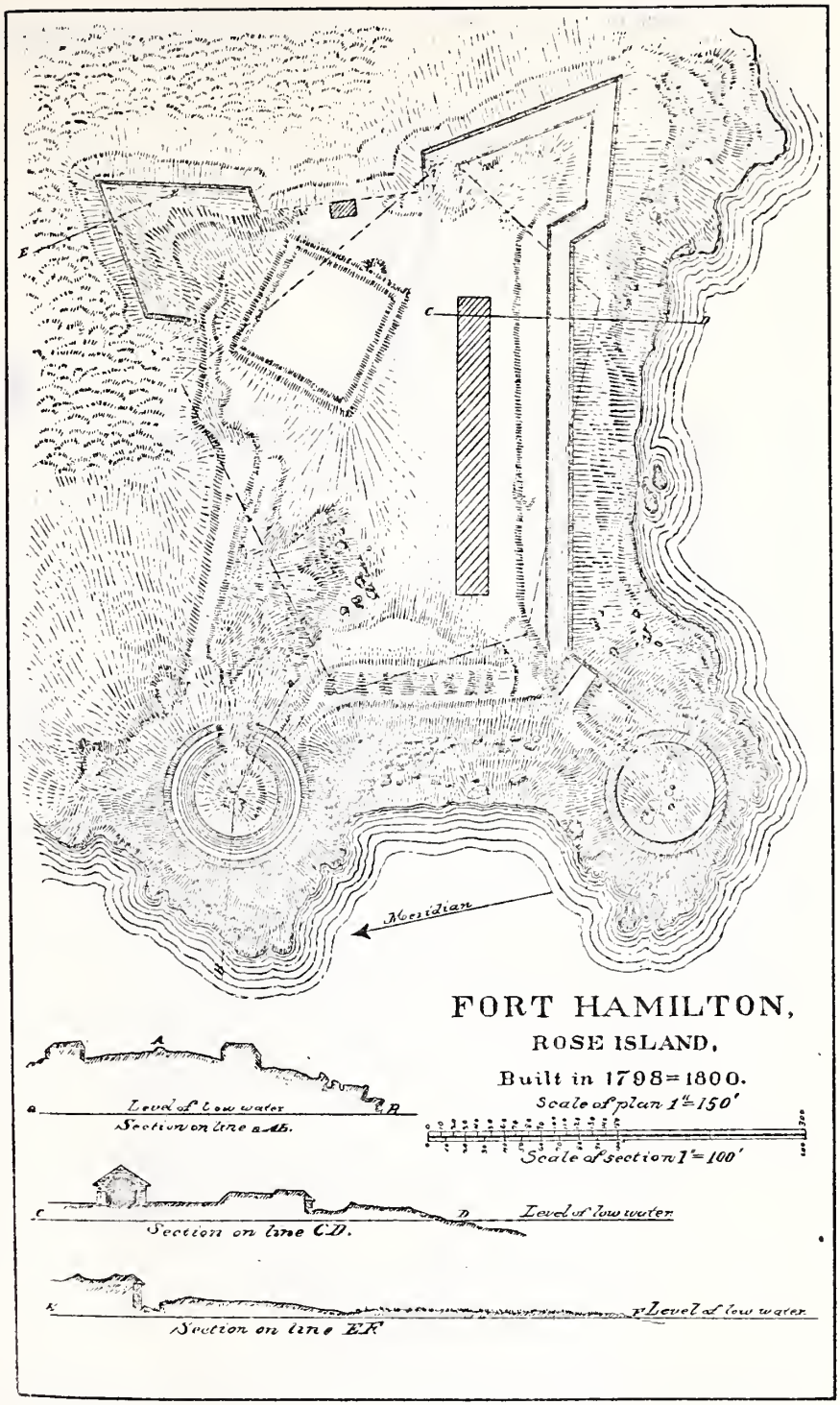
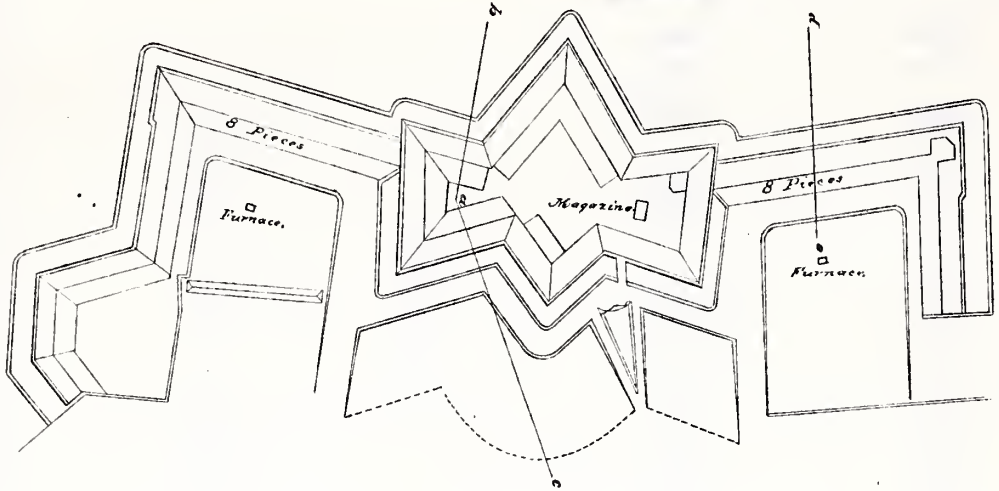

Meridian
FORT HAMILTON,
ROSE ISLAND,
Built in 1798=1800.
Scale of plan 1"=150'
Scale of section 1"=100'
Level of low water
Section on line AB.
Level of low water
Section on line CD.
Level of low water
Section on line EF.

Plate VI.



FORT WOLCOTT,

GOAT ISLAND,

Rebuilt in 1795-98.

Section on line b a c.

Section on line d e.

Scale of Plan 1" = 180'

Scale of section 1" = 140'

McLaw del.

HISTORICAL

ADDRESS,

City of Newport.

JULY 4, 1876.

HISTORICAL

ADDRESS,

City of Newport.

JULY 4, 1876.

President's Proclamation.

By the President of the United States.

A. PROCLAMATION.

WHEREAS, A joint resolution of the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States was duly approved on the 13th day of March last, which resolution is as follows:

"Be it resolved by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, that it be and is hereby recommended by the Senate and the House of Representatives to the people of the several States that they assemble in their several counties or towns on the approaching centennial anniversary of our national independence, and that they cause to have delivered on such day an historical sketch of said county or town from its formation, and that a copy of said sketch may be filed, in print or manuscript, in the clerk's office of said county, and an additional copy in print or manuscript be filed in the office of the librarian of Congress, to the intent that a complete record may thus be obtained of the progress of our institutions during the first centennial of their existence"; and

WHEREAS, It is deemed proper that such recommendation be brought to the notice and knowledge of the people of the United States,

Now, therefore, I, Ulysses S. Grant, President of the United States, do hereby declare and make known the same, in the hope that the object of such resolution may meet the approval of the people of the United States, and that proper steps may be taken to carry the same into effect.

Given under my hand, at the city of Washington, the 25th day of May, in the year of our Lord 1876, and of the independence of the United States the one hundredth.

By the President, U. S. GRANT.

HAMILTON FISH, Secretary of State.

State of Rhode Island.

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,

Providence, April 27th, 1876.

To the Honorable City Council of the City of Newport,

GENTLEMEN:

I have the honor herewith to enclose a duly certified copy of a Resolution passed by the General Assembly at its recent Session, requesting me to invite the people of the several towns and cities of the State, to assemble in their several localities on the approaching Centennial Anniversary of our National Independence, and cause to have delivered on such day an historical sketch of said town or city from its formation.

By pursuing the course suggested by the General Assembly, the people of the State will derive an amount of information which will be invaluable to the present generation, as showing the wonderful progress of the several towns and cities since their formation.

It will also be of great value to future generations when the materials for such sketches now accessible will have been lost or destroyed by accident, or become more or less effaced and illegible from time.

Therefore in pursuance of the request of the General Assembly I respectfully and earnestly, through you, invite the people of your city to carry out the contemplated celebration on the 4th day of July next.

HENRY LIPPITT, *Governor.*

State of Rhode Island &c.

In General Assembly, January Session, A. D. 1876.

JOINT RESOLUTION

ON THE

CELEBRATION OF THE CENTENNIAL

IN THE SEVERAL CITIES AND TOWNS.

Resolved, The House of Representatives concurring therein, that in accordance with the recommendation of the National Congress, the Governor be requested to invite the people of the several cities and towns of the State, to assemble in their several localities on the approaching Centennial Anniversary of our National Independence, and cause to have delivered on that day an historical sketch of said town or city from its formation, and to have one copy of said sketch, in print or in manuscript, filed in the clerk's office of said town or city, one copy in the office of the Secretary of State, and one copy in the office of the librarian of Congress, to the intent that a complete record may thus be obtained of the progress of our institutions during the First Centennial of their existence; and that the Governor be requested to communicate the invitation forthwith to the several town and city councils in the State.

I certify the foregoing to be a true copy of a resolution passed by the General Assembly of the State aforesaid, on the 20th day of April, A. D. 1876.

{L. S.} Witness my hand and Seal of the State, this 27th day of April, A. D. 1876.

JOSHUA M. ADDEMAN,
Secretary of State.

City of Newport.

OFFICE OF THE CITY CLERK.

At a meeting of the special committee appointed on the communication of His Excellency, Governor Lippitt, Alderman J. B. Brown was authorized to procure some suitable person to deliver a historical discourse on the 4th of July, 1876. He subsequently reported that the Hon. WILLIAM P. SHEFFIELD had consented to deliver the said discourse.

At a meeting of the Council held June 7, 1876, the following resolution was passed:

Resolved, That the sum of $2,500 be, and the same is hereby appropriated for the celebration of the Fourth of July, 1876, and that Aldermen J. C. Stoddard, George Denniston, Jr., and Councilmen Weaver, Bull and Cottrell be and are hereby appointed a committee to make all the necessary arrangements for the same.

ONE HUNDREDTH

ANNIVERSARY

—OF—

AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE.

July 4, 1876.

ORDER OF EXERCISES

—AT THE—

Opera House, Newport,

COMMENCING AT 11 O'CLOCK A. M.

—o—

I. MUSIC, - - - - BY THE BAND.
II. PRAYER, - BY REV. A. G. MERCER, D. D.
III. MUSIC, - - - - BY THE BAND.
IV. READING OF DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE, BY HON. HENRY BEDLOW, Mayor.
V. MUSIC, - - - - BY THE BAND.
VI. ORATION, - BY HON. WM. P. SHEFFIELD.
VII. MUSIC, - - - - BY THE BAND.

BENEDICTION.

RESOLUTION OF THANKS

TO THE

HON. WILLIAM P. SHEFFIELD,

FOR HIS HISTORICAL DISCOURSE;

Together with a Resolution ordering the same Printed.

At a meeting of the City Council held July 6, 1876, the following resolutions were passed:

Resolved, That the thanks of the City Council be and the same are hereby extended to Hon. William P. Sheffield for the Historical Discourse delivered July 4th, instant; and

Resolved, That Mr. Sheffield be requested to furnish a copy of the same for publication; and be it further

Resolved, That Alderman Brown and Councilmen Bull and Cranston, be authorized to cause two thousand copies of said discourse to be printed in pamphlet form, and have one copy of the sketch filed in the City Clerk's office in this city; one copy in the office of the Secretary of State in Providence; one copy in the office of the Librarian of Congress in Washington, D. C., and the other copies for the use of the City Council.

PRAYER,

BY THE REV. A. G. MERCER.

O Thou Eternal God to whom a thousand years are but as one day, we, the creatures of a moment, at the end of the hundred years of our nation's life, in humility and adoration bow down before Thee.

Permit us to speak with Thee this day as a man speaks with his friend.

Thou hast created us a nation here far in the west of the world, that we might lead in the great experiment of forming a new hemisphere. Thou hast created us of the best blood of the world, and given us the best traditions, the Bible and all the acquisitions of liberty and of social wisdom. Our fathers began the career Thou didst open, consecrating it with their sacrifices. We became free States—and guided as we think by Thy spirit, made and established an American constitution of liberty and public order, giving to the earth the promise of better eras. Thou gavest us this grand allotment of earth and sky as our home—this soil, this climate, these rivers and mountains and wide skirted plains, and said, "subdue and possess." And now at the end of a hundred years, by energy, by art, *we have* subdued and possess, and hold the continent from sea to sea.

And here to-day we present before Thee this continent and all its riches; this vast population with all its power and virtues; this new democratic world dedicated to man; we present it all before Thee—thy gift, with thanksgiving and praise and the voice of melody! So far as we have done well—and in many things have we not done well, O Lord? so far, accept it graciously, and may the whole people humbly glad hear thy voice, to-day, saying "Well done good and faithful servant."

But, O Lord God, we have sinned—not so much this people as those of us who are the natural leaders of the people—and to-day, after a hundred years, after all our gains of power and riches, we must take to ourselves shame and say, that among all our gains we have not gained—surely not as we ought—in character and in public heart; we have grasped for self, and neglected the common weal, and even our good men are not always good citizens. We deplore our unenlightened and prejudiced suffrage; we deplore the folly of the citizen and the incompetence of the ruler; we deplore our conceit and irreverance, that we do not know what to look up to; that our best men are not our highest men. We deplore the sinking standard of common honesty and of public and private honor.

But O, where we have done ill—and have we not done very ill? surely we are, still thy people, and wilt Thou not pardon us and correct us in thy mercy, and fill our lives with patriotic energy, that henceforth we may be faithful workmen of the State?

Take away, O Lord, if Thou wilt, all this Centennial glory—take it all from us, but give us in its place, abundance of public honor, the "Righteousness that exalteth a Nation," and so, out of darkness, make this people into a pillar of fire, leading forward toward the land of Promise and Hope.

O, divine Father! in profound humilty, in unbounded gratitude we offer this our service of Solemn Thanksgiving and Prayer in the name of thy Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

AMEN.

Address.

ADDRESS.

The Puritans and the Cavaliers, the Independents and the Episcopalians, agreed that God was to be worshiped; they differed only as to the form of worship, and this difference was the primary cause of the settling of the New England colonies by British subjects. True the spirit of adventure, and the advantages of trade, contributed to this end, but the controlling influence operating upon most of the Puritan emigrants, was the desire to worship God in accordance with their convictions of duty.

The Puritans were agreed in opposing the Established Church, but they had not stopped to consider if they were agreed upon the grounds of their opposition. Some were opposed to the corruptions of the Church, and were in favor of purifying it, and despaired of accomplishing their purpose but by a revolution in existing systems and establishing others, which should be more exacting in their demands, requiring a more fervent piety, and a greater self-denial; while others objected that the hierarchical form of government practiced in the Established Church, was not calculated either to advance Christianity, or to open the largest field for usefulness to the members of the church.

When the separation from "the mother church" was complete, and when the Puritans were establishing a church in America, upon which they were to rear a commonwealth,

while their minds were highly excited upon religious topics, it is not surprising that differences of opinion upon church polity should arise among them, nor is the occasion for surprise diminished when we reflect that the only road open, which was apparent to them, for the gratification of ambition, was through the church.

What was thus natural, and to be expected, arose in the Puritan colony of Massachusetts Bay; for they came to America to found a church, and a commonwealth based upon the church. This done, the majority of them claimed the church and the commonwealth which they had founded in their exile, to be theirs,—theirs to control, —theirs to enjoy. A few of their number with no higher purpose, but with broader conceptions of human rights, a firmer trust in the capacity of the masses of men, and a higher ideal of duty to God, ventured the opinion that the church was the church, not of the Puritans, but of Jesus Christ, its founder and head, and that the commonwealth was the King's commonwealth, under whose license it existed; and that the Puritans had no right to exclude the humble followers of the Saviour of mankind from His church, or the King's loyal subjects from a place in his commonwealth. The majority prevailed, and compelled the unyielding minority to leave their homes in Boston and depart from the Christian commonwealth.

John Wheelwright who had been a classmate of Cromwell at Cambridge, vicar of Bilsby, silenced by Arhbishop Laud for non-conformity, and had emigrated to America, was pastor of a church in Braintree. He was a kinsman of Ann Hutchinson[1] and had some sympathy with her religious opinions, in consequence of which, a controversy arose between him and Mr. Wilson, the pastor of the Boston church.

This matter was brought before the General Court, and Wheelwright was censured.

Against this judgment of censure, William Hutchinson, William Aspinwall,[3] William Dyer,[4] John Sanford,[5] Samuel Wilbor,[6] Thomas Savage,[7] Edward Hutchinson,[2] Richard Carder,[8] John Porter,[9] William Baulston,[10] William Freeborn,[11] Henry Bull,[12] John Walker,[13] Mr. Clarke,[14] and John Coggeshall,[15] of Boston, Philip Sherman,[16] of Roxbury, and others protested; and from it William Coddington[17] and Randall Holden[18] dissented; the former having opposed its rendition in the General Court. For this act, on the 2d of November, 1637, the sixteen persons first named were disarmed.

On the 12th of the next March, the General Court notified William Coddington, John Coggeshall, William Baulston, Edward Hutchinson, Samuel Wilbor, John Porter, Henry Bull, Philip Sherman, William Freeborn, and Richard Carder, that they had license to leave the colony, and that if they did not depart before the next Court, in May, 1638, they were commanded to then appear at court, to answer such objections as should be objected against them. Nicholas Easton,[19] of Salem, was warned to depart at the same time, but in a separate order.

William Brenton[20] had incurred the colonial displeasure for being contaminated with the opinions of Wheelwright and Hutchinson, and having opposed their being censured in the General Court.

The persons whom I have named, were the founders of the colony of Rhode Island, and whatever may be said about the intervention of other causes to induce the banishment of Roger Williams, and the settlement of Providence, I have

never seen it stated or heard it intimated, that the founders of the colony of Rhode Island were disarmed, had leave to depart and were threatened with further orders, if they did not leave, for any other cause than for the religious opinions which they entertained, and their protest against the censure of Wheelwright for his religious opinions.

The men who founded Rhode Island, were among those who had been most conspicuous in the Puritan commonwealth, "men," says Callender, "who were in repute with the very best for their holiness and zeal." Among them were men of culture, and all of them had there enjoyed social position and most of them official distinction. Yet the hard fate of the times befel them, and they became the exiled of exiles, Puritans of Puritans and in their new-found home they were permitted to assist in laying the foundations of a new society, based alike upon civil and religious liberty.

These colonists passed beyond the jurisdiction of Massachusetts and of Plymouth, and landed at Portsmouth. Here they incorporated themselves into a civil society, not according to the forms and constitutions of the countries from which they came, but in accordance with the lofty aspirations of their own pure hearts, and the circumstances which surrounded them.

Through the kindly offices of that great man, Roger Williams, they had obtained the Indian title to this Island from the Narragansetts, who had recently conquered it from the Wampanoags; but they had no charters or laws for their government but those which are written on the heart and rest in the consciences of men; but on the 7th day of March, 1638, they solemnly, in the presence of Jehovah, incorporated themselves into a body politic, as he should help, and promised that they would submit their persons, lives and

estates unto the Lord Jesus Christ, the King of Kings and Lord of Lords, and to all those perfect and most absolute laws of His given us in his holy word of truth, to be guided and judged thereby. Thus it may be seen that this first charter of our civil rights rests upon the broad principles of the Golden Rule.

The founders of Rhode Island were exiled from England by the dread of the Tower of London. The fires of Smithfield lighted their way to the abodes of savage men and the wilds of native forests; the full force of persecution had not yet been exhausted, the unrelenting hand of destiny would not let loose its grasp; for there was a denser forest not yet penetrated; more formidable tribes of savages, which had not yet been encountered. Another trial was necessary to be had to separate the gospel of perfect freedom in religion from the accumulated dross of ages. Into the crucible of this other trial our fathers were cast, and from its retort they evolved the idea of spiritual liberty, to light the wanderer in the way of life out of the darkness and gloom of the religious intolerance of all the past; a light which has since been expanding, and yet continues to expand over the world like the rays of a new-born day.

The colonists provided for the assignment of lands to the settlers, the erection of a meeting-house, and regulated other affairs at Portsmouth; and in the spring of 1638–9, the majority of the settlers removed to the southwesterly part of the Island and there laid the foundations of Newport.[a]

Here they laid out their lands subject to certain public rights of fishery, passed an order that no one should be accounted a delinquent for doctrine, and did many acts in regulating their prudential affairs. They soon received considerable accession to their numbers of persons, who like

themselves, had been oppressed for conscience. They appointed Mr. Easton and Mr. Clarke to inform Sir Henry Vane of the condition of things here, and to request him to endeavor to obtain his Majesty's charter for the people of the Island.

In 1640, the town employed Robert Lenthall to keep a public school,—the first public school in America, and possibly the first school accessible to all, supported by the public charge, in the world.

As early as 1641, there were at least two hundred families on the Island. That year it was unaminously ordered that "the government or body politic of the Island and the jurisdiction thereof in favor of our prince, is a democratic or popular government; that is, it is in the power of the body of the freemen orderly assembled, or the major part of them, to make and constitute just laws by which they will be regulated, and depute from among themselves such ministers as shall see them faithfully executed between man and man."

In the beginning of 1640, the colony at Newport received further accession to their numbers from Portsmouth, and ordered that the chief magistrate should be called governor, and the next, deputy-governor; and the governor and two assistants should be chosen from one town, and the deputy and the two other assistants should be chosen from the other town, and that the town at the north end of the Island should be called Portsmouth; and in May of that year, a court consisting of magistrates and jurors, should be held in Newport and in Portsmouth. The magistrates were the governor, deputy-governor and assistants. This is the commencement of jury trials in Rhode Island.

In September, 1640, Governor Coddington was ordered to write to the governor of the Bay, that they would communicate their councils concerning their agitations with the Indians.

In the records of the Massachusetts General Court, under date October 7, 1640, is the following order, viz: "It is ordered that the letter lately sent to the governor by Mr. Eaton [of New Haven], Mr. Hopkins, Mr. Haynes [of Connecticut], Mr. Coddington, and Mr. Brenton [of Newport], but concerning also the General Court, shall be thus answered by the governor, That the Court doth assent to all the propositions laid down in the aforesaid letter, but that the answer shall be directed to Mr. Eaton, Mr. Hopkins and Mr. Haynes only, excluding Mr. Coddington and Mr. Brenton, as men not to be capitulated with at all by us either for themselves or the people of the Island, where they inhabit as their case standeth."

Thus early the inhabitants of Rhode Island desired to enter into a league with the other New England colonies for mutual defence, and were prevented from doing so by the arbitrary action of the General Court of Massachusetts; and the defenceless people of Rhode Island were left to the tender mercies of the Indian savage.

In 1648, May 25, Governor Coddington in a letter to Governor Winthrop states that some of the people on the Island are in disgrace with the people of Warwick and Providence.

September 8 of the same year, Coddington and Alexander Partridge made a formal request of the United colonies to be admitted into that alliance, and their request was formally answered by the suggestion, that if Rhode

Island desired the protection of the United Colonies, it had better submit to the jurisdiction of Plymouth.

In 1644, it was ordered that the Island, commonly called Aquidneck, shall from henceforth be called the Isle of Rhodes, or Rhode Island.

March 14, 1643, a charter was granted from the Lord Commissioners to the inhabitants of Providence, Portsmouth and Newport under the name of the Providence Plantations, in the Narragansett Bay in New England, with authority to rule themselves in such form of civil government as by voluntary consent of all, or the greater part of them, they should find most suitable to their estate and condition.

This charter was not altogether satisfactory to the people of the Island. They did not like the name of the colony. It had been granted upon the particular application of the Providence and Warwick people, with whom they were not in complete unity, without the concurrence of the inhabitants of the Island, and the name of the Island had been omitted in the new name for the colony.

This want of unity kept open the acceptance of the charter and the organization of the government up to 1647 when the people of the Island presented a body of laws, which was accepted by the other colonies, and the charter government was then organized. Under this charter, the title of the chief magistrate was President, and William Coddington was elected president in 1648, and William Baulston was chosen one of the assistants. Owing to certain charges having been made against these officers, they were suspended in office, and if Coddington was found guilty, or from other causes the office should be vacant, Jeremiah Clarke was to fill the office.

November 4, 1651, Warwick and Providence appointed Roger Williams to go to England, to obtain a confirmation of their chartered privileges, the towns on the Island having withdrawn and fallen off from the charter government.—Coddington obtained from England a commission to be governor of the Island for life.

This proceeding of Coddington was offensive to many of the inhabitants of the Island, for sixty-five of the inhabitants of Newport and forty-one from Portsmouth employed Mr. John Clarke to go to England, to procure the commission of Coddington to be vacated. Williams and Clarke took passage in the same ship.

Orders from the Council of State in England having arrived suspending Coddington's government, the Assembly met at Portsmouth, March 1, 1652, to receive them, when it was ordered that the officers obstructed by Coddington's commission, should stand in their places, and act according to their former commissions as if they had been annually chosen, until a new election; and an election was appointed to take place the Tuesday succeeding the 15th of the then next May.

No General Assembly met, however, on the Island, until at Newport, May 17, 1653, which was an assembly of the electors of the Island only. This assembly assumed control of the government of the Island. They proposed that if Warwick and Providence would be pleased to act with them, that those towns might elect their own officers. They then sent James Barker and Richard Knight to demand the Statute Book and Book of Records from Governor Coddington. Coddington informed the messengers, that he would advise with counsel, and then return an answer; for he dare not lay down his commission without order thereto;

they made some provisions for assisting in the prosecution of the war against the Dutch; provided for the adjudication of prizes brought into Newport, and for the adoption of the Laws of Oleron.

A commission was granted to Edward Hull, to go against the Dutch, or any of the enemies of the commonwealth of England. This was the commencement of privateering in Rhode Island. The action of the Island Assembly in reference to the Dutch war, brought a lively protest from the Providence-Warwick Assembly.

Yet these Assemblies soon united upon terms of settlement. They then commissioned the Deborah, to go against the enemies of England; and on the 13th of September, 1654, they approved of the instructions presented by Mr. John Clarke, in reference to his mission to England, and desired that Roger Williams and Mr. Dexter should manifest as much to Mr. Clarke.

Roger Williams returned from England in 1654, leaving Mr. Clarke then sole agent of the colony.

In 1655, Cromwell wrote to the colony, authorizing it to continue its government under the charter of 1643.

In 1656, Mr. Coddington was chosen one of the commissioners for Newport to the General Court, when he declared that he freely submitted to the authority of his Highness in these colonies as now united, with all his heart.

Upon the return of Charles II to the throne, John Clarke then the sole agent in England of the Providence Plantations as well as of the Island of Rhode Island, presented to the crown two petitions for a charter for the colony, which should give the inhabitants full liberty in religious concernments, and a larger measure of civil liberty than was then

enjoyed by any other civilized people on earth. This petition was granted, and November 24, 1663, at a meeting of the General Court of commissioners held in Newport, Mr. Clarke's letter was opened and read with good delivery; and the King's Gracious Letters' Patent with the broad seal thereto affixed, were received, and read by George Baxter: and this charter remained the fundamental law of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations for one hundred and eighty years.

This charter was the fruit of twelve years' toil of John Clarke in England, during which time he had expended all of his available funds, and had mortgaged his private property to promote the object he had in hand.

But the object of his mission had been attained; the charter was secure, and his title to be known as the greatest benefactor of the colony was fully earned.

Notwithstanding the depreciating remarks of Graham, I firmly believe that there was not then a better balanced mind than Clarke's in all America, and Rhode Island never had a more devoted friend. He was prodigal of himself in her service, and when he died he gave the remnant of his fortune for the relief of her poor, and the bringing up of her children to learning. "The grand motive which turned the scale of his life," says Roger Willlams, "was the truth of God —a just liberty to all men's spirits in spiritual matters, together with the peace and prosperity of the whole colony."

Several of the early settlers of Newport were merchants, and a considerable commerce grew up with the Dutch at New York, and with the English at Barbadoes, and between the colony and other places.

After the battle of Sedgmoor, in 1685, the followers of the

Duke of Monmouth were many of them sold to go to the Barbadoes, and from this class and from other sources Rhode Island continued to receive considerable accessions to its population, and Newport was by far the most flourishing town in the colony up to the Revolution.

In January, 1664-5, Roger Williams who though not the author was the defender of the charter, said, that the charter "gives liberty of our estates * * * not a penny to be taken by any one from us without every man's free debate by his deputies chosen by himself, and sent to the General Assembly. Liberty of society or corporation, of sending; or being sent to the General Assembly, of choosing, and of being chosen to all offices, and of making or repealing laws and constitutions amongst us."

The colony acted upon this claim, and asserted that as between themselves and the British government, this charter was to be construed as a contract or perpetual covenant, and that as such, it was irrepealable by the King and parliament of England without the assent of the colony: that as between the government and people of the colony, the charter was their fundamental law. The charter, said they, was on the one hand binding on the British government, and on the other hand, was alike binding on the government and people of the colony.

Indeed, the charter contained a provision to the effect that it should, as against the crown and government of England, be a sufficient warrant and discharge for all acts done under and in accordance with its provisions.

Yet the British government by duress attempted its abrogation with all the New England charters in 1686, and appointed Sir Edmund Andros as governor of the New England colonies, who broke the seal of the charter, and assumed

the government of Rhode Island; but the revolution in England of 1688, put an end to the Andros government; and had Andros been disposed to persist after that event, in oppressing the colonies, he probably would have been sent to his God without the intervention of judge or jury, but as it was, he was sent home, and the colony resumed the charter; and continued to act under it, and treated as void its vacation or surrender as an act done under duress.

Almost from the foundation of the Rhode Island Colony, there was a class of the colonists who did not fully accept the faith and order of the Baptists, or the doctrines of any recognized sect of Christians. These were denominated "Seekers." They accepted the scriptures as they were revealed to them, but awaited further revelations through the operations of the Holy Spirit. The arrival of the Quakers in this country about 1656, and in subsequent years, and the inhospitable manner in which they were received in the other colonies, induced these people to come to Rhode Island and the "Seekers" here readily affiliated with the Quakers, who soon became a very important element in the colony. And this sect has always formed an important part of the population of the State, and though now they are much scattered, there remains a few in standing amongst us, who remind us of the pastoral oaks in the summer field, they bespeak the character of those whom they represent, and are a perpetual benediction to all about them.

In Philip's war the people of Newport took but little part beyond affording succor to the white victims of the war who came to them for protection. They were shut out from the united colonies, yet they constantly kept watch and ward, fearing that they might be attacked by the Indians. Mr. Easton's house was burned by an Indian, but it is by no

means certain whether this was the result of accident or design; few of the people of Newport took part in that war.

The French war which followed the Indian war, between 1685 and 1695, was the source of considerable annoyance to the people of Newport from depredations occasioned by French cruisers.

In 1709 and 1710 the colony was called upon by the home government to fit out a force to act in conjunction with forces from the other colonies against Annapolis Royal. Newport raised between fifty and sixty men to go on this expedition. The colony to pay the expenses of this expedition, in an evil hour, commenced the issue of paper money. Though the expedition of 1710 was successful, the colony lost a vessel and incurred a large expenditure of money.

In 1730 the population of Newport was 4,640. At that time the population of Providence, which embraced what is now the county of Providence with the exception of Cumberland, East Providence, and that part of Pawtucket east of the Seekonk river, was but 3,916.

In 1738 there was belonging to Newport upwards of one hundred vessels engaged in commerce with various parts of the world.

War was declared between France and England in the spring of 1744. Our coast swarmed with French privateers, to the great detriment of the commerce of Newport, and especially of its fisheries. But privateering was a service in which two parties could engage, and as the war was not altogether unexpected, the merchants and seamen of Newport were not altogether unprepared for the emergency. There were many privateers fitted out from here and during the year 1745 more than twenty prizes, "some of them of great

value, were sent into Newport," and notwithstanding the annoyances from French privateers the commerce of the place was exceedingly prosperous during the war.

The colony fitted out its sloop Tartar with ninety men, under Captain Fones, with three companies, to go against Louisburg. Captain Fones, off Cape Breton, encountered a French frigate, and by a skillful manœuvre rendered good service to the expedition. The merchants, principally of Newport, advanced £8000 to hire a twenty gun ship for that service, and the agent of the Rhode Island colony, Richard Partridge, wrote to Mr. Ramsden, Secretary of the Lords Justices, that "in the wars of the late Queen in the expedition against Annapolis Royal and against Canada, and in the sea-war at that time, the New Englanders must confess that the privateers from the colony of Rhode Island did more execution against the enemy's privateers that infested this coast, than all the ships of the Massachusetts, or indeed, of all the colonies of those parts put together."

In 1758 the Newport Mercury was first published by James Franklin, the nephew of Dr. Benjamin Franklin.[21]

In the later French war, from 1756 to 1763, the commerce of Newport suffered much from French privateers, Newport having lost more than 100 vessels by capture. But during this period Newport had nearly 50 vessels engaged in privateering.

The passage of the stamp act, and the restricted trade laws which passed Parliament soon after the close of the war with France, greatly irritated the people of Newport. The constant presence of British cruisers, under the command of arrogant officers, interfering with the commerce of the port, and forcibly impressing seamen from our mercantile marine,

was a constant threat to the hundreds of privateersmen who had been trained to adventures of daring and desperation such as had no rival, if equalled, in the annals of naval warfare, could not readily submit to the constant menaces which they were receiving from British cruisers.

The people of this colony from the beginning, as we have seen, claimed that their charter was a compact with the British crown, a contract which even Parliament could not break. That by this charter the colony had the exclusive right of self government, including the sole right to tax themselves.

The British government claimed the right to govern and bind the colonies in all cases whatsoever. Here the parties took issue in trial by battle, which was not finally settled until the treaty of Paris in 1783.

The Rubicon was soon passed, the torch of Ate lighted, and the dogs of war let slip. The news of Concord and Lexington set the town on fire with the determination to resist the encroachment upon the rights of the country, to death.

It has been said that 1000 men from this town alone went out to engage the foe upon the sea, and 1000 such men never before went out from any one port to fight upon the deep. Many of them had been trained under such commanders as Dennis, Read, and other privateer commanders.[21 a]

What was Newport in 1774? the year before the breaking out of the war. It was full of commercial enterprise. Its maratime adventures extended everywhere not prohibited by the Home goverment. Newport had earned and was then better entitled than any other port in America to the glowing commendation bestowed by Edmund Burke in Parliament upon American maratime enterprise.

In the year 1763 from January 1st to January 1st, 1764, after the losses by the French war, there were 182 vessels cleared from Newport on foreign voyages, and 352 had cleared coastwise, and in these and in fishing vessels were employed 2200 seamen.

In the two months of June and July, 1774, there were entered at the Custom House in Newport 64 vessels from foreign voyages, 132 coastwise, and 17 engaged in the whale fishery.

The population of Newport then was 9,209 souls, but the events of the succeeding year reduced this number by 4000.

There were at this time thirty distilleries in operation in Newport.

Perhaps the people of Newport possessed in 1774 as much wealth, enterprise, intelligence and refinement as any other place in America.

There were then 300 families of Jews in Newport, represented by men of great learning, intelligence and enterprise, but they are all gone; the dwelling houses which they erected, their synagogue and their grave-yard are the only memorials left to us of their existence. Let no vandal hand of desecration ever be laid upon that synagogue or that grave-yard, but let them remain, and keep them preserved forever as venerated memorials of a frugal and useful people, who in their day and generation contributed to the prosperity and renown of Newport.

But let us pause to consider the acts which preceded the Revolution: In Rhode Island there were three causes which may be said to have induced the people to enter into the spirit of the Revolution, viz: Taxation, impressment of seamen, the jurisdiction conferred upon the admiralty courts.

To these may be added the refusal of the British government to pay a debt due to the colony for advances made by the colony during the Seven Years' War with France.

The first act of open resistance to the British authority which has come to our notice, took place at Newport on the 9th of July, 1764. On the 18th of the preceding June, rear Admiral Lord Colville, in command of his majesty's ship, the Squirrel, and other armed vessels then in American waters, advised the home government that he had directed four of the armed vessels to spread themselves in the principal harbors between Casco Bay and Cape Henlopen, in order to raise men for the navy.

The St. John, under command of Lieutenant Hill, came into the harbor of Newport on the 30th of the same June, (1764). Upon the arrival of this vessel, her commanding officer was informed that the brig Basto, from Monte Chriso, under command of one Wingate, had landed a cargo of sugar, at a place now called Bridgeport near Howland's Ferry in Tiverton. The St. John immediately started for Bridgeport, seized the cargo of sugar, ninety-three hogsheads, and the next day seized the brig as she lay above the ferry, and brought the vessel and cargo to Newport.

Upon the arrival of the vessels at Newport, it was ascertained that Lieutenant Hill had never been properly qualified on his commission, and the collector of customs reseized the cargo. Lieutenant Hill was arrested and compelled to give security that the vessel and cargo should not be taken out of the jurisdiction of the colony.

On the 9th of July, while these vessels were in the harbor of Newport, including the Admiral's ship, the Squirrel, it was alleged that three of the crew of the St. John had com-

mitted a larceny in the town; one of the offenders was caught on shore and arrested, and the town officers went on board the St. John and demanded the other offenders, but they were not given up.

The commanding officer of the St. John sent an armed boat fully manned, on shore, ostensibly to get one Thomas Moss, who it was alleged was a deserter; whether he was the thief or had been put on board by the *press gang*, does not appear, for the story is told by British officers,—at any rate the people assembled on the Long Wharf and would not permit the man to be taken away. The St. John fired a swivel at the crowd. The people took Mr. Doyle, the commanding officer of the boat into custody, and in the *melee* wounded most of the boat's crew, and they threatened to haul the schooner on shore and burn her. A sloop was manned from the wharf which sailed around the St. John, when a swivel was fired from the St. John as a signal to the Squirrel for assistance. The St. John was got underweigh, and was anchored under the protection of the guns of the Squirrel. The people from the shore went over to Fort George, now Fort Wolcott, and took possession of the guns of the fort. An officer from the Squirrel arrived at the fort to remonstrate against the use of the guns, but he was knocked down, beaten and sent away. The guns were then trained on the offending vessel and eight shots were fired at her.

Arthur Brown,[22] a native of Newport, in his miscellaneous writings, p. 227, says: "I myself saw one American fort fire upon the Squirrel, a King's ship, in 1764, in the harbor of Newport."

Captain Smith waited upon the governor and council and demanded a proper acknowledgment. He was told by them

that the men had acted by authority, and that the government would answer for it when it was necessary for them to do so.

Rear Admiral Lord Colville called upon deputy governor Wanton, in reference to the matter, and the admiral was told by the deputy governor that he must pursue his legal remedy.

The stamp act had been passed, and Dr. Moffit, Augustus Johnston and Martin Howard had been appointed to carry it into effect in Newport on the 27th of August, A. D., 1765. The people of Newport assembled on the Parade on that day, in front of the State House, having with them a cart and the effigies of three stamp officers with halters about their necks. These effigies were carried to a gallows and were hung up to public view until near night. The people assembled on the following day; and broke in the doors and demolished the furniture in the houses of Moffit and Howard. The three stamp officers took refuge on board of a British armed vessel in the harbor.

On the 30th of the same August, the collector, controller and searcher of the customs, followed the example of Moffit, Howard and Johnston,[23] and left the town, taking up their abode on board of a British armed vessel in the harbor. In September the General Assembly resolved that the British Parliament had no right to lay any internal taxes on the people of this colony, and they directed the officers of the colony to disregard such levies, and that the Assembly would indemnify the officers in so doing.

The offence of the officers of the customs at Newport, was the seizure of a sloop by the Cygnet, with a cargo of molasses, and the proceeding to condemn her before Dr. Spry, in a court of admiralty at Halifax.

On the 11th of June, 1765, the ship Maidstone, a British armed vessel in the harbor of Newport, had seized and impressed several of the inhabitants of the colony to act as seamen on board of that vessel. Governor Ward had repeatedly demanded the liberation of these men, but his demand was not complied with. After the men were impressed the boat of the Maidstone happened to be on shore, when she was taken possession of by the populace and burned.

Governor Ward addressed a very spirited letter to Captain Antrobus on the 12th of July, again demanding the liberation of the impressed seamen.

One Champlain, who was in the habit of furnishing supplies for the Maidstone, was seized, and forcibly prevented from supplying the ship, of which conduct the commander of the ship complained to Governor Ward. The latter replied that this conduct of the inhabitants was the result of the resentment they had conceived at the impressment and detention of sundry inhabitants of the town on board of the Maidstone.

In June, two vessels with cargoes, the Wainscott and the Nelly, had been seized in Providence, and had failed of being condemned in the admiralty court of Rhode Island. This was the pretext for sending the case of the sloop and cargo taken by the Cygnet to Halifax for adjudication.

The officers to execute the Stamp Act declined to accept their offices and no stamps were offered for sale in Rhode Island. The Stamp Act was repealed, but its repeal was accompanied with a declaration in favor of the right of Parliament to tax the colonies.

The officers of the colony addressed themselves with zeal to the collection of their dues from the British government

for the advances made by the colony during the French war. They had received drafts on Connecticut and Pennsylvania, which were deficient in their quotas, for a part of their claim, but there was a large balance yet due to the colony. The reply came—you first pay Moffit, Howard and Johnston for the damages done by the mob—a condition that was never complied with. And the claims of the colony have never been paid. The British government honestly owes the amount with the interest thereon, to Rhode Island now.

As soon as the Stamp Act was repealed, the government again opened a correspondence with the home government in reference to the claim of the colony for advances made during the French war. The claim was earnestly pressed, its justice was not denied, but its payment was refused.

In May, 1769, a sloop from the West Indies belonging to Providence, was seized by the armed sloop Liberty and carried to Newport.

On the 17th of the following July, the officers of the Liberty seized and brought into Newport a brig and a sloop belonging to Connecticut, taken in the Sound, without the jurisdiction of the colony. This seizure was on Monday; on Wednesday the captain of the brig went on board to obtain some necessary articles of clothing, he was informed that his clothing had been taken on board of the Liberty. He observed some of the crew of the Liberty stripping his vessel and desired them to desist, but received the most abusive language in reply. He then proposed to go on shore but missing his sword civilly inquired for it; and was informed that one of the men from the Liberty lay on it in the cabin. The captain went to the cabin for the sword and was accosted with a volley of oaths and imprecations. The captain

then took his sword, when it was seized by one of the Liberty's men who attempted to wrest it from him, but did not succeed. The captain then got into his boat with two of his men. When he was going on shore from his vessel, he was fired upon with a brace of balls from the Liberty; a swivel was then levelled at the boat but it flashed. There was a large number of people on the wharf witnessing this extraordinary proceeding. At the time Captain Read, of the Liberty, was on shore, and he was compelled by the inhabitants to order his men on shore, to answer for their conduct.

A number of men from the shore went on board and cut the cables of the Liberty, and brought the vessel to the wharf; cut away her mast, rendering her unfit for service, and scuttled her; afterwards she was got over to the north end of Goat Island and burned. The boats were dragged up the Parade, so swiftly over the pavements, that they left a stream of fire several feet long in their rear. They were taken through Broad street to what is now Liberty Park, and there they were burned.

There was no evidence of any illicit conduct against the brig. Her cargo was regularly entered at the Custom House in Newport.

While the Liberty was being destroyed, the Connecticut sloop, which had been seized, got underweigh and left the harbor, and afterwards the brig obtained a regular clearance from the Custom House and left Newport.

May 3, 1768, an affray occurred at the foot of Mary street in Newport, between some midshipmen belonging to the Senegal, a British man-of-war, in the harbor, and some of the people of the town, in which Henry Sparker was run through the body by a British officer named Thomas Curless.

In 1769, the people of Providence assembled in great numbers and violently seized one Jesse Saville, a tide-waiter belonging to the Custom House, while in the exercise of his duty, and after committing various outrages upon his person, proceeded to tar and feather him.

In April, 1771, the collector of the port of Newport, Charles Dudley[24], while in the execution of the duties of his office, prescribed by the British government, was assaulted by a body of the people, who denied the validity of his official acts, and he was roughly handled. This conduct was the subject of a letter from the Earl of Hillsborough to the governor and company of the colony, under date of July 19th, 1771, in which the Earl complains, "That it appears that some of the most violent of these outrages (on the officers of the customs), have been committed at Newport in Rhode Island, particularly in April last, when the collector of his majesty's customs at that port was, in the execution of his duty, assaulted and grossly ill-treated, even to the danger of his life, by a number of the inhabitants without any protection being given him."

The destruction of the Gaspee in 1772, is a subject too familiar for discussion at this time.

December 6th, 1774, more than forty cannon, with a large amount of powder and shot, were seized and taken from Fort George, now Fort Wolcott, and conveyed to a place of safety.

Wallace, the commander of the British force in the harbor of Newport, waited upon Governor Wanton[25] and demanded an explanation of this act. Governor Wanton told him that "It was done to prevent him from seizing the guns, and that they would be used against any enemy of the colony,"

Andrews, the British historian of the Revolution, says, "Newport, the capital of Rhode Island, was the place where these proceedings first commenced. Forty pieces of cannon, mounted in the batteries that protected the harbor, were carried off by the inhabitants. The captain of a man-of-war, having waited upon the governor, who in that Province is chosen by the Assembly, to inquire into the cause of such a proceeding, was explicitly told, that the people had seized them that they might not be used against themselves by the British forces: and that they intended to employ them in their own defence, against any one that should attack them.

"After taking this measure the Assembly met, and agreed that arms and warlike stores should be purchased with the public money. Resolutions were passed for training the inhabitants, and every man was expected to prepare himself for a vigorous defence of the rights and liberties of his country. The colony of New Hampshire had hitherto acted with great moderation during these disturbances; but on receiving intelligence of the proclamation forbidding the export of arms to the colonies and of the proceedings in consequence of it at Rhode Island, they resolved to imitate them."

The people of New Hampshire seized the cannon at Portsmouth, with the munitions of war, and stored the powder under the pulpit of the Congregational Church.

May 4th, 1776, the General Assembly of Rhode Island, in session in the State House in Newport, repealed the act securing the allegiance of the people to the British crown, and ordered that the use of the King's name be discontinued in all papers and proceedings in the colony. Thus just two months before the 4th of July, 1776, the people of Rhode Island threw off their allegiance to the British crown and set up an independent State.

The Newport Mercury, then published by Solomon Southwick,[26] and contributed to by such men as Ezra Stiles[27] and Samuel Hopkins,[28] did much to arouse the people to the duties of that time. The history of Newport can never be faithfully written without assigning to these men a prominent place among its benefactors.

After the Declaration of Independence at Philadelphia, and on the receipt of that declaration in Newport on the 18th of July, 1776, the General Assembly met and ratified the declaration, and pledged themselves to support it with their lives and fortunes. The declaration was then read to the people by Major John Handy from the Court House steps, and fifty years later it was again read by the same individual to the people, from the same place.

The General Assembly then declared the style of government of the State to be the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, and enacted a law to punish all persons who should in any way acknowledge in this colony the sovereignty of Great Britain.

The people of Newport had often met together, and had often resolved that they would die or be free. The news of the fighting at Lexington and Concord came to ready minds and willing hands. The guns fired that day echoed and re-echoed over the land, vibrated and re-vibrated, and the sound never died away, until it was hushed in the Treaty of Paris.

The legislature was at once convened, and an army of observation, consisting of fifteen hundred men, was raised. Wanton, then governor, would not commission the officers, but Henry Ward, Secretary of State, was ordered to sign the commissions and did so, no doubt, cheerfully. In the fol-

lowing October, a second regiment, of seven hundred and fifty men, was ordered to be raised, and then Wanton was removed from office.

Captain James Wallace, in command of the British sloop of war Rose, commanded the harbor of Newport for the first two years of the war, and inflicted great distress upon its inhabitants; and on the 6th of December, 1776, the British army under General Clinton took possession of the town, and retained it until November, 1779.

The battle of Rhode Island was fought in August, 1778. In July of that year, the French fleet under Count de Estaing, consisting of eleven sail of the line, and a large number of transports, arrived at Newport, but this fleet retired before the battle on the Island.

Just two years later, July 10th, 1780, Admiral Count de Rochambeau arrived with another fleet, consisting of forty-four sail, and six thousand troops.

Captain Wallace retained command of Newport harbor up to April 14th, 1776, when his force was so annoyed by the continental troops under Colonel Richmond, that he went to sea. He encountered Admiral Hopkins off Block Island, and then returned to Newport, but was again driven off. Four days later the Cabot, one of Hopkins' fleet, arrived in Newport with ten pieces of heavy cannon, a part of the armament which had been captured at New-Providence. During the skirmishing with Wallace, two row galleys from the town took a brig and a sloop, which were prizes to the British ship Scarborough. In December, 1777, a large British fleet of transports entered the harbor of Newport with the view of taking on board the army of General Burgoyne, and about

the 1st of January, 1778. the Bristol and several other British war vessels arrived, which created alarm and apprehension at Providence and throughout the State.

The Providence Gazette of January 10th, 1778, contains an appeal which exhibited the condition of affairs then prevailing in Newport. It reads thus, viz: "The charitable and well-disposed persons in this and neighboring States are requested to extend their donations to the poor and distressed people who were lately inhabitants of the Island of Rhode Island, men and women bowed down with old age and infirmities, helpless children, persons with large families, having lately been driven from their once peaceful habitations and turned into the wide world, destitute of every means to support themselves, by the cruel and rapacious Britons and their mercenaries, who have stripped them of the small pittance they were once possessed of, and have left them to depend entirely upon the charity of the good people. Their distresses loudly call upon the humanity of those whose circumstances will admit to relieve the necessities of those who are almost ready to perish."

From this time until the town was evacuated by the British, contributions were received from States, towns, parishes, religious societies, companies and individuals.

In the fall of 1777, General Spencer in command of Rhode Island, proposed to make an effort to take Newport from the enemy. The British commander received intelligence of the intentions of General Spencer, and made preparations to resist the proposed attack. He raised the stream which enters Easton's Pond, by the construction of dams, threw up a line of breastworks from Miantonomi Hill across to the pond, and sent some sixty of the inhabi-

tants of the town on board the prison ship Lord Sandwich[29]; there was also a number of the inhabitants imprisoned in the Newport jail.

General Clinton relinquished command of the British force on the Island in January, 1777, to Earl Percy. Earl Percy retained the command until the 5th of the following May, when General Prescott took the command, who was afterwards captured by Barton and his associates at the "Overing place."

In 1778, General Sullivan was ordered to collect a force to attack the British on Rhode Island.

General Prescott, having been exchanged, arrived in Newport, with the Thirty-eighth Regiment, two regiments "of Anspatch", Colonel Fanning's new corps and a detachment of artillery.

The French force under the Count de Estaing, arrived on the eleventh day of July. Two of the French ships entered the west passage and came around the north end of Conanicut. The others came in and anchored in the outer harbor. The enemy blew up the Kingfisher, 16 guns, and two galleys in the East River upon the approach of the two French ships. The Lark, 32, the Orpheus, 32, the Juno, 32, and the Cerebus, 28, were run on shore and burnt. The Grand Turk, a transport of eleven hundred tons burthen, was set on fire at her moorings off the Point; when her cables were burnt off, she drifted up against Dennis's wharf, where her hull was sunk. Fifteen transports were sunk between what is now Fort Adams and the Gull Rocks. The Flora, 32, with the Falcon sloop of war, 18, and about thirty unarmed vessels of various sizes were sunk in the inner harbor. The Flora was finally raised and put afloat by the

Americans, after the evacuation of the town by the British. Sir Robert Pigot superseded General Prescott in the command of the British army before the battle of Rhode Island.

The French naval force would not co-operate with the army, and the battle of Rhode Island of August 28th and 29th, 1778, was lost to the Americans. In the following November, there were twelve ships of the line and two frigates in the harbor of Newport. On the 22nd of December, 1778, occurred the snow-storm known as "the Hessian snow-storm," in which considerable numbers of the British force were frozen to death. The British left the town, October 25th, 1779.

The Quaker field was their forage-yard. Their wood yard was on the north side of Church street, and General Prescott's head-quarters was the Bannister house on the corner of Spring and Pelham streets. In summer the British soldiers were quartered in tents, and in winter in the houses in town. It is said that four hundred and eighty buildings of various kinds were destroyed in Newport during the war.

The freemen convened in town-meeting at the Friends' meeting-house on the 3rd of November, 1779, for purpose of re-organizing the town government. Town-meetings were afterwards held in this meeting-house, and then in the Jewish synagogue.

The winter of 1779-80 was the most severe on record. The people of Newport were then destitute of almost all of the necessaries of life. They took down George Rome's house and store, and broke up Joseph Wanton, Jr.'s ship, and distributed them as fuel among the poor. The story of

"the hard winter" of 1780 is too distressing and too familiar to be dwelt upon.

The public buildings of the town including State house, jail and churches, had all been left in an untenantable condition with the exception of Trinity church, and the pastor of that church went off with the British army. The Rev. Gardner Thurston, a Baptist minister, was permitted to occupy this church for some years after the war.

The British carried off the records of the town, and these were sunk in Hell Gate, and were so injured that the greater part was rendered worthless for any practical purpose.

On the morning of March 6th, 1781, General Washington crossed Conanicut and landed on the Long Wharf in Newport, to confer with the French officers then here, and to induce them to co-operate in an expedition against the enemy in Virginia.

After the evacuation of Newport by the British, the people of the town continued to fit out a few privateers. The Rochambeau, 12, under the command of the celebrated Oliver Read, was fitted out, and took several prizes.

At the close of the war, John Goodrich, who had been an ardent Loyalist during the war, applied to Newport for permission to settle here with his family, and proposed to bring with him twenty vessels to engage in commerce, but considering the active part Goodrich had taken in the war, the people of the town by a large majority voted that he should not settle in the town.

During the Revolution, there were in the Provincial armies 231,959 men. Of these were furnished from New England 118,350, more than half of the entire force; Newport alone, it has been said, furnished 1000 men to the naval

service of the colonies. Rhode Island furnished to the Continental army 11,692 men out of a population of 50,000. I have been told that at one time Rhode Island had more soldiers in the Revolutionary army than all of the States south of Mason and Dixon's line, and during the latter part of the old French war and after the close of that war, Rhode Island was called upon and did, at a very great sacrifice, actually furnish a very considerable force for the defence of the northern frontier of the colony of New York. Upon these services with others, the States of New England, under the Constitution, assert their rights in the American Union.

In Newport, as elsewhere, there were Loyalists. Some of them took an active part in favor of the crown; these left the colony. Conspicuous among them were the Romes, Brentons, Halliburtons, Wantons and others. There was another class whose sympathies were with the crown, and who, without being open, active enemies, declined to give their adherence to the Revolutionary cause. When General Heath took command of the Continental forces on the Island, the town called upon all persons to subscribe to a test oath, and those who refused to subscribe, had their names taken, and the same constituted what was known as the "Black List," and was handed to General Heath, as being the names of suspected persons who were to be dealt with in an emergency. That list remains yet among the records of Newport, and may be consulted by any one who has the curiosity to examine it.

At the close of the Revolutionary war Newport presented a sad spectacle. Hundreds of buildings had been destroyed, the vessels and wharves had gone to decay together. The Loyalists had gone into exile, and many of their estates had been confiscated. Non-combatants, who early in the war had

left their homes, had become domiciled elsewhere, the business capital of the place had been exhausted, the war had forced business into other channels and its men of affairs had followed their trade to other localities. The forests and groves of native trees had been cut down, the farm fences had been wasted, farm stock had been consumed, and farm tools had been worn out; schools broken up, churches scattered, houses deserted, buildings out of repair and ruin was stamped on everything which eight years before was alive with prosperity and full of every promise that success in its full tide would crown the efforts of an industrious, intelligent and enterprising people. Upon the return of peace Newport had neither the men nor the means to restore or replace the ravages which war had made.

At about the time of peace Dr. Ezra Stiles returned to to visit the remnant which was left of his devoted church. He had accepted the Presidency of Yale college, and was in the enjoyment of great popularity in New Haven. In his diary is an entry which states a fact, and conveys an eloquent expression of his devotion to the home from which he had been exiled. "I judge," says he, "that about 300 dwelling houses have been destroyed in Newport. The town is in ruins, but, with Nehemiah, I could prefer the very dust of Zion to the gardens of Persia, and the broken walls of Jerusalem to the palaces of Shushan."

Brissot, the Girondist, while he was in exile from France in 1788, visited Newport. He was not a friendly critic, but draws a picture of what he saw, which we may study with profit. After speaking of Newport before the war, he adds: "Since the peace everything is changed, the reign of solitude is only interrupted by groups of idle men standing with

folded arms at the corner of the streets, houses falling to ruin, miserable shops which present nothing but a few coarse stuffs, or baskets of apples, and other articles of little value; grass growing in the public square in front of the court of justice, rags stuffed in the windows. * * * * Everything announces misery." The unkind Frenchman, after denouncing paper money and its consequences, adds: "But in the midst of these disorders you hear nothing of robberies, of murders, or of mendacity, for the poor do not degrade themselves so as to abjure ideas of equity and shame. * * * The Rhode Islander does not beg and he does not steal."

Newport was then an asylum for famine; the war had destroyed it, and taken from its population the means of rebuilding it. They had liberty, but nothing else. The times were unpropitious. The Revolution was followed soon by the quasi war with France, and the war between England and France, involving the orders in council, the decrees of Berlin and Milan. Then came the embargo of 1808, which was followed by the war of 1812. These events visited disaster upon the efforts made to revive the trade of the place, drove commerce from the port, and labor from the workshops, so that for fifty years after the Revolution there was scarcely a new house built in the town.

At the close of the Revolution, America was grateful to France for the aid it had given her in its contest with England for national existence. The natural attractions of Newport, and of the island of Rhode Island, had fascinated the Frenchmen, and France, as an evidence of American gratitude, coveted the cession of this island, on the plea that it would afford a suitable naval station for France, and that

it would be impossible for the United States to defend the island against Great Britain, but fortunately for us, and fortunately for the American union, the advances of France in this negotiation were resisted, and this island to-day remains the garden of the Republic.

The experiences of mankind demonstrate that a circulating medium without any intrinsic value and depending alone for its conversion or redemption upon the public faith, that when it becomes highly inconvenient for the public to redeem its pledge, the result is disastrous to both public and private credit.

The first issue of paper money in Rhode Island was for the purpose of enabling the colony in 1710, to fit out an expedition against Annapolis Royal.

Paper money was finally made a legal tender, by an act of the General Assembly. The subject was one of active party contests, and finally visited upon the colony discredit and pecuniary embarrassment. The merchants and people of Newport, with the exception of a few ambitious politicians, were constant in their opposition to the paper money party. The paper money party opposed the adoption of the federal constitution, which the people of Newport ardently promoted

At the September term of the Supreme Court, 1786, held in Newport, occurred one of the most remarkable trials in the judicial history of the State. It was the case of Trevett vs. Weeden. Weeden kept a market and Trevett had purchased of him butcher's meat, and had offered to pay for it in paper money. Weeden declined to accept the tender, and Trevett filed his information against Weeden to recover the statutory penalty for his refusal. Weeden defended the suit on the ground of the unconstitutionality of the statute. The

trial was exciting, party spirit ran high, the judges had been elected by a paper money legislature, and at the next spring election they were to be dependent upon the same body for a re-election, yet the court kept its integrity and declared the law to be unconstitutional. The General Assembly brought the court before it to give reasons for its decision. The members of the court told the Assembly that they were responsible for their judgments only to God and their own consciences.

In May, 1784, Newport was incorporated under a city form of government. In 1787 the city had assumed the defense of a suit of Nicholas Easton vs. Giles Sanford, for taking gravel from Easton's beach. Easton procured the signatures of 105 persons to a petition to repeal the city charter, as a retaliatory measure for interfering in his law-suit, and though there were 400 remonstrants against granting the prayer of the petition, Easton and his party prevailed, for the majority of the people of Newport were hostile to the paper money of that time, and were not in favor with the party in power. March 1st of this year Peter Edes started the Newport Herald, based upon opposition to paper money.

In 1708, April 17th, the board of trade wrote to the Governor of the colony in reference to the African slave trade, informing him of "the absolute necessity that a trade so beneficial to the kingdom should be carried on to the greatest advantage." At that time the population of Newport was 2,203, and the entire population of the colony was 7,181.

The trade of Newport then was with Jamaica, Nevis, Barbadoes, St. Christopher's, Mt. Sarratt and Bermuda, and the Salt Islands, South and North Carolina, Virginia and Maryland, and the other colonies, Madeira, Fayal, Surinam and Curacoa.

After having been stimulated by the home government, though but few slaves were brought into this colony, there were persons in Newport who were engaged to a considerable extent in the slave trade; but while this is true, it is equally true that Newport had some of the earliest and most effective enemies of this traffic and of human slavery, who if not the originators, were the warm and earnest friends of African colonization.

Newport has almost always sustained a good classical school. Frazer's school was thorough in its instruction, and Rogers' school was known the country over. The object of a school is to direct and train the mind of the young for future usefulness, and if the success of a school is to be judged by the success of the pupils who attend it, the old Rogers school should be classed among the first institutions of its kind then in the country. The new Rogers school now so full of promise of future usefulness, if it rivals or equals the fame of the school where the Channings, the Perrys, the Allstons, Pickingses and Calhouns were trained, it will amply repay the bounty of its benevolent founder, and will lay the foundation for a new era in the history of the city. Our system of education is supplemented by the Redwood and the People's libraries. Of the former institution its history has been often written; of the latter I can only say its benevolent founder and benefactor is yet among us, and the time has not come to write its history.

Newport was subject to conflicting influences at the time of the breaking out of the war of 1812. It had had a terrible experience of the effects of war during the Revolution. The orders in council, and the decrees of Berlin and Milan had affected its commerce adversely. The impressment of its seamen into a British service, and an attempt to hold

them even in its own port,[30] had incensed the old privateersmen, and stirred the blood of younger seamen, and aroused the resentment of all right minded men. The embargo of Mr. Jefferson was a restraint upon their trade, inflicted by their own countrymen, that seemed to effectually check their efforts to regain something of their former prosperity. Then there was a considerable class of men full of enterprise, accustomed to the dangers of the sea—men who had known and been instructed by a race of seamen whose actual adventures surpassed all the tales of fiction, who were anxious to go out under the stars and stripes in defence of "free trade and sailor's rights," and to contest the right of the Red Cross of England, unchallenged, to rule the seas.

In the exigencies of that war it became apparent that the force on the northern frontier was to be strengthened. The British fleet on Lake Erie was officered and manned by seamen who fought under Nelson at Trafalgar; and a force was to be selected which was to finish vessels begun, and construct other vessels to meet in deadly conflict the most chivalrous veterans of the British navy. In command of the flotilla in Newport harbor, was one who was of a daring line; he had been trained in our schools, and was in command of those he had known and who had known him from childhood. This force was ordered to Lake Erie. There they cut down the forest, threw it upon the lake, and manning it, went out upon that great inland sea to meet the conquerors of the armada of France, and the result of the battle of the 10th of September, 1813, was recorded in those memorable words now familiar and to be immortal, "We have met the enemy and they are ours."

Yonder granite shaft marks the grave, but history has embalmed for immortality the memory of Perry and his

Newport comrades, and the valor which conquered on Lake Erie.

After the treaty of peace of 1815, Newport had become so exhausted, that little effort was made to regain anything of its former prosperity until subsequent to 1830, when an attempt was made to revive the whaling business, and to engage in manufacturing enterprises, and the natural attractions of the place began to be better known and more highly appreciated as a summer resort.

In the attempt to subvert the charter government by force in 1842, Newport was strongly on the side of the government, and perhaps it is not too much to say, that had not Newport thrown her influence so strongly in favor of the government, the result of that contest in the State, upon which the success of popular government everywhere might have been pivoted, possibly, would have been in doubt.

In the late Southern rebellion, Newport, true to her history, was earnest and prompt and faithful and continual in her support of the government, but on an occasion like this, it is hardly proper that I should attempt to open the smouldering embers, or to remove the ashes from the wasting fire. The facts, however, exist, and the history and honor of the city is preserved.

During the last century, wonderful strides have been made in the advancement of mechanical science and industrial art. Watt and Fulton, Stephenson, Morse and Arkwright, have all lived and died within that period, but their wonderful inventions survive to ameliorate the conditions of human life and to contribute to the civilization and happiness of the human race.

The grandest scene in the centennial exhibition now open in Philadelphia; the most exalted personal achieve-

ment, was on that opening day, of a Rhode Island mechanic standing with his engines, the work of his own genius, which were to furnish the power to operate the vast machinery there to be put in motion, while a president and emperor with hands upon the wheels awaited the direction of Mr. Corliss to start those mighty forces which were to move as with life into action, the complicated mechanism before him, and to put upon exhibition the condition of mechanical art in all the States of christendom. That scene was worthy of being represented on canvass, to be placed upon the walls of every workshop and hung up in every school room in the land.

Every old house in Newport, every grave-yard, indeed every field, almost every foot of ground, is associated with some man or event worthy of being consecrated in history. By yonder shore the devout Mary Dyer often bowed in worship, and there moved by an inner consciousness to duty, resolved to face opposition and proclaim the gospel of peace in Boston to friends from whom she had been exiled. She went and was persecuted there, and again and again returned to her home here to receive another message from the teachings of the spirit to go to the Puritan commonwealth and there receive a martyr's crown. Here, too, are the graves of Clarke, Coddington, Sanford, Coggeshall, Bull, Brenton, Easton, and their compatriots who preferred liberty in exile among savages, to the intolerance and oppressions of their former associates. There is where the Baptists of Newport claim to have established the oldest church of their faith in America. There, too, is old Trinity, where Berkeley used to preach, near by where he wrote his "Alcephron" and his "Course of Empire." And yonder is the Old Stone Mill, the enigma to antiquarians. Here, too, was once the home of DeCourcy,[31] Sir Charles Wager,[32] and Arthur

Brown, Dr. Waterhouse,[33] Sir Brenton Halliburton, Admiral Sir Jahleel Brenton, and his brother, Edward Pelham Brenton, the philanthropists and the historians of the British navy. Here, too, lived that rude, daring character, known in history as James Murray, otherwise Lillibridge,[34] who towards the close of the last century acted so conspicuous a part in the events which transpired in Hindoostan.

Here, too, in the house, now the Children's Home, was born William Ellery Channing,[35] whose philosophy in religion was the refrain of the harsh theology of the Puritans, and which was to react upon the teachings of the Puritans until there is danger that the seed which they sowed to the wind may yet be gathered in the whirlwind. We, too, have the Redwood Library, the headquarters of Washington, Rochambeau, Lafayette and Prescott, the house of Perry and the place where the Decatur[36] family lived; but the mind wearies of these details.

Washington wrote of the excellence of our climate; Volney, the infidel Frenchman, admired its salubrity; Chastelleaux in his enthusiasm desired to be buried in our soil, that the roar of our ocean might perpetually sing a requiem over his grave. Count de Segar and Lausanne and St. John, were enchanted with the revolutionary society of Newport, as was Blanchard and DuxPonts; and our lovely Island Home dearer, a thousand times dearer to those of us who stand here among ancestral graves than to others, annually receives a tribute to its attractions from thousands of the opulent and refined made up of those from every Christian land. Channing thanked God that this beautiful island was the place of his birth. I thank God that the ancestors of my children stood by the cradle of the Rhode Island colony, assisted in nurturing it into a hardy manhood, and that this ancient municipality holds their ashes entombed in its bosom.

To-day our nation begins a new era in its history, with ampler means at its control to surpass in the future all of the achievements of the past, for we have vast fields of our country yet unsubdued and uncultivated. The commerce of the world is open to our enterprises, and we are at full liberty to gather the harvest from our industry in every land; free education is within the reach of all, and there is a pulpit in every neighborhood from which all are instructed in their duties to man and to God.

True, there are immoralities and corruptions practiced over the land. But so it has been since our first parents parted in sorrow from the Eden of their rest; virtue has since then been warring with vice, and men have been gathering and consuming that for which they have not toiled. But in no age of the world has the popular conscience been quicker to detect or resent crime or wrong than in that age in which a benevolent Providence has cast our fortunes.

One hundred years of our national existence is completed to-day. Three millions of people have been increased to forty-five millions; thirteen colonies have become thirty-eight sovereign and independent States. At the beginning of the century the colonies, in poverty and distress, were engaged in a war for existence. They were contending with the most powerful empire on earth. Now we are at peace and in the enjoyment of a larger measure of liberty, of prosperity, and happiness than is vouchsafed to any other people on earth. The ballot is the moter which keeps in operation the whole machinery of our government; the intelligence, integrity, industry and enterprise of our population is the bulwark which the Republic has reared in defence of its institutions of government. Our nation's flag is respected on every sea, and our country is the hope of the oppressed of every land. True, slavery revolted against the government

and struck the country, but the blow recoiled and slavery was killed. Now let us heal the wound that war has made, stretch out our arms to bridge the chasm, and strike hands with our repentant, offending brothers; bind them anew in the bonds of union, and engage them in the divine mission of perpetuating our republic, and of realizing the grand idea of the Declaration of Independence, that all men are free and equal; we with them will enlighten the ignorant, encourage the weak, elevate the down trodden, stimulate the enterprise of all, and embark our country upon the new century in its high and holy mission of raising man everywhere to a higher and better condition, nearer, and yet nearer fitted for the Paradise of celestial rest.

The prosperity and growth of every place depends upon the industry, energy, enterprise, intelligence, economy and integrity of the people who inhabit it. What Newport needs in entering upon another century is men—men inspired by a genius that will evoke and utilize all of the forces of our population to develop the best results to themselves and to the city of which these forces are capable. We should never be unmindful that there is a useful field of employment open to every man and woman in the land; no person of a sound body and a sound mind has the moral right to live like the sloth, and without exertion, to live only to eat, drink, sleep and die. If all of the resources of our people could be called out and economized in promoting the growth of the city, the city would not only surpass all of its ancient achievements, but would outstrip in its growth and advancement all of its contemporaries.

Our shores are accessible to the commerce of every land, every industrial art is within our grasp, capital is the saving of labor, and labor is open to all, so that capital is within the

reach of all. The unemployed and wasted forces, including the wastes incident to useless and vicious habits, and of overstocked trades, if skillfully directed and economically employed, would in a few years build a city.

A word in reference to the day we celebrate. This is the nation's Sabbath—the day in our calendar consecrated by the grandest declaration of human rights recorded in the history of the human race. Half a century from the day when this declaration was promulgated, Adams and Jefferson, its framers and defenders, died. Six years later, James Monroe, who had held the highest office in the gift of the people, died on the anniversary of the nation's birthday. In the late civil war the rebel hosts were turned back from Gettysburg, and the rebel fortress at Vicksburg surrendered on the 4th of July, and then the fortunes of the rebellion began to ebb, and by these deeds this day was again consecrated to observance. Were these coincidences in time of the happening of events the results of chance? Is there not something in them to stimulate in us the inquiry whether they were not designed by a superintending Providence to induce us to perform our duty, and arouse in us a sense of responsibility to our country?

All that we have of protection of persons and property we hold from the State. The State can demand for its defence to the last penny of our fortunes, and then take our persons to fight its battles. I have said enough to-day to recall to your minds the sufferings, the trials, and the sacrifices which have been made for the blessings which we enjoy. I would to God that I had the power to infuse into the mind of every freeman in the land a true sense of the responsibility upon us all to preserve for ourselves and posterity in their utmost purity, the institutions of government which have come down to us.

Biographical.

SIR CHARLES WAGER.

Toward the close of the sixteenth and in the beginning of the seventeenth century, Newport had become a place of considerable commercial importance. It was at this time that ship captains, who sailed out of Newport, were among the more important personages in the colony, and used to wear cocked hats, "kneed-breeches," and ruffled shirts. At that period, Capt. John Hull was conspicuous among these captains. He had taken on board his ship an apprentice boy by the name of Charles Wager. This boy remained with Captain Hull until he became Hull's chief mate. The good captain was a Quaker, and a good story is told of Hull and his *protege* which illustrates the trials to which *Friends* have at some times been subjected, and how unexpected a change took place in the fortunes of young Wager. Hull's ship had left England, and with a leading breeze was pressing for her American home, when one of those French *corsairs*, not unfrequently encountered at that time, half privateer and half pirate, bore up across Hull's track and backed topsails to await the approach of the Quaker craft. The latter was full manned, as well as was his would-be adversary. The situation was at once taken in by all on board. But what was to be done? The good captain had to stand by the *testimonies* of his faith. Young Wager answered this question. He told the captain that he had better go below. The captain took this advice and left the mate in command. The mate spread every inch of canvass he could open to the breeze, and directed the good ship, as he supposed, for the broadside of his adversary. But the captain, though he had

retired from the command and had withdrawn from duty, continued to see what was passing, and was heard by the mate to say: "Charles, if thee is determined to run that vessel down, thee had better luff a little." Charles took his captain's advice, and in a moment more Captain Hull's staunch ship crushed in the side of the corsair. Then came one of those terrible hand to hand sea fights that distinguished that time. The contest was for the possession of Hull's ship, for the other was disabled, and the contest was for life and death. Men were cut to pieces or were thrown into the sea, or were otherwise dispatched as quickly as possible. Of this struggle the good Quaker was an active observer. He noticed that a rope loosely hanging overboard was suddenly drawn taut; his quick eye divined the cause. He caught his hatchet, and in an instant was in the waist of his ship by the rail. A stalwart foe was using the rope to board the Quaker vessel; a well aimed blow of the hatchet parted the line, and the Quaker captain calmly remarked, "friend, if thee wants that line thee can have it." The mate saved the ship; she went on her voyage, and the story of the gallant conduct of the mate eventually reached the British Admiralty, into whose service he was taken. This gallant officer finally became Sir Charles Wager, first lord of the British Admiralty. Upon a bill promoted by him in the British parliament in 1740, to promote the efficiency of the British navy, Mr. Pitt, afterwards Earl of Chatham, made one of his most effective speeches.

The name of Wager, preserved in some of our Narragansett and Conanicut families descended from Capt. John Hull, is derived from the apprentice of their ancestor.

In my childhood I attended school, kept in a house in which a descendant of Captain John Hull resided; an elderly gentleman and his wife made up the family; they were poor then, but had seen better days. The engraved likeness of Sir Charles Wager, highly prized and well cared for by its possessor, hung upon the wall above the fireplace, and though more than forty-five years have elapsed since I saw it, I re-

member how it looked, and the interest with which old Mr. Robert Hull told the story of the life of the apprentice to his ancestor.

Sir Charles Wager was born October 26, 1666. June 7th, 1692, was appointed captain of the Razee, fire ship, and from her he was soon removed to the Samuel and Henry, 44. In 1696 he had command of the Woolwich, a 54, employed in the channel fleet. Soon after the accession of Queen Ann, he took command of the Hampton-Court, of 70 guns. and was with Lake at the taking of Majorca. Upon his return from the Mediterranean, he was dispatched in 1707 with a squadron of nine ships of the line to the West Indies, having under his convoy a valuable fleet of merchantmen. Here he received information that the French Admiral Du Casse had put to sea for the purpose of protecting some Spanish galleons. On the 28th of May, 1708, he descried the enemy's fleet, comprised of 17 sail, galleons and ships of war, standing towards Carthagena; he took the largest two of the enemy's ships. He shortly afterwards, by a vessel from England, received a commission as rear admiral of the blue, and on the 2d of December, 1708, was made rear admiral of the white. He remained in the West Indies until 1709, where his fleet succeeded in capturing many prizes. On his return to England he was made rear admiral of the red, and on the 8th of December, of that year, he received the order of Knighthood. After the accession of George I, he was appointed commander-in-chief in the Mediterranean, and at about the same time comptroller in the navy, and on the 16th of June, 1716, he was made vice admiral of the blue, and on the first of the ensuing February, was made vice admiral of the white, and on the 15th of March, vice admiral of the red, and in 1718 was appointed lord of the admiralty, when he resigned the comptrollership of the navy. He performed many active services at sea, and in June, 1731, was made admiral of the blue, when he took command of a large armament, and was charged with the duty of executing the treaty of Venice. Having performed this duty he returned to England.

June 21st, 1733, Sir Charles Wager was made first lord of the admiralty; in the January following he was made admiral of the white, and on the 19th of March, 1741, resigned his place at the admiralty board. He was then appointed treasurer of the navy, which place he held up to the time of his death, May 24th, 1743. He was buried in Westminster Abbey, where a splendid monument was erected to his memory.

Tristam Hull was an inhabitant, and liable to bear arms in the town of Yarmouth, in Plymouth colony, in 1643, and purchased from the Indians a tract of land for the town of Barnstable, July 19th, 1644. Hull was a master mariner. In 1657, an old man in Boston by the name of Nicholas Upsall, who was a member of the Boston church, had disapproved of the treatment of the then recently arrived Quakers; indeed, Upsall was counted a Quaker, for on the 14th of the previous October, he had been found guilty of this heresy, and had been sentenced to a fine of £20 and to banishment. Captain Hull being in Boston, took Upsall with him to Sandwich. Plymouth colony not being any more reconciled to the Quaker than Massachusetts, sentenced Upsall "to be carried out of the government by Tristram Hull, who had brought him."

Tristram Hull had two sons—Joseph, born in June, 1652, John, born in March, 1664. These sons were both Quakers, and both came to and settled in Rhode Island. Joseph settled in Kingstown. He had a son Tristram who married Elizabeth Dyer, a grand-daughter of Mary Dyer, who was executed in Boston. John Hull married Alice Teddeman in 1684, and settled at Newport in 1687, out of which port he sailed for many years, and finally, he purchased and went to live upon a farm in the north part of Jamestown, where he died.

After Captain Hull retired to his farm, a British fleet, probably upon its return from a West India expedition, visited the harbor of Newport. Captain Hull, upon this occasion, called at the coffee house to pay his respects to his

former *protege.* He met a lieutenant, and in the vocabulary of the captain's sect, he asked the lieutenant, "where is Charles ?" This manner of speech the junior officer regarded as an insult to his admiral. The admiral being at once apprised of the affair, stepped out and rebuked his subordinate by saying to him, "Captain Hull is my honored master."

Several letters recognizing the relations which existed between Sir Charles Wager and Captain Hull, are yet extant.

Admiral Goodson, said to have been the grandfather of Sir Charles Wager, was an officer of the British navy in the time of the commonwealth, but for having expressed some opinion in favor of the restoration of the Stuarts to the throne, was retired from office. At the restoration of Charles II, he was overlooked, and he finally came to America. His descendants intermarried with some of the first families in Newport. There is a tradition that he was buried in the Hull burying ground at the north end of Conanicut.

Admiral Goodson commanded the rear admiral's squadron of eleven ships, in the great naval battle with the Dutch, fought on the 2d and 3d of June, 1653, in which the Dutch were defeated, and which virtually ended that war. The next year, 1654, Admiral Goodson commanded the fleet under Penn, at the conquest of Jamaica. When they returned to England, Penn was thrown into the Tower of London, and Goodson was rewarded by the Council of State with a large gratuity. On the death of Cromwell in 1659, Admiral Goodson and his son-in-law, the father of Sir Charles Wager, "dreading a renewal of civil bloodshed," implored Monk to listen to terms of accommodation with the committee of safety, composed of army officers. This accommodation resulted in the restoration of the Stuarts, and the retirement of Goodson. Wager, his son-in-law, remained in the navy, and died in 1665. Goodson was superseded, it is said, on account of "conformity."

The Wagers were connected with, or allied to, the family of Sir Thomas Teddeman, into which family captain John

Hull married. It would be interesting to know if Charles Wager, the orphan grandson of Admiral Goodson, was brought to Newport by Admiral Goodson, or through the influence of the Teddemans he was put an apprentice to Captain Hull, in England. One account says that Wager came to Newport when an infant, and another account says that he came when a youth. It is quite certain that the character of this remarkable man was moulded and formed in Newport.

In 1775, a party from the British fleet, under command of Captain Wallace, went to Conanicut, killed one John Martin, and burned several dwelling houses, among which was the dwelling of Wager Hull, which contained most of the "old papers" belonging to the Hull family. Had these papers been preserved, no doubt but that they would have reflected light upon the lives of Admiral Goodson and Sir Charles Wager.

JAMES LILLIBRIDGE.

This extraordinary person is said to have been born in Exeter, Rhode Island, about the year 1765, but no mention of his birth appears upon the records of Exeter, or of his mother having resided in that town. They resided in Newport before 1774. He was the natural child of a Miss Mowrey. He was known by the name of his reputed father James Lillibridge.

He lived on the Long Wharf in Newport, with his mother and sisters, in the house now known as "the Bohanna house." It is said that his mother and sisters were disreputable persons, and that in consequence of a family quarrel, he left home and went to sea. Lillibridge changed his surname to that of Murray, and was afterwards known as James Murray. He was bound as an apprenticeto some mechanical trade before going to sea. After following the seas for a time he arrived at Tranquebar. on the coast of Coromandel, about 1790, and sometime in that year, having heard that certain Frenchmen, who had entered the service of the Indian princes, had arisen rapidly in rank and fortune, he determined to hazard the evasion of the vigilance of the British officers, and to take service under some one of the Mahratta chiefs. He reached the province and entered the service of Holkar, one of the most formidable of these chiefs. Instead of uniting against the common enemy, these petty sovereigns for a half century had been engaged in an intestine warfare. In the hazardous enterprises of these inglorious wars, Murray "became conspicuous for his invincible courage and undaunted presence of mind, as well as for his personal prow-

ess." He remained in the Mahratta service for fifteen years, during which he was actively engaged in every species of peril and hardship known to that terrible warfare, from Cape Cormorin to the borders of Persia.

An act of humanity finally brought him to the notice of the British government in India, and alienated him from the prince whom he had so faithfully served. A number of British officers had been taken prisoners, by him, to Holkar, and by Holkar had been ordered to be instantly put to the sword. At the imminent risk of his own life, Murray interposed to save the lives of these officers. This act relaxed his hold upon Holkar, and disgusted Murray with the service of his barbarous master; so Murray contrived to get possession of a considerable district of country which he subjected to his own government. So desperate was his fortune at one time, that his whole force was reduced to eight badly armed men, but from this depression he finally succeeded in firmly establishing himself in his new sovereignty. When the war broke out between the British government and Scindia, in which Holkar embraced the cause of the latter, Murray surrendered his sovereignty and proclaimed the supremacy of the British government in his principality, and at the head of seven thousand native cavalry he entered the service of the British government under Lord Lake. It is said that the British general received him with the greatest respect, and that the fullest confidence was reposed in him. He retained the independent command which he brought to the British service, and was actively employed in the most daring and dangerous enterprises of that terrible war.

At the siege of Bhuntpore, where the British army lost nearly ten thousand men in four successive attempts to storm the place, Murray was in continual action, and earned the title of being "the best partisan officer in India." At this time Holkar was in command of an immense body of Indian cavalry on the flank of the English army, and Murray had the opportunity of meeting his old chieftain where they could

settle their old quarrel, an opportunity of which it is but fair to suppose was fully availed of by the partisan warrior.

Murray had acquired a large fortune, and at the conclusion of the war his rank was reduced and he was retired from the army on half pay. Upon this being done he determined to return to his native country and "live a life of luxury and tranquility."

The officers of the army to whose country he had rendered such distinguished services while the war was going on, treated him with the greatest consideration, but upon the restoration of peace they treated him with comparative indifference; this, no doubt, assisted him to form his resolution to return to his own country. He remitted his funds to Calcutta, and shortly after repaired thither, determined to take passage from thence to the United States. This was in 1806. He was then yet in the prime of life, and might well hope for distinction in his own country.

A few days before the time fixed for his embarkation he gave a splendid entertainment to his acquaintances in Calcutta. After dinner, when elated with wine, he undertook the entertainment of his guests by riding his Arabian charger, which had carried him in the war, over the dining table. The horse's foot became entangled in the carpet, and threw his rider. Murray received internal injuries, which induced mortification, and he died in a few days. He was said to have been the best horseman in India, and unrivalled in the use of the broad sword. He is described as having been in ordinary life, a mild and amiable man, but when aroused into anger he became ferocious and ungovernable. He was of middling height, pleasing expression of countenance, and had great bodily strength and agility. He is said to have been attacked upon one occasion by seven Mahratta horsemen, of whom he killed three, and then effected his escape from the other four. "Many were his wild and romantic adventures, and hair breadth escapes, but their history is but imperfectly known, for he was modest and not given to boasting of his own exploits. Though he had been from his home

since his boyhood, he retained a wonderful attachment for his native country, and he sometimes loaned considerable sums of money to persons upon no other assurance than that they were Americans." After his death a portion of his fortune, some $20,000 it is said, was transmitted to his mother and sisters at Newport, upon the receipt of which they changed their residence, and became candidates for respectability, but they afterwards returned to Newport.

Such is a brief outline of a man who, without the advantages of an education, went out into the world in search of adventures and to seek his fortune. He fought nabobs, rajahs, natives of the country, and British soldiers on the opposite side of the globe. The history of India for twenty years is the record of his achievements and of his wonderful daring. He not only fought Scindia, but the forces of the nabobs of Arcot, of Oudre and Surat, and under the direction of Major General Arthur Wellesly, afterwards Duke of Wellington, and Lord Lake, he took Indore and Malwa, and with equal valor he fought on the plains, in the mountain passes, and among the jungles of Hindoostan, either under the cross of St. George, or in defence of the claims of some native master. The most marked tribute of his power in the field is the inference to be drawn from an article in the treaty finally entered into between the governor general of India and Scindia, that the latter should never thereafter take an American into his service or permit one to enter his dominions

Appendix.

APPENDIX.

(a.) The first settlers of Newport found the present site of the city a thickly wooded swamp. It is said that tall forest trees were then growing from the bottom to the summit of the hill. That these were first cut away, until they came down to low, marshy ground, made impenetrable by a dense underbrush. Nicholas Easton, William Brenton, and Thomas Hazard are said to have contracted with three Indians to clear up the underbrush for a coat; the large brass buttons on which were taken off, strung together, and were then used as a necklace or ornament by one of the Indians. The Indians fired the underbrush, and that cleared the low land on the margin of the harbor. Much sand and gravel, it is said, was filled in upon the low ground. Mr. Jaffrey, William Dyer, and John Clarke were the committee of the proprietors to lay out the town lots. Thames street was first laid out one mile in length. The first lots were laid off on the north side of what is now Washington Square. To the lots on the east side of Thames street was assigned the space opposite on the west between the street and the water. The first landing place was at a point of land then projecting into the water north of the present site of the Long Wharf. At the time of the first settling of Newport, Brenton's Neck and Goat Island are said to have been covered with large forest trees.

The persons who signed the original compact for settling Newport, were William Coddington, Nicholas Easton, John Coggeshall, William Brenton, John Clarke, Jeremiah Clarke, Thomas Hazard and William Dyer.

The following persons were admitted inhabitants soon after, probably in 1639, viz:

Samuel Hutchinson, Richard Awards, Edward Wilcox, John Briggs, William Writhington, Samuel Gorton, John Wickes, Ralph Earle, William Cowlie, Jeffrey Champlin, Richard Sarle, Thomas Spicer, Robert Potter, Nathaniel Potter, William Needham, Sampson Shatton, Adam Mott, John Mott, Robert Jeffreys, Thomas Hill, James Tarr, John Roome, Robert Gilham, Mathew Sutherland, William Baker, Anthony Paine, William Richardson, Thomas Clarke, John Johnson, William Hall, George Gardiner, George Parker, Erasmus Bullock, George Cleet, Nicholas Browne, Richard Borden, Richard Maxon, John Sloff, Thomas Beeder, John Tripp, Osmond Dontch, John Marshall, Robert Stanton, Joseph Clarke, Robert Carr, George Layton John Arnold, William Havens, Thomas Layton, Edward Poole, Nicholas Davis, John Moore, George Potter, William Quick.

ANN HUTCHINSON.

(1.) Ann Hutchinson removed to East Chester, in the colony of New York, where after much opposition from the Indians she succeeded in building a frame house. But she had not dwelt there long when the Indians had a quarrel with some Dutch people that dwelt near her, but the dint of the rage of the Indians fell upon this gentlewoman whom they slew, with all of her family, to the number of sixteen, (embracing one or more of the children of John Sanford, of Portsmouth,) and left but one little girl, a relative of the family, whom the Indians carried into captivity. She was afterwards redeemed and married a man by the name of Cole, in North Kingstown, where she lived to a considerable age. See Niles' French and Indian Wars, p. 201. Savage Gen. Dic. v. 4, Tit. John Sanford.

WILLIAM HUTCHINSON.

(2.) William Hutchinson died in Portsmouth in 1642, aged 56 years. He was the husband of the celebrated Ann Hutchinson. Edward Hutchinson and Edward Hutchinson, Jr., returned to Massachusetts and the latter was killed at Brookfield, in Philip's war, in 1675. Edward was the ancestor of the celebrated tory Governor Hutchinson. Governor Hutchinson and lieutenant Governor Oliver married two daughters of William Sanford of Newport. The Hutchinson farm in Jamestown, with the farm owned by the late Andrew Robeson in Tiverton, and other Hutchinson lands, were confiscated.

WILLIAM ASPINWALL.

(3.) William Aspinwall, after going to New Haven, returned to Massachusetts and was there a clerk of the court. He died in Boston. He was one of the earliest members of the Boston church and one of its deacons.

WILLIAM DYER.

(4.) William Dyer, one of the first settlers, was the husband of Mary Dyer, who was hung on Boston Common. He was the leader of the anti-Coddington party, and went to England at his own expense to aid in procuring the revocation of Coddington's commission as judge for life, and returned the bearer of a letter from the Council of State, revoking the commission. He was Attorney General of the Colony in 1650, and was the first person who filled that office. He had assigned to him a tract of land adjoining the harbor between Coddington's Point and Easton's Point. He died in Newport and left descendants.

JOHN SANFORD.

(5.) John Sanford was a member of the Boston church in 1631, was admitted a freeman April 3d, 1632, and the same year was appointed Cannoneer at the port. He had a son John who was baptized June 24th, 1632; Samuel, June 22d, 1634. In December, 1637, he was disarmed as a supporter of Wheelwright and came to and was one of the founders of the Colony at Rhode Island. He resided at Portsmouth and was successively Treasurer, Secretary, Assistant and President of the Colony. He had two sons, John and Samuel, and several daughters. One or more of his children were with Mrs. Hutchinson, and were taken by the Indians when they killed her. His son John married April 17th, 1663, Mary, the daughter of Samuel Gorton, and widow of Peter Greene. They had a daughter Eliphal Feb. 20, 1666; John, June 18th, 1670, and Samuel, Oct. 5th, 1677. By a previous marriage with Elizabeth Spatchurst he had three daughters. Samuel, son of the first John, came to Portsmouth and married Sarah Waddell in October, 1662. They also had a son John.

SAMUEL WILBOUR.

(6.) Samuel Wilbour married the daughter of John Porter, and afterwards went to Little Compton and died there. He was the ancestor of the Wilbour family in that town.

THOMAS SAVAGE.

(7.) Thomas Savage, the son-in-law of Ann Hutchinson, returned to Boston, as did William Baulston. (10.)

RICHARD CARDER.

(8.) Richard Carder removed to Warwick, but fled from there to Newport for protection from the Indians during Philip's war. He died in Newport in 1676, but his family returned to Warwick.

JOHN PORTER AND RICHARD HOLDEN.

(9.) John Porter and Randall Holden (18) also removed to Warwick and died there.

WILLIAM FREEBORN.

(11.) William Freeborn, one of the first settlers, died at Portsmouth, June 3d, 1670, aged eighty years. He was the founder of "the Freeborn family" on the island of Rhode Island.

HENRY BULL.

(12.) Henry Bull was one of the first settlers of Newport. He was a native of Wales, and was the first sergeant of the colony. He was one of the assistants, a deputy from Newport, and Governor of the colony. He built the stone house which is yet standing on the east side of Spring street, and owned a considerable tract of land in that neighborhood, some of which remains in the hands of his lineal descendants. He was the last survivor of the original colonists and died Feb. 22d, 1694, at the age of 84 years. He was buried in the Coddington burying-ground.

JOHN WALKER.

(13.) John Walker was admitted a freeman of Massachusetts, May 14th, 1634. He had been a member of the church at Roxbury, but, says Savage, he removed to Boston to find a wider sympathy for his heresy, where he was disarmed with the major part of his fellow-worshippers, in November, 1637; and soon after he removed to Rhode Island. He joined the Newport colony, March 12th, 1640, and his name last appears on the roll of freemen for Newport, March 16th, 1641.

William Brenton, Nicholas Easton and Richard Carder were not among the first comers at Portsmouth, but the two former, with Jeremiah Clarke and Thomas Hazard, signed the compact to settle Newport.

JOHN CLARKE.

(14.) John Clarke is said to have been a native of Bedfordshire, England. He was a physician and practiced in London before he came to America. He settled in Boston and there practiced his profession, protested against the censure of Wheelwright, was disarmed, and came to Rhode Island, and was one of the founders there. Dr. Clarke was a man of learning, and after he came to Newport conducted public worship before Mr. Lenthall came, but after the arrival of Lenthall he (Lenthall) officiated as preacher at Newport while he remained here. Dr. C. was the first educated physician who practiced in Rhode Island. In 1643 or 44 he, with others, formed a church upon the faith and order of the Baptists, in which he preached, and at the same time he practiced as a physician. He continued to be pastor of the church until he was sent to England as the agent of 65 persons from Newport, and 41 persons from Portsmouth, to procure the revocation of Coddington's commission. He became the agent of the colony, and remained abroad twelve years. Upon his petition the charter of 1663 was granted. As much of the petition of Dr. Clarke is incorporated into the charter, it may be inferred that he prepared that document which will always stand a monument to his liberality, ability and address. While abroad in the service of the colony, he was under

the necessity of laboring there for his own support, and expended much of his private fortune in promoting the interest of the colony. He was reduced to the necessity of mortgaging his house and lot in Newport to Richard Dean of London, for £140 sterling. In September, 1666, the colony assumed the payment of this mortgage, and probably paid it about 1672, the intervening time being employed in endeavoring to raise the money with which to discharge the mortgage. The town of Warwick behaved with great illiberality in this matter. Dr. Clarke returned to Newport in 1664, and was immediately elected a deputy from Newport. In 1669 he was elected Deputy Governor. He was appointed to go to England again in 1671, in reference to the boundary between Rhode Island and Connecticut. He died in 1676 in Newport, aged 66 years, and was buried in his own lot on the west side of Tanner street. By his will he left his estate consisting of "the Charity farms" in Middletown, for the support of the poor, and for bringing up children to learning. He was thrice married, but died without issue.

JOHN COGGESHALL.

(15.) John Coggeshall was often elected to the General Court of Massachusetts, from which he was expelled. He was one of the first settlers of Newport. He had assigned to him a large tract of land bordering on the sea, east of what is now known as Almy's Pond. He was a man of good abilities. He died in 1647 at the age of 56, and was buried in "the Coggeshall burying ground," on the west side of Coggeshall Avenue. He left numerous descendants.

PHILIP SHERMAN.

(16.) Philip Sherman remained at Portsmouth, where he died in 1676. He was recorder of the colony, and his descendants remaining in Rhode Island are more numerous than of any other of "the first comers."

WILLIAM CODDINGTON.

(17.) William Coddington was appointed one of the assistants in the Massachusetts colony before he emigrated to this country. He came from Lincolnshire. He was a fellow passenger from England with Governor John Winthrop, on board of the Arabella. They arrived at Salem, June 12th, 1630. He was several times chosen an assistant in Massachusetts, but was left out of the magistracy upon the defeat of Governor Vane in 1637. But the freemen of Boston chose him and Vane the next day to be deputies to their General Court. Coddington expressed his displeasure in losing his office by sitting with the deacons at public worship, instead of with the magistrates, and on a fast day he went to Mount Wollaston to hear Mr. Wheelwright. In opposition to Gov. Winthrop he defended Mrs. Hutchinson in her trial, and opposed the proceedings of the court against Wheelwright. His exertions were unavailing, and he relinquished a prosperous business as a merchant in Boston, and his large property and improvements in Braintree, and removed to Rhode Island, April 26th, 1638. He went to England in 1651, and procured a commission as Governor for life. He died in Newport in 1678, aged 78 years. His grandson was Governor of the Rhode Island colony in 1738. Governor Coddington's estate in Newport was bounded by Thames, Marlborough, Farewell and North Baptist streets. His house stood where the house of Samuel Sterne now stands, on the north side of Marlborough street, opposite Duke street.

NICHOLAS EASTON.

(19.) Nicholas Easton was by trade a tanner. He came from Wales, and arrived in New England May 14th 1634 and went to Ipswich. Was in Newbury in 1635 with his wife and son John. In 1636 he was the architect of a house built by the colony at Newbury called the Bound House. In 1637, Nov. 20th, he was disarmed. March 12th, 1637-8, he had obtained license to remove his family from Massachusetts, and the General Court having received information that he only intended

to withdraw for a season, the court ordered that he might depart with his family before the next court, and if he did not, to appear at that court and abide the further order of the court therein. June 8th, 1638, the General Court ordered that the magistrates of Ipswich shall have power to discharge Mr. Easton from building at Winnacunnet, and if he did not take warning to clear the place of him He came to Newport with his two sons, John and Peter. He built the first frame house there, on a lot of land adjoining the northwest corner of the Friends' Meeting House lot on Farewell street.

WILLIAM BRENTON.

(20.) William Brenton came to America as a surveyor, bearing the commission of Charles I. to survey the crown lands in America under a contract that he was to have a share of the lands surveyed. He settled in Boston in 1634. As a member of the General Court he opposed the censuring of Wheelwright and Hutchinson. Mr. Brenton was one of the early settlers of Newport. He had a town lot assigned to him extending back from the harbor to Spring street, bounded north on Mary street, and extending south to what is now Cotton's Court, with the entire neck including the site of Fort Adams and the Rocky Farm. He owned 10,000 acres of land in New Hampshire, in what is now Litchfield. He built a house 150 feet square in Brenton's neck, where the H. T. Battey house now stands. He owned, also, an estate in Taunton. He died between the 20th of August and 13th of November, 1674. He was Governor of the colony and held other important offices. At his decease he left three sons—Jahleel, William and Ebenezer, and several daughters.

Jahleel manned a schooner when he was but twenty-one years of age, and went to the rescue of the inhabitants of Providence at the time the town was burned by the Indians in 1676. He was afterwards collector of the customs at Boston, but eventually returned to Newport where he died without issue in 1732, aged 77 years, and was buried at what is now Fort Adams. Jahleel Brenton divised his estates in Newport to his nephew, Jahleel. William Brenton removed to Bristol, where he died, and was buried in his farm at Paupausquash. He left two sons, Jahleel and Benjamin. Benjamin Brenton died at the age of 93 and was buried on his farm in South Kingstown. Admiral Sir Jahleel Brenton and Capt. Edward Pelham of the British Navy, and Sir Brenton Halliburton, all natives of Newport, were the descendants of Jahleel Brenton. The Brenton house on the east side of Thames street was built about 1720.

DR. BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

(21.) Dr. Benjamin Franklin had three brothers who resided in Newport, John, James, with whom the Doctor learned the printer's trade, and Peter.

James Franklin was born in Boston in 1699, and died in Newport in 1734, aged 36 years. In 1719 he published the *Boston Gazette*. In 1721 he established the *New England Courant*. The earliest essays of Dr. Benjamin Franklin were published in the *Courant*. The religious articles of the Doctor were regarded as being of a skeptical character, and James, the publisher, was arrested and imprisoned for their publication. James afterwards came to Newport, and it is said started the first newspaper published in Rhode Island in 1727. It is certain that he published a newspaper here in 1732, in which year he became printer to the colony and undertook to print 20 copies of the public acts of that year for £20. There are books extant that were published by him, some that were published by his widow, and some by his son James, who established the *Newport Mercury* in 1758.

We gather the following from Dr. Franklin's correspondence in reference to the members of his family who resided at Newport:

In 1724 Dr. Franklin on a return from his first visit to Boston, after he had removed to Philadelphia, says: "The sloop putting in at Newport, Rhode Island, I visited my brother John who had been married and settled there some years. He received me very affectionately for he always loved me."

Ten years later (1734) Dr. Franklin having become easy in his circumstances made a journey to Boston to visit his relatives. In returning he called at Newport to see his brother James, then settled here with his printing house. Their former differences were forgotten and their meeting was cordial and affectionate. James was then fast declining in his health, and requested his brother in the event of his (James') death, which he apprehended not far distant, to take home his (James'), son, James Franklin, then but ten years of age, and bring him up to the printing business. With this request the Dr. complied, but first sent the boy to school for a few years. The boy's mother carried on the business until the boy was grown up, when the Dr. gave him an assortment of type, and thereby made amends to the boy's father for leaving his employment before the Doctor had served out his apprenticeship.

Peter Franklin, the last surviving brother of Dr. Franklin, died July 1st, 1766, in the 74th year of his age. He had formerly resided at Newport, but at the time of his death he was deputy postmaster of Philadelphia.

January 9th, 1760, Dr. Franklin in a letter to his sister, Mrs. Mecome, says, that of the 17 children born to their father and mother, 13 lived to grow up, and that but three then survived. Peter was then one of the survivors.

In a letter to Mrs. Governor Greene, dated August 1st, 1763, Dr. Franklin says that "my brother has returned to Rhode Island." Of course this reference is to Peter, who had not then gone to Philadelphia.

In a letter to his sister Mecome, Dr. Franklin writes: "Jemmy Franklin, when with me, was always dissatisfied and grumbling." This latter was probably written between 1743 and 1749.

Dr. Franklin was probably the debtor of his brother John as late as 1752, for May 1st of that year he writes his sister Mecome, enclosing her six pistoles, and tells her to hand to John the amount if she received the sum on a draft he had previously sent her, and to have John credit the amount in the Doctor's account;

(21 a.) The following is the list of privateer commanders:—George W. Babcock, Oliver Read, John Grimes, Benjamin Pearce, Joseph L. Gardner, William Dennis, James Godfrey, Thomas Stacy, Christopher Bently, Samuel Jeffers, Joseph Jaques, Thomas Foster, Joseph Crandall, Ezekiel Burroughs, Isaac Freeborn, Peter Gazee, William Ladd, John Murphy, John Coggeshall, William Finch, Thomas Dring, Samuel Walker, James Phillips, Remembrome Simmons, Joseph Sheffield.

ARTHUR BROWN.

(22.) Arthur Brown was the son of the Rev. Marmaduke Brown, rector of Trinity Church in Newport. The Rev. Marmaduke Brown was the rector of that church from sometime in the year 1760 until his decease in 1761. In 1795 his son, Arthur Brown, caused to be erected a mural monument in Trinity church to the memory of his father and mother, upon which is the following inscription in reference to himself, viz: "This monument was erected by their son, Arthur Brown, Esq., now senior fellow of Trinity College, Dublin, Ireland, and Representative in Parliament for the same. In token of his gratitude and affection to the best and tenderest of parents, *and his respect and love for a congregation among whom and for a place where he spent his earliest and happiest days.*" In the year 1798 Dr. Brown stated to Captain David M. Coggeshall, in Dublin, that "he was born in Newport in a house near the Redwood Library," probably "the old parsonage," now owned by Mr. William Fludder. Brown remained here until he was seventeen years of age. Writing in 1798, Dr. Brown says: "The face of the country was beautiful beyond description; it was composed of woods of no very great magnitude, perhaps of half a mile or a mile in diameter, interspersed with most charming lawns. The effect which is produced in a few demesnes of our nobility by so much art, was there universally wrought by nature, with the little aid of man in clearing its too great exhuberances. * * * Rhode Island throughout answered this character, but alas, I am told the former war did not leave a single timber tree."

* * * * * * * * * * * *

Newport, in Rhode Island, used to send out annually 400 sail of shipping, small and large. * * * Every one knows what immense channels of commerce have opened since, and how soon America launched forth even to China and Nootka Sound."

"The climate of Rhode Island, often called the garden and Montpelier of America, induced such numbers of wealthy persons from the southward to reside there in summer, that it was ludicrously called the Carolina hospital."

In reference to an important question which is now disturbing antiquarians as to when the revolution commenced, he says: "The discontents of America are usually dated from the stamp act in 1765, but they really originated in 1763, immediately after the peace, from the interdiction of their trade with the Spanish main. It was the only trade which brought specie into the country, and hence no money was seen except paper, saving half johannas, dollars, pistereens; a guinea or English crown was seldom seen. The depression of the value of paper money was greater in Rhode Island than anywhere else, a paper dollar bearing the nominal value of eight pounds. I myself saw one American fort fire upon the Squirrel, a king's ship, in 1764, in the harbor of Newport."

Speaking of the schools in New England he says . "Of their schools, self-love naturally inclines the author to give a favorable account, *he having never received any school education elsewhere*, yet their teachers were often from Europe, and it was his own fate to be instructed by a German and a Scotchman."

He says of the Redwood Library: "The library at Rhode Island, though built of wood, was a structure of uncommon beauty; I remember it with admiration, and I could once appeal to the known taste of an old school fellow, Stuart, the

painter, who had the same feeling towards it. It was sacked of its books by the British army, as was the college of Princeton in the Jerseys. A college military corps existed at Cambridge *before I left it.*"

Arthur Brown, in Dublin, soon arose to great eminence. He became Senior Fellow and Senior Proctor of Trinity College, a Doctor of Civil Law, and King's Professor of Greek. For a time he held the Vicar Generalship of Kildar, and practiced in the courts as an eminent barrister."

"For many years no person in the university enjoyed greater popularity. They gave him their best and most honorable gifts. They appointed him their representative in the National Legislature, and for years the Irish House of Commons listened with surprise and admiration to his bold and powerful language."

Dr. Brown was the author of "A Compendious View of Ecclesiastical Law." "Lectures as professor of Civil Law in the University of Dublin." "Brown's View of the Civil Law and Law of Admiralty." "Hussen O'Die," a poem translated from the Persian language, and two volumes of miscellaneous writings.

He died in Dublin in the summer of 1805.

AUGUSTUS JOHNSTON.

(23.) Augustus Johnston's house was in Division street ; Dr. Thomas Moffatt's in Broad street, and Martin Howard's in Spring street.

CHARLES DUDLEY.

(24.) Charles Dudley, the King's Collector of Customs at Newport, who fled to the British ship Rose, as a refuge from the wrath of the populace, came over from England in 1765. He married a daughter of Robert Cook, of Newport. Mr. Dudley went to England with his family, where he died soon after. His family afterwards returned to America. His son, the late Mr. Charles Dudley, settled in. Albany where he became a distinguished and wealthy citizen, and where his name is perpetuated by "The Dudley Observatory."

Mr. Charles Dudley, senior, when he was collector in Newport, occupied the house in Middletown, built by Matthew Cozzens, merchant of Newport, who died in Charleston, S. C., December 1780.

A letter written by Mr. Dudley, and now in the British State Paper Office, says: "The attack upon the Gaspee was not the effect of sudden passion and resentment, but of cool deliberation and forethought. It had long been determined that she should be destroyed."

In October, 1776, John Smith was appointed by the General Assembly to sell all of the effects of George Rome and Charles Dudley in possession of the State, excepting the screws and bars and the effects in Nathan Miller's hands, and the articles excepted were to be sold by Josias Lyndon.

JOSEPH WANTON.

(25.) Joseph Wanton was the son of William Wanton, who died in 1733, Governor of the colony. Governor William Wanton in early life commanded a privateer out of Newport. Joseph held many important offices under the colony, but it is said that he had the misfortune to inherit from his father a quarrel with the Ward family, which induced him to promote the interest of Stephen Hopkins against Samuel Ward, and when Ward and Hopkins became united in support of the colonies, it is not impossible that Wanton, who had been an outspoken advocate of the rights of the colonies, was turned to the support of the crown by his hostility to the Wards. In 1775 he was removed from office by the General Assembly. He married a daughter of Governor Winthrop of Connecticut. Two of the sons of Governor Joseph Wanton, Joseph and William, were wealthy merchants of Newport. The former left with the British and died in New York. William

Rev. John Ferguson, with a memoir of his life and character by the Rev. Edward A. Park, have all been published and are accessable to those who desire to investigate the character and teachings of this great man. Doctor Hopkins wrote and published many books, and was the means of many books being published by others. He was, perhaps, the earliest American who publicly denounced the African slave trade, and who favored the entire abolition of slavery, and was among the first to denounce the use of intoxicating liquors as a beverage, and to favor the prohibition of the liquor traffic. He was an ardent whig before and during the revolution, and though he disliked "the slavery clauses," he favored the adoption of the Federal constitution. Though he was an unpopular preacher, and wrote upon unpopular subjects, few men made a deeper impression upon the public mind than did this eminent divine. His dialogue upon the subject of slavery, his biography of Jonathan Edwards, his lives of Susanna Anthony and Hannah Osborne, though not among his most important works, were much read and highly appreciated upon their publication both in this country and in Great Britain; and his dialogue upon the subject of slavery was one of the first and one of the most able and influential papers ever published upon that subject. Withal, he was an humble, self-denying and faithful Christian.

Under the first charter, May 18th, 1652, Rhode Island passed an act against the importation of negroes into the colony. In 1675-6, a law was passed to prohibit Indian bondage, and in 1715 an act was passed to prohibit the importation of Indian slaves. Yet, afterwards, Rhode Island became deeply involved in the slave trade, and Newport was the centre of this traffic. When in 1770 Dr. Hopkins preached from his pulpit in Newport his first sermon against the slave traffic, Whittier says: "It well may be doubted whether on that Sabbath day the angels of God, in their wide survey of the universe, looked upon a nobler spectacle than that of the minister of Newport, rising up before his slaveholding congregation and demanding in the name of the Highest the deliverance of the captive and the opening of prison doors to those that were bound!" The colony of Rhode Island in June, 1774, passed a law prohibiting the bringing of slaves into the colony, and in 1784 the Legislature enacted that all children born after March 1st, 1785, should be free. Of the passage of these acts Dr. Hopkins was an ardent advocate. Dr. Hopkins, after the revolution, was very poor, and sometimes was scantily provided even with the necessaries of life, yet, upon his receiving nine hundred dollars for the copyright of his "System of Divinity," it is said by one writer that he gave one hundred dollars, and by another that he gave one half of the amount to an anti-slavery society in Rhode Island, and notwithstanding his great poverty he actually purchased upon his own credit the freedom of one pious African, with the view of educating him as a missionary and sending him to Africa, for Dr. Hopkins hoped to destroy the slave trade by evangelizing and educating the natives of Africa in their own country.

THE LORD SANDWICH.

(29.) List of persons imprisoned by the British on board the Lord Sandwich, viz: Capt. Ebenezer Vose, Job Easton, Thomas Richardson, Nathaniel Grafton John Haven, Robert Taylor, Joseph Allen, Samuel Yates, Ezra Foye, Ebeneze Carr, Mr. Devens, Mr. Rider, Joseph Gurdon, John Townsend Joshua Rathbone, S. Billings, Charles Cahoone, John Arnold, John Harrod, John Hubbard, Edward Simmons, William Carter, Paul Coffin, Capt. Church, Edward Church, Benjamin Church, Jr., Major Fairchilds, Jonathan Yates, Isaac Dayton, William Dillingham, Samuel Carr, John Bradley, John Gardner, Sherman Clarke, Gideon Wanton, Joseph Bissel, John Cahoone, Higgins Landers, John Lawton, Harry Oman, Thomas Peckham, Richard Thomas, John Bull, Charles Vigneron, Henry Irish, Thomas Howland, Daniel Fullows, Hanson Hull, Nathan Luther, William Langley, John Greene, Daniel Smith, Edward Murphy, Benjamin Marshall, Samuel Vinson, Joseph Tillinghast, Jonathan Hull, Elisha Lawton, Lee Langley, Peter Langley, William Downer.

painter, who had the same feeling towards it. It was sacked of its books by the British army, as was the college of Princeton in the Jerseys. A college military corps existed at Cambridge *before I left it.*"

Arthur Brown, in Dublin, soon arose to great eminence. He became Senior Fellow and Senior Proctor of Trinity College, a Doctor of Civil Law, and King's Professor of Greek. For a time he held the Vicar Generalship of Kildar, and practiced in the courts as an eminent barrister."

"For many years no person in the univesity enjoyed greater popularity. They gave him their best and most honorable gifts. They appointed him their representative in the National Legislature, and for years the Irish House of Commons listened with surprise and admiration to his bold and powerful language."

Dr. Brown was the author of "A Compendious View of Ecclesiastical Law." "Lectures as professor of Civil Law in the University of Dublin." "Brown's View of the Civil Law and Law of Admiralty." "Hussen O'Die," a poem translated from the Persian language, and two volumes of miscellaneous writings.

He died in Dublin in the summer of 1805.

AUGUSTUS JOHNSTON.

(23.) Augustus Johnston's house was in Division street; Dr. Thomas Moffatt's in Broad street, and Martin Howard's in Spring street.

CHARLES DUDLEY.

(24.) Charles Dudley, the King's Collector of Customs at Newport, who fled to the British ship Rose, as a refuge from the wrath of the populace, came over from England in 1765. He married a daughter of Robert Cook, of Newport. Mr. Dudley went to England with his family, where he died soon after. His family afterwards returned to America. His son, the late Mr. Charles Dudley, settled in. Albany where he became a distinguished and wealthy citizen, and where his name is perpetuated by "The Dudley Observatory."

Mr. Charles Dudley, senior, when he was collector in Newport, occupied the house in Middletown, built by Matthew Cozzens, merchant of Newport, who died in Charleston, S. C., December 1780.

A letter written by Mr. Dudley, and now in the British State Paper Office, says: "The attack upon the Gaspee was not the effect of sudden passion and resentment, but of cool deliberation and forethought. It had long been determined that she should be destroyed."

In October, 1776, John Smith was appointed by the General Assembly to sell all of the effects of George Rome and Charles Dudley in possession of the State, excepting the screws and bars and the effects in Nathan Miller's hands, and the articles excepted were to be sold by Josias Lyndon.

JOSEPH WANTON.

(25.) Joseph Wanton was the son of William Wanton, who died in 1733, Governor of the colony. Governor William Wanton in early life commanded a privateer out of Newport. Joseph held many important offices under the colony, but it is said that he had the misfortune to inherit from his father a quarrel with the Ward family, which induced him to promote the interest of Stephen Hopkins against Samuel Ward, and when Ward and Hopkins became united in support of the colonies, it is not impossible that Wanton, who had been an outspoken advocate of the rights of the colonies, was turned to the support of the crown by his hostility to the Wards. In 1775 he was removed from office by the General Assembly. He married a daughter of Governor Winthrop of Connecticut. Two of the sons of Governor Joseph Wanton, Joseph and William, were wealthy merchants of Newport. The former left with the British and died in New York. William

after the peace, was appointed collector of St. Johns, New Brunswick, and resided there. The sons had large estates, which were confiscated. Governor Joseph Wanton died in A.D. 1780, aged 75 years, and was buried in the Clifton burying ground.

SOLOMON SOUTHWICK.

(26.) Solomon Southwick was born in Newport about 1731. He was the son of a fisherman. His intelligent appearance attracted the attention of Henry Collins, the eminent merchant and philanthropist, who sent Southwick to school, and was the means of giving him a good education. After completing his studies, Southwick taught a school in Newport for several years. He then engaged in mercantile affairs in which he was unsuccessful. About 1764 he purchased from the heirs of James Franklin, the Newport Mercury, and the printing establishment then connected with that paper. The paper was outspoken in favor of the rights of the colonies. He was among the early book publishers of New England, and had an extensive establishment for that time employed in that business, and there are many books yet extant which bear his imprint. At the breaking out of the war he was engaged in a very prosperous business which he was forced to abandon with the most of his property. He then removed to Providence, and was in the service of the State at the head of its commissariat. He returned to Newport after the peace, and was postmaster there for a time, under the confederation, and afterwards, for three or four years was a partner in the Mercury establishment. He died in Newport, December 23d, 1797, aged 66 years. He left four sons and one daughter. His eldest son, Solomon Southwick, removed to Albany, where he was editor of the Albany Register, a leading Democratic paper in the State of New York. He died in Albany in 1839.

REV. EZRA STILES, D.D.

(27.) Upon the death of the Rev. Mr. Searing, the Rev. Samuel Fairweather was made pastor of the Second Congregational Church in Newport in 1754, but in consequence of an occurrence at a dinner at Godfrey Malbone's, he left the church in 1755, and soon after left the denomination. The Rev. Ezra Stiles was the successor of Mr. Fairweather, and was settled pastor of that church in 1755. He was, perhaps, the most learned man of his time in America, and was one of the firmest advocates of the rights of the colonies in their struggle with Great Britain for national existence and independence. He, with a considerable portion of his congregation, was driven away from Newport upon the breaking out of the war.

In 1777 he was made President of Yale College, but was not formerly dismissed from his pastoral office in Newport until 1786. He died May 12th, 1795, in the 68th year of his age. His diary, now in the custody of Yale College, is said to contain much interesting matter pertaining to the history of Newport. He had a daughter who married Abiel Holmes, the author of "Holmes' Annals," and she was the mother of Oliver Wendell Holmes.

REV. SAMUEL HOPKINS, D.D.

(28.) Dr. Hopkins preached his first sermon to the First Congregational Church in Newport, July 23d, 1769. After preaching to the congregation for a time, a satirical pamphlet written, by the Rev. William Hart, on Dr. Hopkins and his religious dogmas, was circulated among the congregation, and induced a considerable opposition to, and delayed the Doctor's installation in the pastoral office of this society to April 11th, 1770. He died in Newport, December 20th, 1803, in the 83d year of his age. He was pastor of the Newport church for more than thirty-three years. Dr. Hopkins wrote an autobiography of himself, which was published after his decease, with notes, by the Rev. Stephen West. Reminiscences of his life by the Rev. Dr. William Patten; a memoir of his life and character by the

Rev. John Ferguson, with a memoir of his life and character by the Rev. Edward A. Park, have all been published and are accessable to those who desire to investigate the character and teachings of this great man. Doctor Hopkins wrote and published many books, and was the means of many books being published by others. He was, perhaps, the earliest American who publicly denounced the African slave trade, and who favored the entire abolition of slavery, and was among the first to denounce the use of intoxicating liquors as a beverage, and to favor the prohibition of the liquor traffic. He was an ardent whig before and during the revolution, and though he disliked "the slavery clauses," he favored the adoption of the Federal constitution. Though he was an unpopular preacher, and wrote upon unpopular subjects, few men made a deeper impression upon the public mind than did this eminent divine. His dialogue upon the subject of slavery, his biography of Jonathan Edwards, his lives of Susanna Anthony and Hannah Osborne, though not among his most important works, were much read and highly appreciated upon their publication both in this country and in Great Britain; and his dialogue upon the subject of slavery was one of the first and one of the most able and influential papers ever published upon that subject. Withal, he was an humble, self-denying and faithful Christian.

Under the first charter, May 18th, 1652, Rhode Island passed an act against the importation of negroes into the colony. In 1675-6, a law was passed to prohibit Indian bondage, and in 1715 an act was passed to prohibit the importation of Indian slaves. Yet, afterwards, Rhode Island became deeply involved in the slave trade, and Newport was the centre of this traffic. When in 1770 Dr. Hopkins preached from his pulpit in Newport his first sermon against the slave traffic. Whittier says: "It well may be doubted whether on that Sabbath day the angels of God, in their wide survey of the universe, looked upon a nobler spectacle than that of the minister of Newport, rising up before his slaveholding congregation and demanding in the name of the Highest the deliverance of the captive and the opening of prison doors to those that were bound!" The colony of Rhode Island in June, 1774, passed a law prohibiting the bringing of slaves into the colony, and in 1784 the Legislature enacted that all children born after March 1st, 1785, should be free. Of the passage of these acts Dr. Hopkins was an ardent advocate. Dr. Hopkins, after the revolution, was very poor, and sometimes was scantily provided even with the necessaries of life, yet, upon his receiving nine hundred dollars for the copyright of his "System of Divinity," it is said by one writer that he gave one hundred dollars, and by another that he gave one half of the amount to an anti-slavery society in Rhode Island, and notwithstanding his great poverty he actually purchased upon his own credit the freedom of one pious African, with the view of educating him as a missionary and sending him to Africa, for Dr. Hopkins hoped to destroy the slave trade by evangelizing and educating the natives of Africa in their own country.

THE LORD SANDWICH.

(29.) List of persons imprisoned by the British on board the Lord Sandwich viz: Capt. Ebenezer Vose, Job Easton, Thomas Richardson, Nathaniel Graffy, John Haven, Robert Taylor, Joseph Allen, Samuel Yates, Ezra Pope, Ebenezer Carr, Mr. Devens, Mr. Rider, Joseph Gurdon, John Townsend Joshua Rathbone, S. Billings, Charles Cahoone, John Arnold, John Harrod, John Hubbard, Edward Simmons, William Carter, Paul Coffin, Capt. Church, Edward Church, Benjamin Church, Jr., Major Fairchilds, Jonathan Yates, Isaac Dayton, William Dillingham, Samuel Carr, John Bradley, John Gardner, Sherman Clarke, Gideon Wanton, Joseph Bissel, John Cahoone, Higgins Landers, John Lawton, Hazard Oman, Thomas Peckham, Richard Thomas, John Bull, Charles Vigneron, Henry Irish, Thomas Howland, Daniel Fullows, Hanson Hull, Nathan Luther, William Langley, John Greene, Daniel Smith, Edward Murphy, Benjamin Marsh, Samuel Vinson, Joseph Tillinghast, Jonathan Hull, Elisha Lawton, Lee Langley, Peter Langley, William Downer.

IMPRESSED SEAMEN.

(30) In 1794, during the May session of the Assembly, His Britannic Majesty's ship, the Nautilus, arrived in Newport, having on board six American seamen, some of whom, it was alleged, had been impressed into this service. The commanding officer of this vessel was on shore, and was summoned before the General Assembly. The subject was referred to the Judges ot the Superior Court, and to the Judge of the U. S. District Court, before whom, in the presence ot Consul Moore, Commander Boynton was examined. The General Assembly sent a committee on board of the Nautilus to examine as to whether there were American seamen detained there, and while this examination was being made, the judges protected Boynton from the populace, and upon the return of the committee who had reported that six men were detained against their will, Boynton issued an order for their discharge and for the payment of their wages.

THOMAS DE COURCY.

(31) The Right Honorable Thomas de Courcy, Lord Kinsale, Baron de Courcy and Regrone, late Premier Baron of Ireland, was another distinguished person, whose life was intimately connected with the commerce of Newport. His ancestor, a younger son of the family, emigrated to Newport about 1720. Here, Thomas de Courcy was born and was afterwards bound an apprentice to a Captain Beard of this place. He afterwards enlisted in the navy, and shared in the honor of taking Porto Bello, and while with Admiral Vernon, from that officer De Courcy received intelligence which enabled him to establish his title to the estates and honors of his family.

DR. BENJAMIN WATERHOUSE.

(33) Dr. Benj. Waterhouse, physician, naturalist and author, was also a native of Newport, born here in 1754. He was educated at London, Edinburg and Leyden. He was thirty years a professor in Harvard College, and died in Cambridge in 1846, at the advanced age of 92 years.

Dr. Waterhouse rememembered the time when Augustus Johnston was Attorney General and Stamp Master, and when Johnston, Martin Howard and Dr. Moffat were hanged in effigy, and when their effigies were afterwards burned on the Newport Parade, and when the contents of their houses and cellars were destroyed by a mob at night. Dr. Waterhouse also remembered Judge Scott, Judge Hazard, William Ellery, William Channing, the father of William Ellery Channing, and Mr. Simpson, the latter an Englishman who practiced law in Newport, but "died in England among other refugees." He just remembered Henry Bull, but knew Judge Lightfoot, who taught him to value and study Lord Bacon, Lock, Newton and Boerhaven. Lightfoot was the oracle of Newport in his time. He was an able, learned and idle man. Honeyman and Marchant, Dr. Waterhouse regarded to be gentlemen of the old school; Varnum he took to be a popular aspirant, and Ellery and his three brothers to be flaming sons of liberty. In his old age, Dr. Waterhouse prophesied that Newport would become the bath of the United States, to which rich invalids would retire to improve their impaired health, and wished that he had some pleasant spot or farm on his native island, to which, if not himself, his invalid posterity might resort to enjoy peace, health and liberty.

Dr. Waterhouse was the author of "Lectures on the Theory and Practice of Medicine," 8 vo. published in 1786; "Lectures on Natural History," 1810;" The Botanist," 1811; "*Oratorio Inaug.* at Harvard University," 1783; "A Book on Vitality," 1790; "Prospect of Exterminating the Small Pox," 1800; "Ascribing Authorship of Junius to the Earl of Chatham," 1831; "Journal of a Young Man of Mass.," 1816.

Dr. Waterhouse was the son of Timothy Waterhouse, and was born in a house fronting on Liberty Square, in Newport.

THE CHANNING FAMILY.

(35) The founder of this family in Newport was John Channing, who came to Newport abo t 1715. He left a son, John Channing, and several daughters. John Channing, son of John, was the father of William Channing, who was born in 1751, graduated at Princeton in 1769, studied law with Oliver Arnold, was elected Attorney General in 1777, and annually re-elected up to 1787, when he was turned out of office by the paper money party. In 1791 he was again made Attorney General, and the same year was appointed by General Washington, United States District Attorney, and held both offices up to his death, which occurred September 21, 1793, aged 42 years. He married Lucy Ellery, the daughter of William Ellery, the signer of the Declaration of Independence. They had eleven children, nine of whom survived their father. The eldest son was Francis Dana Channing, of Boston; the second son, William Ellery Channing, the eminent scholar and divine. Two of the younger sons, Dr. Walter and Edward, were professors in Harvard College.

THE ELLERY FAMILY.

(36) William Ellery was at Gloucester, Massachusetts, in 1663. He had a son Benjamin, his third child, born in 1669. He first removed to Bristol, then a part of Massachuse.ts, but soon removed to Newport. He commanded a letter of marque out of Newport in 1702. He married Abigail, daughter of John Wilkins, of Wiltshire, England, July 30th, 1696. About this time he removed to Newport. They had nine children. William, his eldest son, and third child, was born October 31st, 1701, and graduated at Harvard College in 1722. He became a wealthy merchant in Newport, a Judge, an Assistant and Deputy Governor of the colony of Rhode Island. He married Elizabeth Almy, January 3d, 1722, and died in Newport, March 15th, 1764, leaving three sons and one daughter. William, the second son, was born December 22d, 1727, graduated at Harvard College in 1747, and married Ann Remington, of Cambridge, October 11th, 1750. He settled in Newport and engaged in mercantile pursuits. In 1759, he was appointed naval officer of the colony of Rhode Island, and in 1770 he commenced the practice of the law, in which he continued to 1776, when, upon the decease of Samuel Ward, he was elected to the Continental Congress, and there became a signer of the Declaration of Independence. Upon the organization of the federal government under the constitution, he was appointed Collector of the Customs for Newport, and held that office up to his decease, February 15th, 1820.

THE DECATUR FAMILY.

(37) Stephen Decatur, the ancestor of this family, is said to have been a native of Genoa, and to have come to Rhode Island in 1746. He was naturalized by an act of the General Assembly in 1755. During the war between England and France he was an officer of a privateer, fitted out at Newport. He married, in 1751, Priscilla Hill, a widow, whose maiden name was George. By this marriage he had two sons—Stephen, born in 1752, and John, born in 1754. The son Stephen, the father of the late Commodore Stephen Decatur, was bred to the sea. The Decaturs lived in the old Brayton house, then standing at the head of the Mall, but now is next north of the residence of the late Edward W. Lawton, on the east side of Charles street.

HENRY COLLINS.

(38) Henry Collins was the son of Arnold and Amy Collins, and was born in Newport, March 25th, 1699. He was educated in England, became a merchant upon his return to Newport, and for a time was very successful, but became bankrupt in 1765, a result brought about by the application of the admiralty rule of 1756. Mr. Collins was a great benefactor of Newport. He was one of the founders of the Redwood Library, and of the Literary Society, out of which it arose, and one of the builders of the Long Wharf and the Granary. He educated several deserving, but poor young men, at his own expense, among them was Solomon Southwick,

and to his liberality posterity are indebted for the portraits of Callender, Berkeley, Clapp, Hitchcock, and perhaps others. Dr. Waterhouse speaks of him as the Lorenzo de Medici of Rhode Island. He died at the house of a friend about 1770. Mr. Collins owned the house on Easton's Point, at what was known as the Gibbs' Ship Yard, which during the revolution belonged to George Rome, and which, in the hard winter of 1780, was torn down and distributed among the poor for fuel.

ARNOLD FAMILY.

(39) Benedict Arnold came to Newport from Providence in 1653, and was admitted purchaser in Newport. His town lot extended from Mill to Pelham streets, and his house was on the lot belonging to the People's Library. His son Benedict inherited his homestead. One of the daughters of the second Benedict married Edward Pelham, whose two daughters inherited it, one of whom married John Bannister and the other John Cowley. Bannister built a wharf, and so did Cowley. Governor Arnold, the first Benedict, probably erected "the Old Stone Mill." He held many important offices. He was the first Governor under the charter of Charles II. and was often re-elected to that office. He left four sons and three daughters. He died June 9th, 1678, at the age of 63 years, and was buried in a lot adjoining, on the east, the estate of Gov. Van Zandt.

GOVERNOR GIBBS HOUSE.

The Governor Gibbs house, on the north side of Mill street, was built by John Tillinghast, about 1765. It was afterwards the property of Col. Archibald Crary, who was an officer of the revolution. At the close of the war, General Greene came to Newport and rented and occupied the house. Here he was visited by the Marquis de Lafayette, October 24th, 1784. General Greene took possession of the house, November 25th, 1783, when he was waited upon by the principal inhabitants of the town, and presented with a congratulatory address, to which he made a suitable response. While General Greene resided in this house, he was visited by Kosciusko and by Baron Stuben.

SETTLERS OF AQUIDNECK,

—AND—

LIBERTY OF CONSCIENCE,

READ BEFORE THE

RHODE ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY,

FEBRUARY, 1880.

BY

HENRY E. TURNER, M. D.

PUBLISHED BY
THE NEWPORT, R. I., HISTORICAL PUBLISHING CO.
R. H. TILLEY, Sec'ry, 128 Thames Street.
1880.

NEWPORT, R. I. :
OLIVER M. ATKINSON, PRINTER.
1880.

37690
xc

THE AQUIDNECK SETTLERS.

In 1637, what we should call liberal ideas, but what were regarded by the dominant party as heretical delusions, had so far infected the popular mind, in Massachusetts, and especially in Boston, as to have alarmed the authorities and churches in that promising settlement, and caused them serious distrust; in fact they apprehended that the reign of Belial was at hand, and unless they resorted to stringent measures to rid themselves of the promoters of these errors, they were in immediate danger of being subjected to the dominion of Antichrist.

Accordingly they convened a synod of most of the ministers and many of the prominent laymen of the colony, at Newtown, since Cambridge, (Boston, on account of the poisoned condition of public sentiment, being thought unsuitable,) on the 30th of August, 1637, which remained in session until Sept. 22d, at the close of which the Governor, Mr. Winthrop, proposed that "a like meeting should be held once a year, or at least, the next year, to settle what yet remained to be agreed, or if but to nourish love, &c."

This, however, did not prevail. It might be a curious subject for speculation, how much was left to be disposed of, by an assembly which had been in session 24 days, and had unearthed

and condemned 82 alarming errors prevailing in the community, and had probably arranged, among themselves, the measures which should be taken with the recusants. And also, how the offending parties appreciated the love, which was proposed to be cultivated.

At the election, April 17th, 1637, Mr. Vane had been superseded, as Governor, by Mr. Winthrop, and Messrs. Coddington and Dummer by Messrs. Stoughton and Saltonstall, as Assistants, these three were of the heretical faction.

Winthrop says: [Savage's Winth. Vol. 1, p. 219, &c.

"There was great danger of a tumult that day, for those of that side grew into fierce speeches, and some laid hands on others, but seeing themselves too weak, they grew quiet."

There is no great matter for wonder in this, for the citizens of Boston having preferred a petition, and the Governor, Vane, declining to proceed with the election until the petition had been read, the other party withdrew from his Presidency, and went into the election. This election also was held at Newtown.

[Ibid. Vol. 1, p. 219, & Seq.]

The next day, April 18th, Boston elected as Deputies, Messrs. Coddington, Vane and Hoffe, (probably Atherton Haugh.)

Winthrop says: [Ibid. Vol. 1, p. 220]

"But the Court being grieved at it, found a means to send them home again, for that two of the freemen of Boston had not notice of the election. So they all went home, and the next morning they returned the same gentlemen again, upon a new choice; and the Court not finding how they might reject them, they were admitted.

So it appears, they were willing to disfranchise the town of Boston, but refrained from want of a plausible excuse.

Some recent transactions, in a State not a thousand miles from Boston, seem to argue, that this enlightened generation has improved upon this significant example, it is not thought necessary now to wait for a plausible excuse.

At the Court in the following Nov. a pretext was found, the Deputies from Boston were dismissed or rejected, and Boston, until its principal citizens were banished, was disfranchised.

[Ibid. Vol. 1, p. 245]

These Deputies were Coggeshall, Aspinwall and Oliver. The two former of whom were associated in the settlement of Aquidneck, with Coddington, Easton, Clarke, the Hutchinsons and others.

They were all conspicuous adherents of the heretical school, of which the Rev. Mr. Wheelwright was the spiritual leader, and Mrs. Hutchinson the most aggressive propagandist.

The atmosphere of Boston was evidently seriously contaminated by this pestilent heresy, and it became necessary to purge the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, of these heterodox elements.

Accordingly, all the political and hierarchical power of the other towns and churches, was brought into requisition for the accomplishment of that end, and they and their friends were first disarmed, Nov. 27th, 1637, and afterwards kindly permitted to depart the jurisdiction, and humanely relegated to the hospitality and tender mercies of the savage denizens of the wilderness.

Aided by the experience and friendly intervention of Roger Williams, this desperate resource did not fail them, and although the adverse influence of Massachusetts, and of the other neighboring Colonies, forming the league known as the United Colonies of New England, was, for many years, uniformly exercised with the design and purpose to discourage and crush the little community which they established, they, nevertheless, "in the providence of God," with the cooperation of the equally feeble settlements of Providence and Warwick, by conciliatory treatment of the aboriginal inhabitants of the county, and by prudent, industrious and frugal habits, succeeded in establishing the foundation of the little commonwealth, in which we, to-day, so much pride ourselves.

By the friendly and potential intervention of Mr. Williams,

in March, 1637, the Indian chiefs Canonicus and Miantonomi, were induced for a nominal payment of forty fathom of white beads, and gratuity, to the present inhabitants, of ten coats and twenty hoes, (R. I. Col. Rec., Vol. page 46,) to transfer to Wm. Coddington for himself and his associates, the Island of Aquidneck. now Rhode Island, (R. I. Col. Rec, Vol. 1, pp. 50-51,) and in March, 1638, they removed from Massachusetts, and commenced a settlement on the north end of the Island, now Portsmouth, but then known by the name of Pocasset.

This name, in more recent times has been applied to the adjacent territory on the opposite side of the East Bay, now called Tiverton, but evidence is irrefragable, that it was originally applied to the north end of the Island, and to the site of the first English settlement.

An extensive tract of land, in Tiverton, which was then comprised in Plymouth Colonys jurisdiction was granted to 30 persons or shareholders, on the fifth of March, 1679-80, by Plymouth Colony.

The following, which I copy from one of four deeds in first volume Colonial Land Evidence, from Wm. Manchester to different parties, gives the boundary description of the Pocasset purchase, as it was denominated.

"Wm Manchester, of Punkatest, to Matthew Greenell, of Portsmouth, for £13 sterling 1-4 of 1-30 of land at Pocasset, bounded north and west by the Freeman's Lots, next Fall River, west by the Bay or Sound, running between said land and Rhode Island; south partly by a line that is set at a great rock, on which is a cedar bush, marked near the way that leads into Punkatest; eastward on a pond at Dartmouth town bounds; westward to Sepowett Creek's mouth, and partly by Dartmouth bounds, and upward into the woods to Middlebury town bounds and Quitquissett Pond, always excepted Suppowett Neck, and the Punkatest meadows, and the land granted Capt. Richard Morris, by Plymouth Court, and that set apart for the ministry."

"All which and some others, I hold under deed of enfe-

offment from Plymouth Colony, of date, March 5th, 1679-80."

This deed is dated, Oct. 7, 1681.

He also, Wm. Manchester, sells to John Cooke, Sen., of Portsmouth, 1-2 of 13 shares same purchase, Nov. 24, 1680.

Also, to John Cooke, Sen., 2 shares of same purchase, mentioning as associates in the purchase, Edward Gray, Nathaniel Thomas, Benjamin Church, and others, his friends and partners, Nov. 24, 1680.

The reservations, evidently, were of parcels of land granted by Plymouth, previously to the Pocasset grant.

Whether the name Pocasset was common to Tiverton and Portsmouth, or whether this company of purchasers gave the name to Tiverton, is a question I am not, at present, prepared to discuss.

At a meeting of the body politic, at Newport, Nov 25, 1639, Commissioners were appointed "to negotiate business with our brethren of Pocasset," who could have been no others than the Portsmouth Settlers. [R. I. Col. Rec., Vol. 1, p. 94.]

The name Portsmouth had been adopted July 1, 1639.

[R. I. Col. Rec. Vol. 1, p 72.]

In the description of Wm Coddington's land, as divided in 1640, and which comprises six or seven hundred acres, at and about Coddington's Point, (Pocasset highway forms one of the boundaries,) see First Volume R. I. Rec., Secretary State's Office.

Pocasset therefore, was, without question, the name by which the Indians recognized the north end of Rhode Island.

Shortly before their arrival, viz: March 7th, 1638, the refugees from Massachusetts held a meeting at Providence, and nineteen subscribed their names to the following remarkable covenant, remarkable alike for its sublime simplicity and for the implicit confidence it expresses in the care and guidance of the Divine Spirit.

THE COMPACT.

"We, whose names are underwritten, do here solemnly, in

the presence of Jehovah, incorporate ourselves into a Body Politick, and as He shall help, will submit our persons, lives and estates unto our Lord Jesus Christ, the King of Kings and Lord of Lords, and to all those perfect and most absolute laws of His, given us in His holy word of truth, to be guided and judged thereby."

Wm. Coddington.	Wm. Dyre.
John Clarke.	Wm. Freeborn.
Wm. Hutchinson, Jr.	Philip Sherman.
John Coggeshall.	John Walker.
Wm. Aspinwall.	Richard Carder.
Samuel Wilbore.	Wm. Baulston.
John Porter.	Edw. Hutchinson, Sen.
John Sanford.	Henry Bulle X mark.
Edw. Hutchinson, Jr.	Randall Holden.
Thomas Savage.	

To these were added four other names, for some reason, never, that I am aware, explained, afterwards erased.

At a meeting of the Body, as they expressed it, Aug. 20, 1638, the following were admitted as freemen, with all privileges as themselves, viz:

Richard Dummer.	William Brenton.
Nicholas Easton.	Robert Harding.

On the 23d of August, 1638, 13 lots, on the west side of the Spring, were granted to Mr. Richard Dummer and his friends, viz:

Stephen Dummer.	Mr. Spencer.
Thomas Dummer.	Adam Mott.
Mr. (Nicholas) Easton.	Robert Field.
Mr. Robert Geoffreys.	James Tarr.
Mr. (Osamond) Doutch.	Mr. Robert Harding.
William Baker.	

No doubt Mr. Brenton should have been added to the who with Richard Dummer, would make the complement, 13.

At the same meeting it was voted, that Mr. Richard Du

mer and his friends should have lands equal to ourselves. Mr. Dummer had been an assistant in Massachusetts, and superseded with Mr. Coddington in the previous year.

Mr. Coddington had been elected Judge; at the first meeting, March 7th, Mr. Aspinwall, Secretary, and Wm. Dyre, Clerk, though why both these offices were thought necessary, does not appear.

The Act constituting the Judge, is as follows:

"We, that are freemen incorporate in this Bodie Politick do elect and constitute William Coddington, Esq, a Judge amongst us, and do covenant to yield all due honour unto him, according to the laws of God, and so far as in us lyes, to maintain the honor and privileges of his place, which shall hereafter be ratified according to God, the Lord helping us so to do."

The obligation taken by Coddington, is:

"I, William Coddington, Esquire, being called and chosen by the Freemen Incorporate of this Bodie Politick, to be a judge amongst them, do covenant to do justice and judgment impartially, according to the laws of God, and to maintain the fundamental rights and privileges of this Bodie Politick, which shall hereafter be ratified, according unto God, the Lord helping us so to do"

(Signed) William Coddington.

The three clauses constitute their whole Constitution or Organic Law, and the simplicity and directness which characterize it, and the compact and perspicacious manner, in which their subsequent acts are expressed, argues, that if there were any lawyers among them, they must have been of very limited legal accomplishments. They fortunately had very few physicians, and as Edward Johnson says, they were all ministers, they could not be better off in that regard.

January 2d, 1638–9, Mr. Nicholas Easton, Mr. John Coggeshall and Mr. Wm. Brenton were chosen Elders.

At this meeting, the duties of the Judge and Elders are thus defined,

"That such, who shall be chosen to the place of Eldership, they are to assist the judges in the execution of justice and judgment, for the regulating and ordering of all offences and offenders; and for the drawing up and determining of such Rules and Laws, as shall be according to God, which may conduce to the good and welfare of the Commonwealth. And to them is committed, by the Body, the whole care and charge of all the affairs thereof. And that the Judge together with the Elders, shall rule and govern according to the general rule of the word of God; when they have no particular rule, from God's word, by the Body proscribed, (prescribed) as a direction unto them in the case. And further, it is agreed, and consented unto: That the Judge with the Elders shall be accountable unto the Body, once every quarter of the year, (when as the Body shall be ass mbled) of all such cases, actions and rules, which have passed through their hands, by them to be scanned and weighed by the word of Christ And if by the Body or any of them, the Lord shall be pleased to dispense light to the contrary of what, by the Judge and Elders, hath been determined formerly, that then and there it shall be repealed as the act of the Body. And if otherwise, that then it shall stand till further light concerning it, for the present to be according to God, and the tender care of indulgent Fathers."

"Given this 2d of 11th, 1638."

At this meeting, the name of Jeremiah Clarke first appears, as a member of the Body, present, when he was admitted does not appear.

Febuary 7th, 1638–9, by Judge and Elders were admitted Freemen:

Thomas Beeder.	Robert Stanton.
John Marshall.	Osamond Doutch.

Febuary 21st, 1638-9, by Judge and Elders were admitted Freemen:

Joseph Clarke.	John Driggs.
Robert Carr.	

Up to April 28th, 1639, the original Institution seems to have subsisted, modified by the addition of Elders. Jan. 2d, 1638-9, at that time, a portion of them removed and established themselves at Newport. Among these were all the prominent officials.

The agreement, under which this settlement was made, was drawn and subscribed before taking their departure from Pocasset, and is as follows:

"Pocasset, on the 28th of the 2d, (month) 1639."

"IT IS AGREED."

"By us, whose names are underwritten, to propagate a Plantation in the midst of the Island or elsewhere. And do engage ourselves to bear equal charges, answerable to our strength and estates, in common, and that our determination shall be by major voice of Judge and Elders; the judge to have a double voice."

PRESENT.

William Coddington, Judge.
Nicholas Easton, John Coggeshall, William Brentot, } Elders.

John Clarke. Thomas Hazard.
Jeremy Clarke. Henry Bull.
William Dyre, Clerk.

Thirty-two days after, viz. April 30th, 1639, those who remained at Pocasset, entered into the following Compact, viz:

"We whose names are underwritten, do acknowledge ourselves as the legal subjects of (his majestic) King Charles, and in his name, do hereby bind ourselves into a civil Body Politic, unto his laws, according to matters of justice."

William Hutchinson.	Anthony Paine. C. Marke.
Samuel Hutchinson.	Jobe Hawkins. H. Marke.
Samuel Gorton.	Richard Awarde.
John Wicks.	John Mow. N. Marke.
Richard Maggson.	Nicholas Brown. N. Marke.
Thomas Spicer.	Wm. Richardson. X. Marke

John Roome. R. Marke.
Thomas Beeder II Marke.
Sampson Shotten.
Ralph Earle.
Robert Potter.
Nathanyell Potter N Marke.
W. F. Haven. W. T. Marke.
George Chare ɔ
George Lawton.
John Trippe.
Thomas Layton. T. Marke.
Robert Stanton. S. Marke.
John Briggs. X. Marke.
Jomes Davice. 177 Marke.
John Sloffe. I. Marke.
Erasmus Bullocke.
George Potter. X. Marke.

Four of these are mentioned in Miantonomi's deed of Warwich, besides, Holden, Carder, and Woodel who were residents of Portsmouth, though their names are not attached to this instrument.

Singularly enough, fifteen of these names are signed by mark, though not by any of the Warwick men. On the same date, they elected a judge, supposed to have been Wm. Hutchinson, although, from the defective condition of the records, his name is obliterated. (We depend on Govr. Winthrop's journal for the solution of this problem.)

It appears also, that they elected eight men to assist the Judge, in the duties of administration.

They voted also, that there should be a Court held every Quarter, "to do right between man and man," at which, the Judge and assistants should settle questions not involving an amount exceeding forty shillings, larger amounts requiring a jury of twelve men.

The paucity of records and documents, and the imperfect preservation of those of Portsmouth, (which name the inhabitants of Pocasset adopted, July 1st, 1639,) and the almost total destruction of those of Newport, render the elucidation of the motives which led to this separation, very difficult.

Whether each town had a separate polity, during the year between March 1639, and March 1640, does not fully appear, but the organization, by Portsmouth, of the full machinery of administration, with a Court of Judicature &c., implies that, for the time being, at least, they recognized no interdependance.

A passage in Govr. Winthrop's Journal, is the only collateral authority I have been able to find, which alludes to the subject.

(Savages Winthrop, Vol 1. p. 295.)

"Apr. 11, 1639. At Aquiday, the people grew very tumultuous, and put out Mr. Coddington and the other three Magistrates, and chose Mr. Wm. Hutchinson only, a man of a very mild temper and weak parts, and wholly guided by his wife, who had been the beginner of all the former troubles in the country, and still continued to breed disturbance."

In Savage's notes on this passage, Mr. Eddy contradicts this election of Hutchinson in 1639, because the Colonial records do not give it; but the records of the town of Portsmouth, published many years later than Winthrop's Journal, (1825) confirm Mr Winthrop, as to Mr. Hutchinson's election, or an election, but the rest of the passage must be interpreted in the light of Mr. Winthrop's prejudices and those of his informers, and has no more authority than country gossip; though he was perfectly sincere in reporting it. It harmonizes too well with his prophetic visions, to provoke any very severe efforts in judical analysis. I may here say, that while Gov. Winthrop's facts are entirely reliable when they occur in his own observation, a great part of them are at second hand, and he cannot be held responsible for them. I say therefore, that Winthrop's Journal although among our best authorities, is not reliable, until carefully and rigidly scaled down.

At the the first organization, March 7, 1638, it is to be observed, Mr. Coddington was elected Judge, but, as far as the records shows, no specifick limitation was assigned for his incumbency; according to modern practice, it would be, by implication, one year: possibly, it was intended to be permanent, according to the official usuages then prevailing in England, or during good behaviour, or during the pleasure of the appointing power. If for one year, then his term would have expired at about the time of removal to Newport.

But, so far as appears by the record no election was held at Newport, in April 1639, either of Judge or Elders. They merely agree to be governed by the major voice of Judge and Elders, in the Plantation which they propose to propagate, and without reference to the settlement or Plantation already made at Pocasset.

The Elders had been elected on the Seventh of November, 1638, their term of service could not then be supposed it expire in April.

The record made in Portsmouth, appears to have been taken to Newport, by the Clerk, Mr. Dyre, who, as well as, the Judge and all three of the Elders, were parties in that settlement, and the records of Newport, to have been kept continuously, in the same book, as the records of Portsmouth were not, and to have been always regarded as an intergral part of the records of the Colony.

It is difficult to understand why, the number of settlers removing, being much the smaller, this should be so, and it is not improbable that there were differences between them, but the records afford no evidence of conflict of authority, and it is certain that after 1648, the time of his suspension, the influence of Coddington was greater in Portsmouth than in Newport. The most probable theory is that the whole Island being common property, the removal to Newport was regarded, as merely a removal of the seat of government, and not necessarily, ever that, for some of the sessions may have been in Portsmouth, and Mr. Brenton was still a resident of Portsmouth, and for several years after, although his name is on the Newport agreement.

It is plain that no grants of land could be secured to grantees, by either town alone.

In the list of those agreeing "to the government of it is or shall be established," Oct. 1st, 1639, are many names of Portsmouth, and many wanting, implying that the necessity for union was felt, generally, but that some of those of Portsmouth, and they the more prominent, were contumacious. This list is

eluded both towns. None of the Hutchinsons except Samuel, appear in it, Gorton, Wickes, Shotten and Potter, are on it, Holden and Carder are not.

Probably, the desire for individual title to the land, was the most powerful argument for a settlement, as they were issued immediately after its completion, 1641, and none are known before.

Excepting in relation to negotiations for union, all the records for this year, indicate legislation for Newport alone.

Unfortunately, the records for this year do not specify the place where the Court was held, in any case, nor do they give the names of the persons present, as in other cases.

During this year, 1639-40 not many incidents of great significance, appear upon the records.

May 16. The name of Newport was adopted, applying to the South and East (and North) from the town to the distance of five miles, including Middletown, which was set off from Newport, by the Colonial Legislature, in 1743.

Sept. 2. It was agreed, that the trade "with the Indians shall be free to all men."

Oct. 8. "It was ordered, that the Judge and Elders shall meet on the first Tuesday in July, to determine all causes."

At this time, the inconvenience of distinct governments in so small a territory, seems to have made itself felt, and the following entry was made.

"A catalogue of such (persons) who by general consent of the Company, were admitted to be inhabitants of the Island called Aquidneck, having submitted themselves to the government that is or shall be established [therein] according to the word of God, therein."

Samuel Hutchinson. Thomas Emmons.

Richard Award, and fifty-nine others.

This list includes many of both towns, and many are wanting, whence we conclude that there were some, who had not yet acceded to the proposed plan of junction, it was nevertheless,

carried into effect, in the March following as we shall see presently.

The record of the same date, has the following entry.

"Inhabitants admitted at the Towne of Nieuport, since the 20th, of the 3d, 1638, forty-two names.

As Newport was not in existence in May 1638, and as scarcely any of these names are on the previous list, I conclude that it has been transposed from some later period, and should have refered to 1639 or 40.

Nov. 28th, 1639. This record appears.

"By the Body Politick in the Isle of Aquethuce Inhabiting this present 25th of 9th month."

In the fourtheenth yeare of the Raign of our Soveraign Lord, King Charles,"

"IT IS AGREED"

"That, as natural subjects of our Prince, and subject to his laws, all matters that concern the peace, shall be, by those that are officers of the peace, transacted, and all actions of the case or debt shall be, in such Courts as, by order, are here and appointed, and by such Judges, as are here deputed, be heard legally determined."

"Given at Nieuport, on the Quarter Court Day, which was adjourned till this day."

"Wm. Dyre, Sec.

On the same date, it was further ordered, that the Commissioners, formerly appointed to negotiate the business with our brethren of Pocasset, shall give them our propositions, under their hands and shall require their propositions, with their answers, and shall give reply unto it, and so, shall return to the Body a Brieve, of what they therein have done.

On the same date, "It was ordered, that Mr. Easson and Mr. John Clarke be desired, to inform Mr. Vane, by writing, of the state of things here, and desire him to treate about the obtaining a Patent of the Island, from his Majestic, and likewise to write to Mr. Thomas Burwood, brother to Mr. Easson, concerning the same thing."

These are all the records of this year, of public interest, and they furnish no hint to any pretension to any jurisdiction, beyond the limits of Newport, nor of any present or past difference with their brethren of Portsmouth, the only intimation of any animosity or difference between them, being the passage in Winthrop's journal, heretofore quoted.

March 12. 1640. A highly important crisis occurred in the fortunes of the infant settlment. A convention of the two towns, was held at Newport.

As far as may be judged from the record, it consisted of eighteen leading citizens of Newport, and ten of Portsmouth, at which, a new form of government, for the whole Island, was established, and officers were elected under it.

Whether the ten Portsmouth men admitted under the third section of the record were present is not made clear, I incline to the opinion that they were, and were part of the convention, in which case, the number from each town would be equal, as follows :

From Newport.	From Portsmouth.
Mr. Wm. Coddington, Judge.	Mr. Wm. Hutchinson.
" Nicholas Easton, Elder.	" Wm. Balstone.
" John Coggeshall, "	" John Sanford.
" Wm. Brenton, "	" John Porter.
" Robert Jeoffreys, Treas'r.	" Adam Mott.
" John Clarke.	" Wm. Freeborne.
" Jeremy Clarke.	" John Walker.
" Wm. Foster.	" Philip Sherman.
" Samuel Wilbore.	" Richard Carder.
" Wm. Cowlie.	" Randall Holden. 10.
" Thomas Hazard.	" Samuel Hutchinson,
" Robert Field.	" Thomas Emons.
" Thomas Clarke.	" Job Hawkins.
" George Gardner.	" Richard Awards.
" Henry Bull.	" Sampson Shotten.
" Joseph Clarke.	" Toby Knight,
" Robert Stanton.	" John Roome.
" Wm. Dyre, Secr'y. (18)	" George Barker. (18)

Whether these men were present, as delegates or in their sovereign capacity, does not appear, but, from the purely Democratic forms which they adopted, the latter seems more probable, no record is extant, of the preparatory steps.

The future records of Portsmouth, are all made under the title of Town Meetings, whereas, in 1639, they were recorded as meetings or qnarter meetings.

The meetings subsequent to this date, in the General Record, and which, in the printed Record, are under the head of Newport, are always entitled Meetings of the General Court, and were held, interchangably at Newport and Portsmouth.

The record of March 12th, 1640, is as follows:

"At the General Court of Election, held on the twelfth day of the first month, 1640, in the

Towne of Neuport.

present, eighteen as before mentioned.

1. Mr. William Hutchinson and nine others from Portsmouth, presenting themselves, and desiring to be reunited to this Body, are readily embraced by us."

2. "It is agreed, by this Body united: that if there shall be anie person found meet for the service of the same, in eyther Plantation, if there be no just exception against him, upon his orderlie presentation, he shall be received as a freeman thereof."

3. "It is agreed, that Mr. Samuel Hutchinson, (and seven others, of Portsmouth,) are received as Freemen of this Body, fully to enjoy the privileges belonging thereto."

4. "It is ordered, that the Chiefe Magistrate of this Island, shall be called Governour, and the next, Duputy Governour, and the rest of the Magistrates, Assistants: and this to stand for a Decree."

5. "It is agreed, that the Governour and two Assistants, shall be chosen from one town, and the Deputy Governour and two Assistants from the other town."

6. "It is ordered, that the other end of the Island shall be called Portsmouth."

7. The following officers were chosen for one year, or till a new be chosen, viz.:

Governor, Wm. Coddington, of Newport.
Deputy Gov'r, Wm. Brenton, of Portsmouth.
Assistant, Nicholas Easton, of Newport.
" John Coggeshall, of Newport.
" Wm. Hutchinson, of Portsmouth.
" John Porter, of Portsmouth.
Treasurer, Robert Geoffreys, of Newport.
" Wm. Balston, of Portsmouth.
Secretary, Wm. Dyre, of Newport.
Constable, Jeremy Clarke, of Newport.
" Mr. Sanford, of Portsmouth.
Sergeant Attend't, Henry Bull, of Newport.

8 "It is agreed and ordered, that the Governour and Assistants, are invested with the Offices of the Justices of the Peace, according to the Law."

Four other orders of this Court, provide and appoint five from Portsmouth and three from Newport, for the division of lands.

At the General Court, held at Newport, May 6th, 1640, it was ordered,

19. That the particular Courts, consisting of Magistrates and Jurors, shall be holden on the first Tuesday of each month; and one Court to be held at Nieuport, the other at Portsmouth, and that the sayd Court, shall have full power to judge and determine all such cases and actions, as shall be presented."

"At the General Court, held at
Portsmouth, the 6th of August,
1640,
It was ordered,

23. That each town shall have a joynt and equal supply of the money in the Treasury, for the necessary uses of the same, and that the Governor and one Assistant, from one town, and

the Deputy Governor and one Assistant, from the other town, shall give a warrant, according to the determination of the major vote of the townsmen, for the same, unto the Treasurer, which shall be his discharge," and further provides the manner of keeping his accounts.

25. Provides,

"That each Towne shall have the transaction of the affaires that shall fall within their own Towne; and that the Magistrates of each Towne shall have Libertie to call a Court, every first Tuesday in the month, at Nuport, and every first Thursday in the month, at Portsmouth; wherein actions may be entered, and juries empannelled, and causes tryed."———"Provided that it be not in the matter of Life and Limb; and that if so be a Plaintiff hath commenced his suit, and the defendant cast, he shall have libertie to make his appeal to the Quarter Sessions, which are to be held upon the four Quarter dayes. And the two Parliamentarie (or General) Courts to be held on the Wednesday after the 12th of March, with what time is requisite thereunto; and the other the Wednesday after the 12th of October, with what time is requisite thereunto; which Courts are equally to be kept at the two Townes. And what former orders are repugnant hereunto are hereby nullified."

"For the better understanding of the terme of the four Quarter dayes, It was, at the next Sessions of the Court General, determined, that the Quarter Sessions Courts should be held the Tuesdays (or dayes) before the General Courts; and the other two to fall, the one the first Tuesday in July, and the other the first Tuesday in January."

September 14th. A session of the General Court was held, the place not specified; as the preceding session was at Portsmouth, this was probably at Newport. At this, nothing transpired of great public significance.

"At the General Court of Election began and held at Portsmouth, from the 15th of March to the 19th of the same month.

1641.

The Court roll of Freeman, with the Officers as they were elected, on the 16th of March, 1641."

Mr. Wm. Coddington, Governour, Newport.
" Wm. Brenton, Dep. Gov., Portsmouth.
" John Coggeshall, Assis't, Newport.
" Robert Harding, Assis't, Newport.
" Wm. Balston, Assis't and Treas., Portsmouth.
" John Porter, Assis't, Portsmouth.
" Wm. Dyre, Secretary, Newport.
" Robert Jeoffreys, Treas., Newport.
" Thos. Gorton, Serg't Attend't, Portsmouth.
" Henry Bull, " " Newport.
" Thos. Cornell, Constable, Portsmouth.
" Henry Bishop, " Newport.

And 53 freemen, of whom the last four, Carder, Holden, Shatton and Robert Potter, are in italics, and a note appended, by which they were disfranchised, and their names ordered to be "cancelled out of the roll."

A discussion of this act would not be pertinent to my present purpose; it had no reference to religious faith; they refused to recognize any authority in government, which had no sanction from the Crown, and were, therefore, considered unsafe citizens.

1. "It is ordered and unanimously agreed upon, that the Government which this Bodie Politick doth attend unto, in this Island, is a DEMOCRACIE, or popular Government, that is to say, it is the power of the Body of Freemen orderly assembled, or the major part of them, to make or constitute just Laws, by which they will be regulated, and depute from among themselves such ministers as shall see them faithfully executed between man and man."

4. It is ordered further, by the authority of this present Court, that none be accounted Delinquent for Doctrine: Pro-

vided, it be not repugnant to ye Government and Laws established."

7. At this session, the dates for Quarter Courts were fixed for the first Tuesdays in March, June, September and December.

12. The Office of Justice of the Peace was confirmed to the Magistrates.

The Secretary was ordered to transcribe the Laws, and to furnish the town, wherein the Secretary is not a resident, with a copy.

15. "It is ordered, that a Manual Seale shall be provided for the State, and that the Signett or Emblem thereof shall be a sheafe of arrows bound up, and in the Liess or Bond, this motto indented: '*Amor vincet omnia.*'"

16. An oath of fidelity was ordered to be taken by the Justices of the Peace, at the Quarter Sessions, of all men or youth above the age of fifteen years.

19. It is ordered, that the major part of the Courts, being lawfully assembled at the place and hour appointed, shall have full power to transact the business that shall be presented: Provided, it be the major part of the Body entire, if it be the General Court (present,) or the major part of the magistrates, with the Jury in the inferior Courts; and that such acts concluded and issued, be of as full authority as if they were all present: Provided, there be due and seasonable notice given of every such Court.?'

20. "It is ordered, established and decreed, unanimouslie, that all men's proprieties in their Lands in the Island, and the jurisdiction thereof, shall be such and so free, that neyther the State, nor any person or persons, shall intrude into it, molest him in itt, to deprive him of anything whatsoever that is or shall be within that or any of the bounds thereof; and this tenure and propriety of his therein, shall be continued to him or his, or to whomsoever he shall assign it, forever and ever."

The sacred character of the tenure of land, which our fer-

bears entertained, and which the last paragraph so tersely and emphatically expresses, was so thoroughly ingrained in their convictions, that every original grant of land under this dual and yet homogeneous nationality, has, incorporated in it, a copy of this remarkable declaration.

Do I say nationality? It is because they acted under no authority but their own inspired impulse; they designate their institution the State, and in many instances, "State General," they constitute themselves a Democracy, and establish themselves in a government, in which the officers are elective annually, and whose functions are only ministerial and executive; and an appeal, in all cases, is reserved to the body of the people, in General Court assembled, which tribunal is to assemble twice in every year, that the streams of justice may not be contaminated by issuing too far from the fountain.

It is true that there were a few faint expressions of loyalty to the Prince, and a few feeble invocations of royal favor and recognition, but surely nothing could be more repugnant to the traditions of the Stuarts, or diverge more widely from the principles of polity which Charles I. and his ministers were disposed to foster.

It is true, also, that Mr. Clarke and Mr. Easton were desired, in view "of the state of things here," to communicate with Mr. Vane, Nov. 30, 1634, and Mr. Burwood, about the obtaining a Patent for the Island, and that Portsmouth, April 30, same year, declared themselves the legal subjects of King Charles, but both these records were made, be it observed, when the two towns were disunited, and felt most sensibly their own weakness.

It is true that, after the Union, the application for a Patent was persisted in, but they probably contemplated nothing more than a confirmation of themselves, in the position they had assumed, of governing themselves in their own manner.

Their applications failed, and when they were authorized

to associate themselves with Providence and Warwick, under the Patent of Providence Plantations, liberal as its provisions were, they were slow to avail themselves of it.

At any rate, from 1640 to 1647, Rhode Island was an autonomous government, as was the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations from her declaration of independence, in May, 1776, to the adoption of the Federal Constitution, and during that period Rhode Island was essentially a distinct nationality.

For the years 1645 and 1646, there are no records, and for 1643 and 1644, meagre ones, and probably the previous ones are somewhat defective, but I have endeavored to draw no deductions which are not amply justified by those remaining.

There is no doubt that the book in the secretary's office, from which all these records are derived, is that which is sometimes referred to as the clasped book, and that part of it is lost; it is certain, at any rate, that many of the deeds made under the division in 1641, are wanting.

LIBERTY OF CONSCIENCE.

In the original compact, made and subscribed to at Providence, none but divine control is recognized; and submission to the will of the Almighty, according to the laws revealed in his written word, independent of interpretations by creeds or sects, seems to be the chart and compass by which alone they proposed to be guided, on the dark and difficult voyage on which they had embarked; and surely, although, in some measure, for a certain period, they were compelled to commit themselves to other agencies, they never distrusted the power they had so solemnly invoked, and it were impious to doubt that all other influences were overruled for good, and that, notwithstanding the shortcomings of their progeny, many of the blessings we now enjoy, are the fruits of their humble submission to divine authority, and faith in divine aid and guidance.

At the September session of the General Court, the declara-

tion of March, 1640, was reiterated, in the following terms, to wit:

30. "It is ordered, that the Law of the last Court, made concerning Liberty of Conscience, is perpetuated."

Although, so far as appears, this doctrine was not, until March, 1641, made part of the record, there is no doubt that it was, from the inception of the enterprise, by them, as by the settlers of Providence, recognized as a vital principle in their establishment; in fact, as the corner stone of the structure they proposed to erect.

As appears: This idea was first promulgated at Providence, in a settlement of affairs or covenant, signed by thirty-nine citizens, July 27th, 1640, and it implies that this had always been regarded by them as a principle, if not a recorded obligation.

The clause is as follows, viz.:

"We agree, as formerly hath been the liberties of the town, so still, to hold forth Liberty of Conscience." [Staples' Annals of Providence, page 411; and Hazard's State papers, page 465.]

There is also a record of an agreement, signed by thirteen residents of Providence, not including Roger Williams, entering into a town fellowship, and agreeing to be governed "by the major consent of the present inhabitants, masters of families, incorporated together in a town of fellowship, and others whom they shall admit unto them, only in civil things."

This, undoubtedly, was intended to reserve their freedom of belief, though it equally exonerates them from military obligation. This is dated Aug. 20; it was probably shortly after their arrival, though the year is not specified.

Joshua Verin's case, for restraining his wife's liberty of conscience, proves the tenacity with which the people of Providence adhered to this provision. [Staples' Annals, Prov. 23-4-5-6; and Savage's Winthrop, Vol. I, page]

On the junction of Newport, Portsmouth, Providence and

Warwick, as I shall hereafter show, under the charter of Earl Warwick, the sentiment of the people was most emphatically expressed, in the reaffirmation of this doctrine.

All the evidence goes to show that the three settlements of Providence, Warwick and Rhode Island, were entirely in harmony on this point, and equally earnest in making it an integer in their polity.

I take leave to quote from Johnson's "Wonder-working Providence of Sious Saviour, in New England." [Mass. Hist. Soc. Coll. 2d series, Vol. 7, page 24.]

"About this time (1640,) there was a town and church planted at Mount Wollestone, and named Braintree. It was occasioned by some old planters and certain farmers, belonging to the great town of Boston; they had formerly one Mr. Whelewright to preach unto them, (till this Government could no longer contain them) they, many of them, belonging to the Church of Christ at Boston, but after his departure, they gathered into a Church themselves; having some enlargement of land, they began to be well peopled, calling to office among them, the reverend and godly Mr. Wm. Thompson and Mr. Henry Flint, the one to the office of a Pastor, the other of a teacher; the people are purged, by their industry, from the soure leaven of those sinful opinions that began to spread, and if any remain among them, it is very covert, yet the manner of these Erronists that remain in any place, is to countenance all sorts of sinful opinions, as occasions serve, both in Church and Commonwealth, under pretence of Liberty of conscience, (as well their own opinion, as others) by this symbol they may be known in Court and Country."

Johnson, it will be recollected, was one of the Massachusetts commissioners to Warwick in 1643, who exemplified their judicial spirit by marching an army of forty men through Providence, where they had no right, to Warwick, where they had no right, besieging, capturing and taking as prisoners to Boston,

all the male population, driving their cattle with them, and leaving the women and children to subsist as they might through the winter, during which time the men were imprisoned in different Massachusetts towns; the Indians, the while, working their own sweet will with such part of their homes and goods as the marauders did not think it worth their while to carry away.

I never tire of this subject, but my hearers may, but it does not pertain to my subject, and I pass on. I like to quote Johnson; I have great respect for him; I believe him entirely sincere in his convictions and entirely truthful as to his facts. He is the incarnation of the repressive spirit which actuated the authorities of Massachusetts, at that time, and for fifty years after, antagonism to which was the appointed mission of Rhode Island.

Other passages from Johnson might be quoted, to prove the abominable and licentious doctrines advocated by Mrs. Hutchinson and her associates, for eighty of which they were arraigned before the Synod of Newton, to twenty-six of which Mrs. Hutchinson plead guilty, but there is abundant justification for the conclusion, that their most flagrant offence, in the eyes of their brethren, was their denial of the coercive power of government over human belief.

And who shall say, that Massachusetts, in all her history for the succeeding fifty years, did not, in her practice, justify her theory?

Whether they had advanced in their views, may be judged from a quotation from the requisition made on them by King Charles Second's commissioners, Nicoll, Carr, Cartwright and Maverick, May 24th, 1665, proposing certain changes in their laws, adapting them to the Royal Supremacy instead of the Protectoral and Parliamentary, under which they had been framed, a passage in which reads as follows:

"That page 34, heresy and error, ought to be declared with more caution, and a Salvo to the Church of England, and the members thereof."

"That page 36, section 9th, the Law against Quakers, may be restrained, that they may quietly pass about their lawful occasions, though, in other cases, they be punished." [Danforth papers, Mass. Hist. Soc. Coll. Vol. 8, page 86]

Previously, May 18, 1665, Col. Richard Nichol, Sir Robert Carr and Mr. Samuel Maverick, had presented themselves to the Court, and Col. Nicoll addressed them. Among other things, he said,

"For the use of the Common Prayer Book, His Majesty doth not impose the use of the Common Prayer Book on any, but he understands that Liberty of Conscience comprehends every man's conscience, as well any particular, and thinks that all his subjects should have, equally, an allowance thereof; he puts no man upon it; but why you should put that restraint on His Majesty's subjects, that live under his obedience, His Majesty doth not understand that you have any such privileges." [Ibid. Vol. 8, page 78-9.]

Also, in a written address, of same date, May 18th, the commissioners say, apparently in answer to a remonstrance from the General Court,

"The end of the first planters coming hither was, as expressed in your address (1660,) the enjoyment of the liberty of your own consciences, which the King is so far from taking away from you, that, by every occasion, he hath promised and assured the full enjoyment of it to you: We therefore admire, that you should deny the Liberty of Conscience to any, especially where the King requires it; and that, upon a vain conceit of your own, that it will disturb your enjoyments, which the King often hath said, it shall not." [Ibid. Vol. 8, page 76.]

His Majesty, in a letter of June 28, 1662, had given them a hint to the same effect. (Ibid. page 52 and seq.)

I here interject, as throwing additional light on the feeling entertained between Rhode Island and the other colonies, on this subject, part of an address to Richard Cromwell, Lord Pro-

tector, by the General Assembly of Providence Plantations, May 17, 1659.

"May it please your highness to know, That this poor Colony of Providence Plantations mostly consists of a birth and breeding of the most high, we being an outcast people, formerly from our Mother Nations, in the Bishop's days, and since from the rest of the New English over-zealous Colonies, (bearing with the several judgments of each other, in all the towns of our Colony, the which, our neighbor Colonies do not, which is the only cause of their offence against us,)* our whole frame being much like unto the present frame and constitution of our dearest Mother, England."

This document distinctly verifies the accuracy of the views which the King's Commissioners had imbibed, in relation to Massachusetts at about the same era, or shortly after.

The hints of the Commissioners and of the King, seem to have failed entirely of effect; they were prompted, doubtless, in some degree, by the executions which had occurred not long before.

In 1659, Wm. Robinson and Marmaduke Stevenson; in 1660, Mary Dyer; in 1661, Wm. Leader, had, as the friends' records in Newport say, suffered martyrdom at Boston. And between 1665 and 1675, the notorious persecutions of the founders of the First Baptist Church in Boston occurred, full accounts of which may be found in "Backus' and Benedict's Histories of the Baptists," and in many other authorities, and cover a period of ten years, at least, subsequent to the lectures of the commissioners.

Being traditionally and by conviction, a Congregationalist, I recall, with regret, these phases of puritanical administration, but I should be recreant to my duty, did I overlook them in this case, and while compelled to condemn them, as, in the emphatic expression of the Rhode Island address, "over-zealous," I am proud to say, in the same correspondence with the com-

missioners, in resisting the threatened usurpations of the Crown, they exhibited a patience, prudence and manly determination, which is worthy of all praise, and which, for a time, averted the humiliation which awaited them in the succeeding reign.

And yet, in the face of the evidence I have thus endeavored to set before you, and various other evidence of the same purport, and in face of the equally well-known and well-established fact, that the governments of Plymouth, New Haven and Connecticut, were in full sympathy with Massachusetts (although their annals are stained by no such acts of outrage,) and that their faces were set, like a flint, against the recusants of Narragansett Bay—at a bi-centennial celebration of the Confederation of the United Colonies of New England, at Boston, in 1843, the spot which reeked with the blood of those martyrs to liberty, John Quincy Adams, than whom, no man on the Continent of America was more familiar with every phase of New England history, who has started on his triumphal march down the ages, as the foremost champion of human liberty in modern times—John Quincy Adams had the hardihood to claim, that to the United Colonies of New England mankind were indebted for the glorious principle of Liberty of Conscience.

And such is history! "O tempora! O mores!"

If I were to characterize the histories of New England, as far as I am familiar with them, I should say, that, with a few exceptions, they ought to be collected and published in one set, with uniform binding, and entitled "Boston, a Poem;" and a very valuable romance it would be. The facts are there, but the analysis, how partial! the coloring, how fanciful! The special pleading of the annalists, from whom the data are derived, and who were generally of Massachusetts, and involved in their transactions, has given tone to succeeding histories.

I ask your forbearance while I make a few quotations, proving still further the position of Rhode Island on this question.

"Wm. Arnold to the Governor of Massachusetts," speaking of the Gortonists and Roger Williams, of Providence, says,

"It is a great pity and very unfit, that such a Company as these are, they all stand professed enemies of all the United Colonies, should get a charter for so small a quantity of land, as lyeth in and about Providence, Shawomut, Pawtuxit and Coicit, all which, now Rhode Island is taken out of it.* It is but a small strape of land, lying between the Colonies of Massachusetts, Plymouth and Conitaquot, by which means, if they should get a charter of it, there may come some mischiefe and trouble upon the whole country, if their project be not prevented in time, for under the pretence of Liberty of Conscience, about these partes there comes to live, all the scumme, the runne awayes of the country, which, in tyme, for want of better order, may bring a heavy burthen upon the land.

(Signed) William Arnold.

(dated) Patuxit, this first day of the 7th month, 1651."

[from Hazard's State papers, page 555.]

I find in R. I. State papers, Mass. Hist. Soc. Coll. 2d Series, Vol. 7, p. 79, the following vote of Rhode Island General Assembly, May 19-21, 1647, on organizing under the first charter, at Portsmouth:

"It is agreed by this present Assembly, thus incorporate, and by this present act declared, that the form of government established in Providence Plantations, is Democratical, that is to say, a government held by the free and voluntary consent of all, or the greater part of the free inhabitants.

"And now, to the end that we may give to each other (notwithstanding our different consciences, touching the truth as it is in Jesus,) as good and hopeful assurance as we are able, touching each man's peaceable and quiet enjoyment of his lawful right and liberty. We do agree unto, and, by the authority aforesaid, enact, establish and confirm these orders following."

*Referring to Coddington's Perpetual Commission.

This is part of the enacting clause of the code of laws, the concluding paragraph of which code is as follows, and is not in the printed record :

"These are the laws that concern all men, and these are the penalties for the transgressions thereof, which, by common consent, are ratified and established throughout the whole Colony. And otherwise than thus, what is herein forbidden, all men may walk, as their consciences persuade them, every one in the name of his God. And let the Lambs of the Most High walk, in this Colony, without molestation, in the name of Jehovah their God, forever."

These papers were furnished, with annotations by Samuel Eddy, Secretary of State, afterwards Chief Justice, and were published in 1826.

Judge Eddy's commentary on this remarkable declaration, is appended, and is as follows :

"The men who, at such a time, and under such circumstances, could frame such a law, and undeviatingly adhere to its principle, though stigmatized as 'heretics, schismatics, antinomians, Anabaptists, Quakers, seekers, soul-murderers, children of Korah, beasts of prey, the very dregs of familism, incendiaries of commonwealths, troublers of churches, and (even in 1809) the rebel band,' or by any or all the opprobrious epithets that bigotry or party zeal can cast upon them, yet, will I reverence, on this side idolatry."

The singular felicity of expression of this note of Judge Eddy's, finds a responsive echo in every true Rhode Island heart, nor can such a limit be put to its magnetic power; it appeals to the æsthetic sensibilities of every individual in all lands, and in all times, whose soul is susceptible to the influences of eternal truth

Our ancestors, therefore, are shown, upon all suitable occasions, to have positively asserted and emphasized their perpetual adhesion to freedom of belief, without qualification, as the sh

anchor on which their institutions depended, and their exact conformity to that principle, in all cases, has never been called in question.

I, as a Rhode Island man, am exceedingly proud of the position assumed and assiduously and pertinaciously adhered to, on the part of the settlers of this colony, and I am, perhaps, unreasonably jealous of any attempt to divide with them the glory, which to them exclusively attaches, of establishing and promoting, for very many years, alone, a government founded upon this essential truth, under every sort of adverse influence ever visited upon men, under like circumstances, and especially do I reprobate and resent a claim of that kind, on behalf of those whose whole influence and effort (and it was exceptionally potential) was strained to its utmost tension to discourage and crush this feeble band, whose only common religion was an adherence to this great vital principle, which was, avowedly, the essential heresy and crime, which, in their eyes justified their consistent and persistent hostility.

How, during the dark and trying period of our eventful history, which closed with the seventeenth century, were the rest of the civilized world engaged? Let the poor, distracted, murdered, pillaged, ravished and tortured Covenanters answer for Scotland. Let the victims of prelatical persecution put in a rejoinder for England. Let the dragonades which watered the fair fields of France with her best blood, tell her story; and the fires, the dungeons, the racks, and all the inconceivable cruelties and atrocities, wring the soul with auguish, for the daily and hourly sufferings of Continental Europe, under the demoniacal inspiration of Torquemada.

We know how it was with the United Colonies While their hearts were agonized by the sufferings of their brethren in England and Scotland, and horrified by the terrible statistics of crime and blood, perpetrated in the name of the gentle Saviour, on the Continent of Europe, they could not grasp the logical

sequence of these enormities, they could not yield one jot or tittle of the right to compel conformity, which, they conceived, inhered in the anointed of God.

Meanwhile, on this almost infinitesimal point of civilization and Christianity, and by this little band of obscure individuals, the spark had been struck, and nursed and fostered in its feeble glimmerings, and now, behold! in its full blaze it lights all mankind in the pathway to universal emancipation. What do not Christianity, commerce, science and the arts owe to the three little communities, which were driven from Massachusetts for non-conformity to certain tenets, which, if they had any meaning to the ultra-Puritan mind, are couched in a jargon which is incomprehensible to the modern understanding!

Our fathers could not have had the remotest conception of the magnitude and importance of the great work which they inaugurated. It probably never occurred to them that its benefits ever would extend beyond their own limits, but they are not the less entitled to our veneration. They were the first to plant a community upon the solid foundation of God's everlasting truth, that no man is answerable for his convictions, except to his Maker.

All honor to the men who first made it an article of their constituent law, as all men now acknowledge it to be, of God's Law.

I would not be understood as disparaging the Puritan Fathers of Massachusetts, or of Connecticut and Plymouth. God forbid that any American should withhold his admiration for the sturdy endurance with which they encountered the political and religious outrages of the English government and hierarchy, or the manly heroism with which they braved the perils of the dreadful ocean voyage, and the still more appalling dangers and privations of a life in the trackless wilderness, among savages, in the inhospitable climate, and on the rugged soil of New England, for the sake of an unmolested enjoyment of their religion and its observances.

They planted, with great care and wisdom, seed which has germinated, and grown, and blossomed, and fructified, and gave a direction to its development, which has made it a nation such as we see; and who can doubt that the example that they bequeathed, is the great and predominant element to which the success and happiness of this great people is mainly due, and insomuch as we emulate their example, are these blessings likely to be continued to our posterity. Their faults were those of their age, and were few and venial; their virtues were many and great.

Their failure in tolerance of opinion was universal in that age, and may be palliated on the plea of misplaced zeal, and not judged by the standard of our more enlightened time. In expelling the settlers of this State, "they planted better than they knew."

Providence, Warwick and Rhode Island—we love them all alike; without all, the settlement would have been a failure. They were one in their devotion to the generic principle, which animated the councils of the Colony, from its inception. The facile tact of Roger Williams paved the way to a friendly relation with the Indians; the position and character of John Clarke were potential in their negotiations with the Mother Country; while the nerve and persistency of Holden and Greene assured the retention of Narragansett.

The sheaf of arrows, adopted as an emblem in 1641, would have been peculiarly applicable after the union of all the towns, and the legend, "*Amor vincet omnia*," was, at all times, appropriate, with those who believed men could be better converted by love than by force; but the anchor, adopted in 1647, is unexceptionable, expressive of their reliance on a power that can never fail.

Ladies and gentlemen, I thank you for your kind attention, and I ask leave to apologize. First, in that I have had the assurance to come before you for four successive years. I hinted

my misgivings (but my friends of the committee overruled my mistrust,) that it would seem to you, as it does to me, like presumption. My excuse must be, my zeal in the cause to which my leisure is devoted.

Second, that I have, as before, given you a large proportion of quotations, probably already familiar, subjecting myself to the criticism of making the text longer than the sermon; but I always feel that a point is better supported by placing the reflections in apposition with the basis on which they are founded.

I trust to your usual indulgent construction.

APPENDIX.

Remonstrance of Mr. Whelewright's Friends at Court of Election, 1637.

From Prince Soc. Publications, Hutchinson Papers, Vol. 1, p. 63.

"We whose names are underwritten (have diligently observed this honorable Court's proceedings against our dear and reverend brother in Christ, Mr. Wheelwright, now under censure at the Court, for the truth of Christ.) We do humbly beseech this honorable Court to accept this Remonstrance and Petition of ours, in all due submission tendered to your worships.

For first. Whereas our beloved brother, Mr. Wheelwright, is censured for contempt, by the greater part of this honored Court, we desire your worships to consider the sincere intentions of our brother to promote your end in the day of fast, for whereas we do perceive, your principal intention [in the] day of fast, looked chiefly at the public peace of the churches. our reverend brother did, to his best strength, and as the Lord assisted him, labor to promote your end, and therefore endeavored to draw us nearer unto Christ, the head of our union, that so we might be established in peace, which we conceive to be the true way, sanctified of God, to obtain your end, and therefore deserves no such censure, as we conceive.

Secondly. Whereas, our dear brother is censured of sedi-

tion, we beseech your worships to consider that either, the person condemned must be seditious, or must breed sedition in the hearts of his hearers, or else we know not on what grounds he shall be censured. Now to the first, we have not heard any that have witnessed against our brother for any seditious fact. Secondly, neither was the doctrine itself, being no other but the very expressions of the Holy Ghost himself, and therefore cannot justly be branded with sedition. Thirdly, if you look at the effects of his doctrine upon the hearers, it hath not stirred up sedition in us, not so much as by accident; we have not drawn the sword, as sometimes Peter did, rashly, neither have we rescued our innocent brother, as sometimes the Israelites did Jonathan, and yet they did not seditiously. The Covenant of free grace held forth by our brother, hath taught us rather, to become humble suppliants to your worships, and if we could not prevail, we would rather, with patience, give our cheeks to the smiters. Since, therefore, the Teacher, the Doctrine, and the hearers be most free from sedition (as we conceive,) we humbly beseech you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, your Judge and ours, and for the honor of this Court, and the proceedings thereof, that you will be pleased, either to make it appear to us, and to all the world, to whom the knowledge of all these things will come, wherein the sedition lies, or else, acquit our brother of the censure.

Further, we beseech you, remember the old method of Satan, the ancient enemy of free grace, in all ages of the church, who hath raised up such calumnies against the faithful Prophet of God. Eliab was called the troubler of Israel, I. Kings, 18-17, 18. Amos was charged for conspiracy, Amos, 7-10. Paul was counted a pestilent fellow, or mover of sedition, and a ringleader of a sect, Acts, 24-5. And Christ himself, as well as Paul, was charged to be a teacher of new doctrine, Mark 1-27; Acts 17-19. Now we beseech you consider, whether that old serpent work not, after his old method, even in our days.

Further, we beseech you, consider the danger of meddling against the Prophets, Psalms 105-14, 15; for what ye do unto them, the Lord Jesus takes as done unto himself; if you hurt any of his members, the head is very sensible of it; for so saith the Lord of Hosts. 'He that toucheth you, toucheth the apple of mine eye,' Zach. 2-8. And, 'better a millstone were hanged about our necks, and that we were cast into the sea, than that we should offend any of these little ones which believe on him,' Matthew, 18-6.

And lastly, we beseech you, consider how should you stand, in relation to us, as nursing Fathers, which gives us encouragement, to promote our humble requests to you, or else we would say, with the prophet Isaiah, 22-4, 'Look from me, that I may weep bitterly. Labor not to comfort me,' etc.; or as Jeremiah, 9-2, 'O, that I had in the wilderness, a lodging place of a wayfaring man.'

And thus have we made known our griefs and desires to your worships, and leave them upon record with the Lord and with you. Knowing that if we should receive repulse from you, with the Lord we shall find grace."

Commissioners of the United Colonies, N. E. Plym. Col. Records, Vol. IX. Page 151, & seq. Letter from Mass. Sept. 2, 1656.

"Honored Gentlemen—

The remembrance of the solemn covenants and promises the United Colonies (in the beginning of their combination,) made one with another, not only to strengthen the hearts and hands each of others, in the propagating and maintaining of Religion in its purity, but also to be assisting each to other, where any deficiency, in such respects, may appear; hath put us upon the pursuance of our endeavours to discharge our duties, in desiring you to consider of some such meet way and expedient, as where any defect appears, in any Colony, in the right improvement of such means and ordinances, as the Lord hath appointed all his to use and improve, for the edification of the body, whereof Christ is the head, till his second coming. Having heard, some time since, that our neighbor's Colony of Plymouth, our beloved brethren, in a great part seem to be wanting to themselves, in a due acknowledgment of and encouragement to the ministers of the Gospel, so as, many pious ministers of the Gospel have (how justly we know not) deserted their stations, callings and relations. Our desire is that some such course might be taken, as that a pious orthodox ministry might be restated amongst them, that so, the flood of error and principles of anarchy, which will not long be kept out, where Sathan and his instruments are so prevalent as to prevail the crying down of ministry and ministers, may be prevented.

Here have arrived, amongst us, several persons, professing

themselves Quakers, fit instruments to propagate the kingdom of Sathan; for the securing of ourselves and our neighbors from such pests, we have imprisoned them, till they be despatched away to the place from whence they came, one of which, Richard Smith, we have let out of prison, to return to his family, at Southampton, whence we hope and doubt not, our neighbors of Connecticut will be careful, so to order it, as he may not do the least prejudice, as also, that some general rules may be commended to the several jurisdictions, for the settlement of Government amongst the Indians, that a general law may also be commended to the General Courts, to prohibit the sale of horses to the Indians, or to transport any mares beyond the seas, to Barbadoes or otherwise, on a severe penalty. And that some general rules may be also commended to each General Court, to prevent the coming in amongst us, from foreign places, such notorious hereties as Quakers, Ranters, &c., and that strong waters to the Indians, in all the jurisdictions, may be forbidden, that the name of God be not dishonored.

Naught else, but our best respects to you, and earnest desires that the blessing of the Almighty may be on all your endeavors. Your assured loving friend,

Edward Rawson, Secretary.

Boston, 2 Sept., 1656. By order of the Magistrates."

ANSWER TO FOREGOING.

Commissioners U. Colonies to Government of Mass. Sept., 1656. Plym. Col. Records, Vol. IX. Page 156 and seq.

"The Commissioners, having considered the premises, cannot but acknowledge the godly care and zeal of the gentlemen of the Massachusetts to uphold and maintain those professed ends of coming into these parts, and of the combination of the United Colonies; which, if not attended in the particulars aforesaid, will be rendered wholly frustrate, the profession miserably scandalized, ourselves become a reproach in the eyes of those that (cannot without admiration) behold our sudden defection from our first principles. We cannot, therefore, but with all earnestness commend it to the wisdom and justice of the several jurisdictions, to take effectual care and make answerable provision, that religion and the ordinances of Christ professed, may be upheld and maintained: which cannot be, but by a due encouragement of an able and orthodox ministry, and a discountenancing of that which is heterodox, and an effectual course to keep out hereticks, the great Engine of Sathan (in these times,) to overthrow the truth; and because this business is of such high concernment to all, we shall more particularly impart our thoughts to serious consideration.

We cannot, without breach of charity, but take it for a thing granted generally, by the inhabitants of the United Colonies, that an able orthodox ministry is a precious fruit of Christ's death, resurrection and ascension, and necesary for the spiritual good of his people, and to be duly sought after in every society or township within the several jurisdictions.

And secondly, that a competent maintenance proportionable

to the ability of the place, and necessity of the minister, is a debt of justice, and not charity.

Hence thirdly, the minister may justly expect it from the Society and Township wherein he labors.

The reference or relation of a minister being to the whole society jointly, whether in church order or not; his expectation of maintenance, and the debt of justice, is from the whole society jointly.

Although the society may, according to their own discretion, use divers ways to raise his maintenance, yet, if the ways be ineffectual, though the defect may be by some particular person, yet the Society cannot be discharged, but is the debtor.

The engagement being upon the Society, and that according to right and reason, it necessarily followeth that the Society be enabled with sufficient to itself.

Therefore, the General Courts should declare such a power to be in such Societies, that there may be no pretence in them for want thereof; and if any Society or Township shall be wanting, either out of neglect or opinion, to procure and maintain, as abovesaid, an orthodox ministry, according to the Gospel, we conceive, by the rules of Scripture and practice, of not only Christian governments, but even of heathen, who not only held their Sacra in veneration, but took care of those that had the keeping of them, and the charge of making known their mysteries.

The several General Courts stand charged with the care that the people professing Christianity own and live according to the rules and ordinances of their profession, and that the dispensers thereof be encouraged as aforesaid; the maintenance of the ministers being a debt of justice from the Society, and the Society empowered to discharge it; if any particular person shall be defective to the Society, they ought to be ordered by the ordinary course of justice.

These generals we thought good to propose, from whence

we leave it to the wisdom of the several General Courts, to draw up such conclusions and orders, as may attain the end desired, and if any of the members of the said Courts should not concur (at present) with our apprehensions, we do earnestly desire, that by all means they would labor to inform and satisfy themselves of the truth of the particulars abovesaid, whereof we, for our parts, have no doubt. We do further propose to the several General Courts, that all Quakers, Ranters and other notorious hereticks be prohibited coming into the United Colonies, and if any shall hereafter come or arise amongst us, that they be forthwith secured, or removed out of all the jurisdictions.

That some safe provision be made against selling or giving strong liquors to the Indians, without particular express license from some magistrate, or other officer thereunto deputed, and that upon some weighty occasion or exigent.

And that no horse or mare, young or old, be sold to any Indian, under the penalty of five for one.

And, as to the restraint of sending forth and transporting mares, that each jurisdiction be left at their liberty; and also, that no boats, barques or any tackling belonging thereunto, be sold to any Indian, under the penalty of five for one."

HERESY AND ERROR.

Acts of the United Colonies.

Plym. Col. Records, Vol. IX. Page 81, Sept., 1646.

Upon serious consideration of the spreading nature of error, the dangerous growth and effects thereof in other places, and particularly, how the purity and power, both of religion and of civil order, is already much corrupted, if not wholly lost, in a part of New England, by a licentious liberty granted and settled, whereby many, casting off the rule of the word, profess and practise what is good in their own eyes. And upon information of what petitions have been lately put up in some of the Colonies, against the good and strait ways of Christ, both in the churches and in the Commonwealth, the Commissioners remembering that those Colonies, for themselves and their posterity, did enter into this firm and perpetual league, as for other respects, so, for mutual advice, that the truth and liberties of the Gospel might be preserved and propagated, thought it their duty, seriously to commend it to the care and consideration of each General Court within these United Colonies, that, as they have laid their foundations and measured the temple of God, the worship and worshippers, by that straight reed God hath put into their hands, so they would walk on and build up (all discouragements and difficulties notwithstanding) with an undaunted heart and unwearied hand, according to the same rules and patterns; that a due watch be kept and continued, at the doors of God's house; that none be admitted as members of the body of Christ, but such as hold forth effectual calling, and thereby union, with Christ, the head, and that those whom Christ hath received and enter by an express covenant to attend and observe the laws and duties of that spiritual corporation;

that baptism, the seal of the covenant, be administered only such members and their immediate seed; that Anabaptis Familism, Anti-nomianism, and generally all errors of like n ture, which oppose, undermine and slight, either the Scriptur the Sabbath, or other ordinances of God, and bring in and up unwarrantable revelations, inventions of men, or any car liberty, under a deceitful color of Liberty of Conscience, may seasonably and duly suppress, though they wish as much f bearance and respect may be had, of tender consciences, seeki light, as may stand with the purity of religion and peace of t Churches. (The Commissioners of Plymouth desire furth consideration concerning this advice, given to the Gene Courts."

Copy of a Letter from Mr. Roger Williams, President of Providence Plantations, to the General Court of Magistrates and Deputies assembled at Boston.

Hutchinson's Original Papers.
Hazard's State Papers, Page 610.

"PROVIDENCE, 15, 9 mo., 55 (so-called.

MUCH HONORED SIRS—

It is my humble and earnest petition unto God and you, that you may so be pleased to exercise command over your own spirits, that you may not mind myself nor the English of these parts (unworthy with myself of your eye,) but only that face of equity (English and Christian) which I humbly hope may appear, in these representations following.

First, may it please you to remember, that concerning the town of Warwick (in this Colonie,) there lies a suit of £2,000 damages against you, before his highness and the Lords of his Council, I doubt not, if you so please, but that (as Mr. Winslow and myself had well-nigh ordered it) some gentlemen from yourselves and some from Warwick deputed, may friendly and easily determine that affair between you.

Secondly, the Indians which pretend your name, at Warwick and Pawtuxet, and yet live as barbarously, if not more, than any in the country, please you to know, their insolences upon ourselves and cattel (unto £20 damages per annum,) are insufferable by English spirits; and please you to give credence that to all these, they pretend your name, and affirm that they dare not (for offending you) agree with us, nor come to rules of

righteous neighborhood, only they know you favor us not, and therefore send us for redress unto you.

Thirdly, concerning four English families at Pawtuxet, may it please you to remember, that two controversies they have long (under your name) maintained with us, to a constant obstructing of all order and authority amongst us.

To our complaint about our lands, they have lately professed a willingness to arbitrate, but to obey his highness' authority in this Charter, they say they dare not, for your sakes, though they live not by your laws, nor bear your charges nor ours, but evade both, under color of your authoritie."

Honored sirs, I cordially profess it before the most high, that I believe it, if not only they, but ourselves, and all the whole country, by joint consent, were subject to your government, it might be a rich mercy; but as things yet are, and since it pleased, first the Parliament, and then the Lord Admiral and Committee for foreign plantations, and since the Council of State, and lastly the Lord Protector and his Council, to continue us as a distinct Colony, yea, and since it hath pleased yourselves, by public letters, and reference to us from your public Courts, to own the authority of his highness amongst us; be pleased to consider how unsuitable it is for yourselves (if these families of Pawtuxet plead truth,) to be the obstructors of all orderly proceedings amongst us; for I humbly appeal to your own wisdom and experience, how unlikely it is for a people to be compelled to order and common charges, when others in their bosoms, and by such (seeming) partiality exempted from both.

And therefore (lastly) be pleased to know, that there are (upon the point) but two families which are so obstructive and destructive to an equal proceeding of civil order amongst us; for one of these four families, Stephen Arnold, desires to be uniform with us; a second, Zacharie Rhodes, being in the way of dipping, is (potentially) banished by you. Only Wm. Arnold and Wm. Carpenter (very far also in religion from you, if y

knew all.) they have some color, yet in a late conference they all plead that all the obstacle is, their offending of yourselves.

Fourthly, whereas (I humbly conceive,) with the people of this Colony your commerce is as great as with any in the country, and our dangers (being a frontier people to the barbarians) are greater than those of other Colonies, and the ill consequences to yourselves would be not few nor small, and to the whole land, were we first massacred or mastered by them. I pray your æqual and favourable reflection upon that your law, which prohibits us to buy of you all means of our necessary defence of our wives and families (yea in this most bloody and massacring time.)

We are informed that tickets have rarely been denied to any English of the country; yea, the barbarians (the notorious in lies,) if they profess subjection, they are furnished. Only ourselves, by former and later denial, seem to be devoted to the Indian shambles and massacres.

The barbarians, all the land over, are filled with artillerie and ammunition from the Dutch, openly and horridly, and from all the English over the country (by stealth,) I know they abound so wonderfully, that their activitie and insolencie is grown so high, that they daily consult, and hope, and threaten to render us slaves, as they long since (and now most horribly) have made the Dutch.

For myself (as through God's goodness,) I have refused the gain of thousands by such a murtherous trade, aud think no law yet extant amongst yourselves or us, secure enough against such a villanie; so I am loath to see so many hundreds (if not some thousands,) in this Colonie, destroyed like fools and beasts, without resistance. I grieve that so much blood should cry against yourselves; yea, and I grieve that (at this instant, by these ships) this cry and the premises should now trouble his highness and his Council. For the seasonable preventing of

which, is this humble address presented to your wisdom, by him who desires to be,

Your unfeigned and faithful servant,

Roger Williams,
of Providence Plantations,
President."

[*Postcript to Above Letter.*]

"Hon. Sirs:

Since my Letter, it comes into my heart to pray your leave to add a word as to myself, viz.: At my last return from England, I presented your then honored Governor, Mr. Bellingham, with an order of the Lords of the Council, for my free taking ship or landing at your parts, unto which it pleased Mr. Bellingham to send me his assent in writing. I humbly crave the recording of it by yourselves, lest forgetfulness hereafter again put me upon such distresses as, God knows, I suffered when I last past through your Colony to our native country.

R. W."

Copy of a Letter from Providence Plantations, to the General Court of the Massachusetts.

Hutchinson's Original Papers.

Hazard's State Papers, Page 612.

"PROVIDENCE, 12, 3 mo., 56 (so-called.

May it please this much honored Assembly to remember that, as an officer and in the name of Providence Colonie, I presented you with our humble requests, before winter, unto which, not receiving answer, I addressed myself, this spring, to your much-honored Governor, who was pleased to advise our sending of some of Providence to your Assembly.

Honored sirs, our first request (in short) was and is, for your favorable consideration of the long and lamentable condition of the town of Warwick, which hath been thus They are so dangerously and so vexatiously intermingled with the Barbarians, that I have long admired the wonderful power of God in restraining and preventing very great fires of mutual slaughters breaking forth between them.

Your wisdoms know the inhumane insultations of these wild creatures, and you may be pleased to imagine, that they have not been sparing of your name, as the patron of all their wickedness against our English men, women and children, and cattle, to the yearly damage of 60, 80 and £100

The remedie is (under God,) only your pleasure that Pumham shall come to an agreement with the town or Colonie, and that some convenient way or time be set for their removal.

And that your wisdoms may see just grounds for such your willingness, be pleased to be informed of a realitie of a solemn

covenant between this town of Warwick and Pumham, unto which, notwithstanding that he pleads being drawn to it by the awe of his superior Sachims, yet I humbly offer that what was done, was according to the law and tenor of the natives (I take it) in all New England and America, viz.: that the inferior Sachims and subjects shall plant and remove at the pleasure of the highest and supreme Sachims, and I humbly conceive that it pleaseth the most high and only wise to make use of such a bond of authoritie over them, without which they could not long subsist in humane societies, in this wild condition, wherein they are.

2. Please you not to be insensible of the slipperie and dangerous condition of this, their intermingled cohabitation. I am humbly confident, that all the English towns and plantations in all New England put together, suffer not such molestation from the natives as this one town and people. It is so great and so oppressive that I have daily feared the tidings of some public fire and mischief.

3. Be pleased to review this copie from the Lord Admiral, and that this English town of Warwick should proceed, also, that if any of yours were there planted, they should, by your authoritie, be removed. And we humbly conceive, that if the English (whose removes are difficult and chargeable,) how much more these wild ones, who remove with little more trouble and damage than the wild beasts of the wilderness.

4. Please you to be informed, that this small neck (wherein they keep and mingle fields with the English) is a very den of wickedness, where they not only practice the horrid barbarisms of all kinds of whoredoms, idolotries and conjurations, but, living without all exercise of actual authoritie, and getting store of liquors (to our grief,) there is a confluence and rendezvous of all the wildest and most licentious natives and practices of the whole country.

5. Beside satisfaction to Pumham and the former inhabitants

of this neck, there is a competitor who must also be satisfied, another sachim, one Nawwashawsuck, who (living with Ousamaquin) lays claim to this place, and are at daily feud with Pumham (to my knowledge,) about the title and lordship of it. Hostilitie is daily threatened.

Our second request concerns two or three English families at Pawtuxet, who, before our charter, subjected themselves unto your jurisdiction. It is true, there are many grievances between many of the town of Providence and them, and these, I humbly conceive, may best be ordered to be composed by reference.

2. But we have formerly made our addresses, and now do, for your prudent removal of this great and long obstruction to all due order and regular proceedings among us, viz.: the refusal of these families (pretending your name) to conform with us, unto his highness' authoritie among us.

3. Your wisdoms experimentally know how apt men are to stumble at such an exemption from all duties and services, from all rates and charges, either with yourselves or us.

4. This obstruction is so great and constant, that (without your prudent removal of it) it is impossible that either his Highness or yourselves can expect such satisfaction and observance from us, as we desire to render.

Lastly, as before, we promised satisfaction to the natives at Warwick (and shall, all possible ways, endeavor their content,) so we humbly offer, as to these, our countrymen, First, as to grievances depending, that references may settle them. Secondly, for the future, the way will be open for their enjoyment of votes and privileges, of choosing and being chosen to any office in town or colonie.

Our third request is, for your favorable leave to us to buy of your merchants, four or more barrells of powder, yearly, with some convenient portion of artillerie, considering our hazardous frontier situation to these Barbarians, who, from their abundant supply of arms, from the Dutch (and perfidious English, all the

land over,) are full of our artillerie, which hath rendered them exceedingly insolent, provoking and threatening, especially the inlanders, which have their supply from the fort of Aurania We have been esteemed, by some of you, as your thornie hedge, on this side of you; if so, yet an hedge to be maintained; if as out sentinels, yet not to be discouraged. And if there be a jealousy of the ill-use of such a favor, please you to be assured, that a credible person in each town shall have the dispose and managing of such supplies, according to the true intent and purpose.

For the obtaining of these, our just and necessary petitions, we have no inducement or hope from ourselves. Only we pray you to remember, that the matters prayed, are no way dishonorable to yourselves, and we humbly conceive do greatly promote the honor and pleasure of his Highness, yea, of the Most High also, and lastly, such kindnesses will be obligations on us, to studie to declare ourselves, upon all occasions,

Your most humble and faithful servants,
Roger Williams, President.
In the name and by the appointment of
Providence Colony.

P. S. Honored gentlemen, I pray your patience to one word, relating to myself only. Whereas, upon an order from the Lords of his Highness' Council, for my future security in taking ships and landing in your ports, it pleased your honored then Governor, Mr. Bellingham, to obey that order, under his own hand, I now pray the confirmation of it, from one word of this honored Court assembled. R. W."

Copy of a Letter from Mr. Roger Williams to the General Court.

Hutchinson's Original Papers.
Hazard's State Papers, Page 615.

"BOSTON, 17, 3, 56, (so called.)

May it please this much honored Assembly,

I do humbly hope that your own breasts and the publick shall reap the fruit of your gentleness and patience in these barbarous transactions, and I do cordially promise for myself (and all I can perswade with,) to study gratitude and faythfulness to your service.

I have debated with Pumham (and some of the natives helping with me,) who shewed him the vexatious life he lives in, your great respect and care toward him, by which he may abundantly mend himself, and be united in some convenience unto their neighborhood and your service. But I humbly conceive, in his case, that "*dies et quies sanant hominem,*" and he must have some longer breathing, for he tells me that the appearance of this competitor, Nawwushawsuck, had stab'd him. May you, therefore, please to grant him and me some longer time of conference, either until your next general assembling, or longer, at your pleasures.

My other requests, I shall not be importune to press on your great affairs, but shall make my address unto your Secretaric, to receive by him your pleasure.

Honored gentlemen,

Your humble and thankful servant,

R. W."

AN HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF

NORTH KINGSTOWN,

DELIVERED AT WICKFORD

July 4th, 1876,

BY

David Sherman Baker, Jr.

CHICAGO

PROVIDENCE:
E. A. JOHNSON & COMPANY, BOOK & JOB PRINTERS.
1876.

AN HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF

NORTH KINGSTOWN,

DELIVERED AT WICKFORD

July 4th, 1876,

BY

David Sherman Baker, Jr.

CHICAGO

PROVIDENCE:
E. A. JOHNSON & COMPANY, BOOK & JOB PRINTERS,
1876.

In accordance with the recommendations of the President and Congress of the United States, and the State Legislature (transmitted by His Excellency Governor Henry Lippitt) that appropriate exercises be held in the several towns of Rhode Island, on the one hundredth anniversary of American Independence and an historical sketch of each town be read on that occassion the Town Council of North Kingstown at its regular meeting, May 8, nominated David S. Baker, Jr. to prepare an Historical Address, and appointed Chas. Sisson, Chas. T. Crombe and Allen Reynolds of the Council a Committee of Arrangements.

At the meeting of the Council, June 11, the sum of $200 was appropriated to enable the Committee of Arrangements to carry out the purposes of their appointment.

13378
ne

(*From Rhode Island Pendulum, July* 9, 1876.)

The One Hundredth Anniversary of American Independence was celebrated here in a manner worthy the centennial year. The proceedings plainly showed, that even North Kingstown can be aroused once in a hundred years at least. The day was clear and pleasant, though warm and dusty, as usual on the Fourth of July. At six o'clock A. M. the village bells rang forth the peals of Liberty, as first it was proclaimed from Independence Hall, one hundred years ago. At seven o'clock the St. Bernard Catholic Temperance Society was escorted to the railroad station by the Annaquatucket Temple of Honor, where they took the 8 A. M. train for East Greenwich. At ten o'clock, a procession was formed at the town house for the purpose of escorting the Poet and Orator of the day, etc., to the First Baptist Church, where the exercises were held. The procession was commanded by Col. Elisha Dyer, Jr., Chief Marshal, assisted by Lieutenants E. R. Johnson and P. M. Nichols, and marched through the streets in the following order:

Narragansett Cornet Band.
Chief Marshal and Aid.
Narragansett Fire Engine Company.
Beacon Lodge, I. O. O. F., No. 38.
Carriage containing Committee of Arrangements.
Carriage containing Poet and Orator of the day, and Clergy.
Carriage containing Reader of the Declaration of Independence, and President of the Town Council.
Carriage containing Town Officers.
Annaquatucket Temple of Honor.

After the procession had entered, the church was crowded to overflowing. Mr. Chas. Sisson presided. At eleven o'clock the exercises were opened with music by the band. Prayer was then offered by the Rev. Dr. Williams. After more music by the band, the Declaration of Independence was read by Mr. William C. Baker. At the conclusion of the reading, the national hymn was sung by the choir of the Baptist church. The chairman then introduced the Poet of the day, Harrison G. O. Gardiner, Esq., who proceeded to read the poem.

After the audience were again favored with music by the band, the Orator of the day, David S. Baker, Jr., Esq., was introduced. * * * *

At the close of the oration the congregation arose and joined with the choir in singing "America." The benedection was then pronounced by Rev. Dr. Williams, and the assembly dispersed. The procession marched to the Town House, and was disbanded. At six P. M. the bells were again rung for half an hour. As the "shades of evening gathered round," a large concourse of people assembled near the railroad depot, where an open-air concert was given by the Narragansett. Cornet Band. The music was kept up till quite late, interspersed with fireworks of various kinds. And so ended a gala day for North Kingstown.

Mr. Chairman and Fellow Citizens:—

WE have assembled to-day to render homage to the past. All animosities have been laid aside, and we come, free from sectional hate or party spirit, with due reverence we trust and a just appreciation of our high privilege—with an honest local pride, to lay our humble offerings upon the altar of our country. The solemnity, which marks this scene, the joy, that wells up in every breast, bespeak the sincerity of our purpose and the profound gratitude we feel for the rich inheritance, which we have received from our fathers. Nor are these emotions confined to us. While we are thus engaged, more than forty millions of our fellow countrymen send us greeting. Actuated by the same impulses, with like fervor of heart, and with lips tremulous with similar accents of praise, they have gathered, throughout the extent of our broad domains, to review the line of our country's history and across the gulf of a hundred years to commune with the spirits of the illustrious dead. It is a sacred occasion. Our fathers looked forward to it with mingled hope and apprehension, we have long hailed it from afar, and generations to come will recur to it with fondest delight. If, as the Roman orator says, "the dead behold with pleasure the fruits of their labor, while in the flesh," with what joy and wonder do the founders of this Republic, secure in immortal glory, to-day look down upon the scenes of their earthly struggles! As they gaze upon the princely magnificence of our metropolitan cities, and the unostentatious wealth of our towns; as they witness the advance in art and science and the sweet philanthropy of our various institutions; as they see the little republic of thirteen colonies, with its few inhabitants, now clasping in its embrace a continent teeming with an industrious population; and, above all, behold their children, for the most part, adhering with fidelity to the principles of manliness and virtue

which they established, could they ask a higher recompense for their toil, a more glorious reward for their sacrifices? Well may they be content, their triumph is complete! Their zeal was not that of a fanatical propagandism. The principle of self-government, of independent political action, is to-day verified. It is no chimera, nor even any longer an experiment, but it is a fact, firm and lasting as eternal truth.

The century, which terminates to-day, has been one of prodigious change. The vague ideas of social and exact science, which the ancient and mediæval philosophers handled to no purpose, have been moulded into definite conceptions and embodied in tangible forms. It has been the age of universal emancipation of thought, the era of the telegraph and of steam. In the political world, change has followed change in rapid succession, kingdoms have given place to empires, and empires have been swallowed up by republics, until scarcely a nation in Christendom maintains the same form of government it did at the beginning of the century. Europe has been the theatre of constant war and revolution. France and Spain have bowed before the sceptres of man rulers, each bringing to his assistance his favorite political scheme, only to have it set aside by his immediate successor. Ireland, for ages shrouded in error and superstition, in the long darkness of her annals has enjoyed one sublime and gladsome day, when the sun of freedom rifted the clouds that obscured her and her harp gave forth a note of joy. We have seen the seperate dukedoms of Italy consolidated into one nation, and Prussia rise from a second class power and assert her supremacy over the other states of Germany. We have beheld Venice, the oldest republic in the world, stripped of her freedom and nationality; we have seen the humiliation of the papal power, and witnessed the diadem, that crowned the heads of the Cæsars and adorned the brow of Charlemagne, forever laid aside by a single act of Francis the Second. Yet amid all these multifarious changes, the Republic of 1776, though at different times confronted by foreign war, and once brought face to face with civil strife, has always held to the wise tenets of its founders; and, adhering to the well-tried principles of a hundred years, still stands, in the words of a distinguished statesman, "the pride of the earth and the favorite of heaven."

A just idea of our political fabric can be obtained only by a careful examination of its parts. Tourists tell us that standing for the first time under the immense dome of St. Peters, there is unvariable experienced a feeling of disappointment. The real St. Peters is belittled by the shadowy edifice of the imagination. But after frequent visits, after walking its aisles and measuring with the eye its interminable distances; after viewing minutely its dome, its nave, its transepts, its arches and pillars; after studying the multiplicity of its architectural designs and drinking in its varied magnificence and sublimity, the great cathedral gradually expands in size and grows in beauty, until the preconceptions of it are lost in its grandeur and vastness. So to fully comprehend the magnitude and solidity, the harmony and beauty of our governmental edifice, we must study seperately the elements of which it is constructed.

We may fairly conclude that to the peculiar institutions of New England, to the schools and churches, but more especially to the township, may be traced those fundamental principles—delegated legislation and equality of rights—which are the basis of our national greatness. When in the fourth century the nomadic tribes of the Teutonic family, prompted by the desire for a higher form of civilization, ceased from their wanderings and settled in territorial communities, they introduced a system of society, peculiar to themselves and hitherto unknown in European history. With the family for their basis, they consolidated into villages and divided the land into three parts, the township, the common mark and the arable mark. The body politic was composed of a class of freemen, possessing among other prerogatives the right to bear arms, to hold property and to participate in the public assemblies and "freedom implied not simply personal liberty, but positive political rights." The early adventurers of New England came with these traditions of thirteen hundred years still fresh in their memories, and the consequence was the reproduction in the New World of the old Germanic mark. "Our mark has developed into the township, our townships have been aggregated into the State, our State has become an integral part of the nation." Considering then the influence of the township on the political destinies of the nation, it becomes us on this occassion to look to the past,

and ascertain, as far as possible, what we as a town have contributed to the welfare of the Republic.

It was fortunate for our fathers that they were induced to seek a home in the country of the Narragansetts. Here they found a fertile soil, picturesque scenery, and a people, who, already somewhat enlightened by their intercourses with the English, bid them welcome and gave them kindly of their hospitality. Though friendly to the settlers, they were attached to their hunting grounds and gave them up with much reluctance. While Massachusetts, Pennsylvania and many of the other colonies were purchased with a few trifling presents, the country washed by the waters of Narragansett Bay, whose surpassing beauty still attracts the eye of the stranger, was prized so highly by the natives, that it was obtained only at the cost of thousands of pounds "even more" we learn from the petition sent by the colony in 1666 to the King, "than the other colonies had expended for ten times as much." It is a satisfaction to know that our homes were not acquired through conquest or dishonesty, but by free purchase at a liberal price.

In point of time, the settlement of North Kingstown may be regarded as the third in Rhode Island. In 1639, three years after the settlement of Providence, Richard Smith, a native of Gloucestershire, England, came from Taunton, where he had resided a short time, and, at the head of what is now called Point Wharf Cove, established a trading post and erected, upon the site of the present Congdon House, the first English dwelling in the Narragansett country. The materials of Smith's house were brought in boats from Taunton, and some of them were employed in constructing the present edifice. Roger Williams soon afterwards settled near Smith, but, in a few years, sold to him his interests, which included "his trading house, his two big guns and a small island (Rabbit Island) for goats." In 1656 Smith leased of the Indians, for sixty years, the tract of land upon which Wickford now stands and as far South as the Annaquatucket river. Three years later, he extended the boundaries and leased it again for one thousand years together with the region North and East of his home, how known as Calves Neck and Sawgoo. In 1660 most of these lands were absolutely quit-claimed to Smith. The tract of land at one time owned by

him was nine miles long and three miles wide. Smith, whose will was made in 1664, gave the homestead and the greater part of his lands to his son Richard, who in turn, by a will proved 1692, bequeathed the Boston Neck land to Elizabeth Viall, and the homestead and the land around Wickford to his nephew Lodowick Updike. Roger Williams, in his testimony given July 24, 1679, in favor of Smith's title says: "I humbly testify that about forty years (from this date) he kept possession, coming and going himself children and servants, and had quiet possesion of his houses, lands and meadows; and there in his own house with much serenity of soul and comfort, he yielded up his spirit to God, the father of spirits, in peace." * * * * * "I do also humbly declare that the said Richard Smith Junior ought by all the rules of equity, justice and gratitude to his honored father and himself to be fairly treated with, considered, recruited, honored and, by his majesty's authority, confirmed and established in a peaceful possession of his fathers and his own possession in this pagan wilderness and Narragansett country."

"The premises I humbly testify as now leaving this country and the world."

"Signed Roger Williams."

The next purchase of much importance was made in 1659, by Randal Holden and Samuel Gorton, who bought Fox Island and the neck of land between Wickford and Annaquatucket river. This was afterwards sold to Richard Smith. A little later, in the same year, Humphery Atherton, who came from Plymouth Colony, bought in company with others the land in Quidnessett and that part of Boston Neck, which had not already been sold to Smith. To prevent the landed proprietors from establishing a monopoly the Assembly, in 1671, ordered "that persons owning large tracts of land in Narragansett should sell it out to persons in want of it." From this time settlements became more numerous and the land began to be divided up into smaller parcels, though according to the report of the committee appointed by the General Court to make a survey of the Narragansett country, as late as 1677, the whole of Boston Neck was owned by eight individuals. It is to these purchases, which we

have enumerated, that the present owners of North Kingstown, for the most part, must trace their titles.

The Atherton purchase, which was made in direct violation of a law of Rhode Island, gave rise to a succession of difficulties, which at different times threatened the distruction of the colony. The question of jurisdiction over the Narragansett country had not yet been determined. Rhode Island, Connecticut and Massachusetts, each contended for it, but, when allowed to choose for themselves, every member of the Atherton Company (a fact which may seem strange to us) declared in favor of Connecticut, which accepted them as included in the limits of its charter and called the plantation, Wickford. (Much speculation has been rife and many fanciful derivations have been found for this name, some holding it to be an abbreviation of Lodowick's Ford, others deriving it from Wickes' Ford; names claimed by their respective advocates to have been given to the ford just north of the village, but in all probability the name was taken directly from the town of Wickford, in England.) Rhode Island not satisfied with the action of the Atherton men, since by assenting to their wishes, she would forfeit the control of a valuable territory, continued to dispute the claims of Connecticut, and during the strife, which was waged hotly on both sides, and lasted for many years, Wickford now completely organized and exerting considerable influence over the neighboring colonies, was the place selected for deliberations and consequently the centre of all contentions. Courts and commissions were of frequent occurrence, and it is impossible to describe the supercilious exhibitions of hatred made by both parties on these occasions. Connecticut commissioners frequently made proclamation of their powers and read their charter, all of which were utterly disregarded. Officers engaged in arresting persons for crimes were themselves taken into custody, on the ground that they had no power to act. When Walter House was killed by Thomas Flounders, at Wickford, in 1670, the Connecticut coronor held what was thought to be a proper inquest, but the Council, at Newport, adjudged the proceedings illegal, and sent a constable with a force of men to disinter the body and hold another inquest. This occurence was remarkable in two particulars. It was in all probability the first deliberate killing of a white man in the Wickford colony and

the first and only instance in all history, where two considerable states contended for the privilege of holding an inquest over a corpse. The controversy was virtually settled by agreement, in 1703, and this action was confirmed, in 1726, when the King finally established the boundary line, and the King's Province (now mostly embraced in Washington County) which for fifty years had existed as an independent jurisdiction, became a part and parcel of Rhode Island.

In 1674, the General Assembly passed an act establishing a township in Narragansett and called it "Kings Town." For what reason it is impossible to say, its name, in 1686, was changed to Rochester, but three years later the original name was restored. The population of Kingstown had increased to such an extent that it was early deemed necessary that there should be a division of the town, and, in June, 1722, when Samuel Cranston was Governor, the General Assembly convened at Newport, enacted "that the town of Kingstown be divided and made into two towns, by the names of North and South Kingstown." North Kingstown held the records and was declared to be the older town. The town has once since, in 1742, suffered the loss of a large part of its territory, when the western portion was set aside and incorporated as the town of Exeter. The first town meeting, under the new organization was ordered to be held, February 21, 1723, to chose jury men, who should serve in the next General Court of Trials, and at the second town meeting, held on the third Wednesday of the following month, Robert Hull and Francis Willet were elected the first delegates to the General Assembly. At this time the population was a little less than two thousand. From the date of its incorporation the town gained additional stability, and characterized by the harmony of its government,—until the breaking out of the Revolutionary war, which shattered society throughout the colonies—maintained that peace, and was blessed with that prosperity, which invariably attend the efforts of a frugal and industrious people.

After the hardships and miseries of the early colonial periods, the beginning of the eighteenth century seemed like the dawning of a golden age. Learning received attention, tokens of courtesy and hospitality were met with on every side, stately

mansions, and here and there a church were seen towering among the trees or dotting the green fields, and the country through which Richard Smith and Roger Williams, a few years before, had with difficulty pressed their way, by the magic touch of civilization was now transformed from a wilderness into "the garden of America."

As early as 1710, three churches had been organized. In the latter part of the seventeenth century a minister by the name of Baker came from Newport and founded a Baptist church in North Kingstown. This was undoubtedly the origin of the Baptist churches in the town, three of which now exist in a flourishing condition. The church at Wickford, whose edifice was built, in 1816, and rebuilt, in 1836, was an off-shoot from the church at Allenton. The house at Allenton was erected in 1848 and the one in Quidnesett in 1842. Elder John Gardiner's six principle Baptist church, as it was styled, was founded about the year 1710, Th[illegible] years prior to this the Episcopal Society erected a church in the south part of the town. It was here that, for more than thirty years, Dr. James McSparran, the friend and companion of the illustrious Berkeley, proclaimed the truth and inspired the people with his eloquence. In the year 1800, the church, which is now the oldest Episcopal edifice in New England, was removed to its present site in Wickford; and yonder just to our left, in a sequestered spot, with its outline standing boldly against the sky, surrounded by a few graves and guarded by the spirits of its holy dead, a solitary witness, it looks back upon the vicissitudes of nearly two centuries and, in a language not void of interpretation, tells again and again, for our instruction, the story of the pious endeavors and virtuous actions of those long since passed away.

The society of this period was marked by much refinement. The landed aristocracy cherished the liberal arts and literature, and secured for their children a generous intellectual training in the families of the learned clergymen. Extensive plantations, some of which have since been divided into as many as ten large farms. (Daniel Updike's lands alone, embracing three thousand acres.) were worked by slave labor, and produced abundant crops, which in the West Indies, found a ready market. A degree of sociability existed among the people, which, in some respects, their

descendants might imitate with profit. Every family had its large circle of friends, who were always welcome to its hospitality, the remotest connection by blood was regarded with profound respect, and much visiting and interchange of thought and sentiment established a permanent bond of good feeling. True some of the entertainments seemingly evinced a prodigality of wealth, but the display was generally in proportion to the abundance of the host, and excess was rather the exception than the rule. Every season had its peculiar pastimes. There was the annual excursion to Connecticut in May, the glorious old huskings of autumn, the festivities of the holidays in Winter, and at every season of the year an occasional wedding. What joy, what mirth pervaded the country on these the gala days of the olden time! Even now, enlightened by tradition, we, in imagination, stand in the spacious halls, and, surrounded by a merry throng, listen to the orchestra of slaves, and see gentlemen, with swords at their side, in crimson coats and knee breeches, with powdered wigs and queues; and ladies, dressed in brocade and cushioned head-dresses, gracefully walking the intricate mazes of the minuet.

The slaves, who formed a large part of the population—one family sometimes owning as many as forty,—were not slow in imitating the manners and amusements of their masters. But of all their festivities none compared with that of the annual election, when, after the manner of the whites, they chose their Governor for the year. On these occasions the parlors of the mansion houses were thrown open, horses were provided, and money distributed among the negroes according to the means of their respective owners. Party spirit ran high, and parmateering was much resorted to. At the appointed time, arrayed in their masters' clothes, and mounted on the best pacers, with their ladies at their sides, in high glee, they rode to "lection." Here, after games and sports of various kinds, the friends of the two candidates were arranged in two rows and the chief marshal, with his assistants, marched between them and made the count. In a loud voice he then proclaimed the Governor for the ensuing year. Then followed the grand election dinner, which was held under the trees,—the Governor elect, sitting at the head of the table and on either side his wife and the unsue-

cessful candidate, whose prerogative it was to propose the first toast, and then and there forever drown the sorrows of his defeat. For both master and slave these were sunny days.

The history of North Kingstown, at the time of which we have spoken, though not marked by startling and heroic deeds, is rich in a few names, without which a sketch however succinct would be incomplete. It was then that the scholarly Updike and the illustrious Stuart lived. and Whaley, whose life has been an unsolved enigma, then began his mysterious career.

Colonel Daniel Updike, whose grand-father, Gilbert Updike, came from New York, in 1663, and, shortly afterward, married the daughter of Richard Smith, the first settler, was the most distinguished advocate of his time. He was a gentleman of great urbanity and of sound erudition. "Among his professional brethren he was highly respected, and in all literary and professional associations of his day his name stood at the head." He was two years Attorney of King's (now Washington) county, and twenty-four years, Attorney General of the colony of Rhode Island. His whole life reflected honor upon his native town, and, when, in 1757, he passed away, he transmitted to her an unsullied fame and bequeathed to his descendants those polite and manly traits of character by which they have ever been distinguished.

The history of Theophilus Whaley, simply from the mystery which has always surrounded it, is of more than ordinary interest. He is described as a bold and energetic man, possessing a collegiate education, conversant with Greek and Hebrew, affable and kind, but always reticent in regard to his former life. He is supposed to have been one of the regicide judges, who condemned Charles the First. The people of Narragansett, especially his descendants, believed it, and his scholarly attainments and the secluded manner of his life, together with the fact of his receiving visits from distinguished strangers, who invariably left him well supplied with money, would rather confirm than disprove it. Whaley and Goffe were supposed to reside in this country, and numerous spies were sent out from England to apprehend them. They were both well known swordsmen, and it is related that on one occasion, while Whaley was visiting in Boston, a spy disguised as a juggler, after performing various

feats of swordmanship, with the intention of drawing the regicides out, should they chance to be present, challenged any one in the audience to engage with him in friendly combat. Whaley, who could not forego the opportunity of exercising his favorite sport, immediately accepted the challenge, selected a sword, and, to the great surprise of all, at the first thrust, disarmed his antoganist, who, now sure of the object of his search, cried, "Seize him; he is either Goffe, Whaley, or the devil!" With his usual good fortune Whaley managed to escape and lived years afterwards to tell the story.

A few rods north of Whaley's cave, which is still pointed out on the east bank of the Pettaquamscott river, shaded by three or four venerable old willows stands the first snuff mill erected in New England,—now a modest looking dwelling, unpainted, and devoid of architectural beauty, yet, from its associations, sacred to the antiquarian, to the student and to all true lovers of art. Here was born a genius, whose fame was destined to extend beyond the narrow limits of his native town and dazzle with its lustre the Courts of the Old World. It is the birth-place, the early home of Gilbert Stuart, the greatest painter, in his speciality, that America has ever produced and, in his time, second only to Sir Joshua Reynolds in the world. He was a man somewhat eccentric in character, of brilliant intellectual powers, and a sincere lover of his profession. It is impossible to measure the influence of Stuart's early training upon his subsequent career, but it is evident that that independence of spirit, which led him—though an ardent admirer and diligent student of the old masters—to avoid imitation and declare nature his only guide, may be traced, in a large degree, to his native freedom of action and the picturesque surroundings of his youth. His childhood days were passed in a spot environed by beauty and complete in romantic grandeur. Standing, on a beautiful June morning, in the room where Stuart was born, as we looked out upon the green hills and the valley, reaching far above and below the house, and heard the songs of the birds mingled with the murmuring of the brook, which flows just beneath the window, we could not but believe that it was the inspiration of similar scenes, that fired the soul, already warm from the touch of genious, and first awakened in the breast of the youthful painter a longing for a

higher attainment in his art. The great artist was proud of his humble origin and at all times, even in the presence of rank and title, spoke of his birth-place with tenderness and love. One of the last acts of his life, was to visit the old home, and enjoy for a while the scenes of his boyhood days. Stuart's laurels are still green, his fame is still enduring, and in spite of chance and time, so long as patriotism and virtue shall be respected, so long as men shall honor art, should no other evidence of his worth remain, it will still glow in the undying colors, that immortalize the form and features of glorious Washington. If Stuart boasted of his native town, well may she be proud of her honored and illustrious son.

For many years the people of North Kingstown lived in unbroken peace. The bitter feelings engendered by the controversy for jurisdiction had long-since been allayed, the inhumanities of the Indian wars, were almost forgotten and even the terrible night of December 20th, 1675, when the remnant of the English army, chilled and weary, marched from the battle field of the "Big Swamp" and pillowed their heads upon the snows of Wickford, lived only in the memories of the aged. The people for a long time had quietly pursued their avocations and a spirit of progress seemed to pervade the town. New roads were opened, various enterprises projected and the social and political status much improved.

The first provision made by the town for the maintenance of its poor was in 1769, when the freeholders of North Kingstown representing that they were greatly burdened with poor people and that a work-house, in which to employ them, would be of great advantage, "prayed the General Assembly to grant them a lottery, to raise the sum of one hundred and twenty pounds, lawful money to be applied towards the building of said work-house agreeable to the scheme presented with the petition." The petition was granted. It is impossible to say how long this system was in vogue, but from time immemorial the poor have been farmed out to the lowest bidder and the keeper annually elected in town meeting. A few years ago, in 1868, the town purchased a farm and erected suitable buildings, where the unfortunate may now be well provided for and enjoy the comforts and conveniences of a home. It may seem strange to us, that

philanthropy should call to its aid such an auxiliary as the lottery, but in those days this manner of raising money was resorted to in every emergency. By it public works were constructed, churches were built and the losses of individuals reimbursed. We read, that, in 1762, "a lottery to raise $4,500 was granted, by the General Assembly, to William Wall and Henry Wall of North Kingstown, whose merchandise was destroyed by fire in Newport." In the five years, ending 1775, no less than thirteen religious societies, in Rhode Island, of every denomination, were granted lotteries to assist them in building or repairing their houses of worship. We will not venture to assert the origin of modern church entertainments, but will merely suggest to the rigid opponents of clambakes and festivals, who still adhere to the good old customs of the past, that they might augment the grounds of their dislike and fortify their arguments against these pernicious evils, by tracing them directly to the lottery system of former times.

The uninterrupted quiet and prosperity, which the town had so long enjoyed, was now to give place to the turmoil, which necessarily precedes war. New industries were no longer contemplated, business in general began to languish, and the depths of society were stirred by the adverse winds of political opinion.

Though the plan for a federal union of the colonies, at Albany, in 1754, failed of adoption, it made a lasting impression on the minds of the colonists. At first the idea was a novel one, but in a few years its practicability was so apparent, that the most prudent foresaw the advantages, not only of union but of independence, and questions were rife and events transpiring, which were to culminate in the act, that renders the fourth of July, 1776, a day memorable in the annals of the world.

North Kingstown early caught the spirit of independence and was ardent in the cause of liberty. Already she had extended her sympathy, in the substantial form of money and cattle, to the citizens of Boston, who were suffering from the aggressions of the British soldiery, and February 16, 1775, more than a month before the battle of Lexington, the people of this town, now organized for action, called for one hundred and forty guns. These were promptly furnished, and in the following month, the committee appointed by the General Assembly ap-

portioned to the town its share of powder, lead and flints. In June of the same year, Charles Tillinghast and two others were appointed enlisting officers for the town. From this time companies were formed and enlistments continued to be made; and during the whole war North Kingstown's sons fought in many battles on sea and land. When, in 1777, General Washington ordered the Continental troops, in Rhode Island, to join the army in the Jerseys, it left the State in an almost defenseless condition. North Kingstown, whose geographical position rendered attacks from the bay an easy matter, was especially open to the incursions of the enemy. It was at this time that George Waite Babcock, Joseph Taylor, John Slocum and Christopher Pearce, "having the welfare of their country at heart and willing to defend it with their lives," believing that the enemy were about to make an attack, raised a company "to guard the town of Updike's Newtown" and petitioned the Assembly to grant them a charter. "Whereupon it was voted and resolved that the petitioners with such others as shall enlist with them, not exceeding sixty-four men exclusive of commissioned officers, be incorporated into a separate and distinct military company by the name of the Newtown Rangers, to be commanded by one captain, two lieutenants and one ensign." By an act of the legislature, in 1778, slaves were allowed to enlist. Soon afterwards a large company, composed wholy of negroes (many of whom had been slaves) and officered by white men, was raised in the town, and Thomas Cole and Benjamin Peckham were chosen captain and lieutenant.

During the whole war, North Kingstown was frequently annoyed by predatory incursions. Small parties would stealthily land along the shore and plunder the people of their cattle and grain, and, on some occasions, they would even seize the inhabitants themselves. At one time Oliver Spink and Charles Tillinghast, who was the grand-father of Senator Charles T. James, and who, it will be remembered, was the first enlisting officer appointed in the town, were taken from their houses, in Quidnessett, and imprisoned in Newport. Here they contracted the small-pox, of which Spink died, but Tillinghast, who with true yankee ingenuity had previously vaccinated himself, passed safely through the disease. In June, 1779, a number of British

soldiers landed, in the night, on the Quidnessett shore and surrounded the houses of John Allen and Christopher Spencer. The inmates, who at the time were asleep, were awakened and rudely turned out of doors, and Allen's house was burned to the ground. The one in which Spencer lived belonged to a Tory, and on that account escaped destruction. Half clad and terribly frightened, the other members of the two families were commanded silence, and by the light of the burning dwelling, saw Allen and Spencer marched at the bayonet's point to the shore, roughly thrust into a boat, and carried to Newport. Here they were confined in a loath-some prison, where Spencer remained until the English troops evacuated Rhode Island; but Allen, through the intercession of a lady friend of his family, was released a few months before.

Early in the war the General Assembly voted "that one of the field pieces assigned to South Kingstown should be sent to and for the use of North Kingstown." The story of this old gun is as remarkable as it is interesting. It once saved Wickford from destruction, and again, as if to repay the debt, won great glory for the town, which originally loaned it. In 1777, a company was sent out in a barge from the British fleet to burn the village of Wickford, which was supposed to be undefended. They proceeded unmolested, until they arrived at the mouth of the harbor, when, to their great surprise, the old gun, which had been stationed on the point where the light house now stands, fired into them, killed one man, and caused them to hastily retrace their course. Soon after this occurrence news came that a British man-of-war had grounded on Point Judith. Excitement ran high and the old gun was again resorted to; but upon examination it was discovered that the Tories had spiked it. This difficulty was speedily removed. Samuel Bissell drilled it out, and, in a few hours, drawn by four oxen, it was on its way to the "Point," where it was mounted on the shore, behind the rocks, and, after a vigorous firing of a few minutes, the ship, which proved to be the Syren, a twenty-eight gun frigate, surrendered, and her crew of a hundred and sixty-six officers and men, were carried prisoners to Providence.

George Babcock, whose name heads the petition for the charter of the Newtown Rangers, was afterwards one of the most suc-

CHICAGO

cessful commanders in the American navy. In the Mifflin, a twenty gun ship, manned by 130 men, enlisted in North Kingstown and Exeter, he took prize after prize, and many an abler ship struck her colors, before the invincible courage of Babcock and his men. While cruising off the Banks of Newfoundland, in 1779, they fell in with the English ship Tartar, mounting twenty-six guns, fourteen swivels, and with a complement of 162 men. The odds weighed heavily against them; but, after a fierce engagement of two hours and a half, the enemy struck her flag, and a few days afterwards, amid the wildest enthusiam, the firing of guns, the ringing of bells and the illumination of the city, James Eldred, a Wickford boy, who had been placed in command of the Tartar, with a number of other prizes, sailed triumphantly into the harbor of Boston.

Samuel Phillips, a man distinguished for his bravery, whose uncle the Hon. Peter Phillips was commissary, under General Nathaniel Greene, in "The army of Observation," was at this time Lieutenant of the Mifflin. Two years before with Daniel Wall, his fellowtownsman, he volunteered under Colonel Burton, and commanded one of the five boats, in the daring expedition, that captured Prescott and brought him safely through the Brittish fleet. In a journal written by himself Captain Phillips says: "I have been, in the late war, Lieutenant of four twenty gun ships, one cutter of fourteen guns, and Commander of a brig of fourteen guns. I have ever strove hard and suffered much to help gain the independence of my country, and am ready to step forth again and oppose any power, that shall endeavor to injure my country and her rights." What sentiments of patriotism! What loyalty to duty! What willingness for sacrifice! It is the spirit here exemplified, that has, in all ages of the world, wherever tyranny has assailed the right, fortified the courage of the oppressed and proved:—

"The might that slumbers in a peasants arm."

It was this that gave hope and strength to the soldier in the long campaign, and, at last, wrought out the realization of that early dream of independence, which first moved the American colonists to action.

The close of the Revolution found the condition of society in

North Kingstown completely changed. Says Updike, in his history of the Narragansett Church, "by that event we became another and a new people." The war had left a deep and effectual mark on all classes. Extreme poverty pervaded the homes of the yeomanry, and many of the aristocratic land-holders, who had espoused the cause of the mother country, had been disfranchised and their property confiscated. Slavery had been abolished, the law of primogeniture had been repealed, and, of the large estates, some had changed owners and others had been divided up into numberless farms. The acrimony of party strife had dissipated the friendly feeling and the social intercourse of the past, and the luxury, the hospitality, the refinement, which characterized the landed proprietors, before the war, had forever disappeared.

In the vote taken by Rhode Island, in 1788 upon the adoption of the Constitution, North Kingstown stood two in favor and one hundred and sixty opposed. It may seem an anomolous fact, in our history, that the town, which was among the earliest to act, in the cause of independence, and among the most energetic, in prosecuting the war, should have almost unanimously rejected that instrument, which, framed in wisdom, has ever been the shield of our political rights and the admiration of the world. But can no reason be assigned for this? Are we justly charged with indifference, with a want of enthusiam? No! The Constitution was a new departure in state-craft, its efficacy was then an untried fact—a possibility, a probability, upon which hung the destiny of the Republic, and which demanded the severest, the most logical deliberation. Once convinced of its practicability, no people were more ready to receive it. none have been more willing to defend it than our own. In this, as in many hurriedly projected schemes, which have failed to enlist the sympathy of the town, and which have called down upon her the reproach often of her own thoughtless sons, she has aimed to profit by the precipitous blunders of others, and has followed that wiser conservative principle, which argues, that it is better to be born gently along on the tide of prosperity than to chase a phantom to destruction.

The begining of the present century marks a new era in the progress of the town. Traces of the late war were fast disap-

pearing, society assumed a more cheerful aspect and a commercial interest was awakened, which gave much promise for the future. An extensive coast trade had sprung up and intercouse with the West Indies, which the war had interupted, was resumed. Brigs and schooners and ships were loaded, at the wharves in Wickford, with the crops of the country far around, and sent out to exchange them for the tropical products of the Antilles. Few places in Rhode Island witnessed greater mercantile activity than Wickford, which even rivaled Providence, and bid fair, with its surpassing facilities, to become one of the leading emporiums of the state. Providence merchants seeing the advantages, which Wickford possessed for foreign trade caught the spirit of enterprise, and the founder of the present firm of "Brown and Ives" even went so far as to negotiate for land along the harbor; but the owners demanded exorbitant prices and so the welfare of the town was sacficried to the penuriousness of individuals. An attempt was also made to secure the Connecticut Valley trade, and with this in view a road was surveyed to Jewett City, but, before the plans were matured, Providence, anticipating the benefit of such a move, had laid out the turnpike road; and this fact with the sudden death of Remington Southwick, the most earnest advocate of the scheme, disheartened the others interested and the project was abandomed.

Nearly all the vessels employed, at this time, were not only owned in the town, but were launched from the ship yards in Wickford, and old inhabitants remember, when there were as many as five large vessels, at one time, on the stocks. Ship building was carried on in nearly every port of the town. Captain John McKinzie, an extensive builder, pursued his business near the site of the present Bobbin Mill; the Union, a full rigged ship, (with two exceptions, we are informed, the largest, at that time, in the state) was constructed North of Gardiner's wharf, and, in 1816, at the extreme head of the cove, just Southeast of Mr. James Greene's residence, was built the sloop Resolution, more familiarly styled the "Reso"—that old Argonautic craft, whose name will always be synonymous with huckleberries and "'lections."

The industries, which we have described, were unfortunately destined to be short lived. The coast trade gradually declined, ship building entirely ceased, and, in a few years, the last West-India-Man, disappeared. But what the village of Wickford lost North Kingstown gained. The enterprise of the town was simply turned into new channels. Instead of beholding vessels, going and coming, and wharves, filled with merchandise, looking beyond the limits of the village, the eye became accustomed to different scenes; new communities were springing up, and the echoing sounds of adz and hammer, as they were plied in constructing the last vessel built in Wickford, were answered from surrounding hill and valley by the voice of the loom and the busy hum of machinery. The old snuff mills and grist mills were torn down, and substantial factories erected upon their sites; and, while Wickford is to-day completely shorn of her commerce, and owns scarcely a large vessel, North Kingstown is rich, in a manufacturing interest, which, including four cotton and eight woolen mills, has an invested capital of between one and two millions, and gives employment to nearly five hundred people. The beautiful and thrifty villages, which nestle along the various streams that intersect the town, Davisville, LaFayette, Hamilton, Annaquatucket, Belleville and others, betoken the prosperity of the town, and speak eloquently of the enterprise of their managers and founders.

The people of this town have always been characterized by a profound respect for education. As early as 1696, "a tract of land, in the town of Kingstown, was conveyed to Harvard College for and towards the support and education at the said college of those youths, whose parents were not of sufficient ability to maintain them." Learning, however, until the present century, was confined to the wealthy and imparted by private tutors. Public schools were unknown, and the so-called old-fashioned school houses are comparatively of modern origin. The first of which we have any notice was built, in Quidnessett, about the year 1806, but in a few years the domestic interests absorbed the educational, and the school house was joined to the dwelling of Hon. John Allen. In 1820, the legislature first appropriated money for public schools, and in the same year the town was divided into districts. From this time an increased inter-

est was manifested in educational matters, school houses were multiplied, and the public school system was established upon a broad and philanthropic basis.

The serious thinkers of the country early foresaw that the only means of perpetuating that liberty, which the sacrifices and hardships of a seven years war had secured, was by the universal dissemination of truth and learning among the common people. Nowhere is this principle better exemplified, than in the preamble of the original charter, granted, at the June Session of the Legislature, 1800, to the Washington Academy. "Whereas institutions for liberal education are highly beneficial to society, by forming the rising generation to virtue, knowledge and useful literature, and thus preserving a succession of men quallified for discharging the offices of life, with usefulness and reputation, they have therefore justly merited and received the public attention and encouragement of every wise, polished and well régulated State." Founded upon this principle, we can only wonder that its usefullness, instead of diminishing has not enlarged from time to time. During the first years of its history, it was in reality "a light set upon a hill," and the refulgent rays that streamed from its portals illumined our own community and lighted up the dark places of other towns and states. It was the first Academy in Rhode Island, and, under the manegement of Alpheus Baker and Remington Southwick, the first elected principal and assistant, who were men of large ideas and of valuable acquisition, it ranked, in reputation and proficiency, second only to Brown University. Young men here completed their education, who were to adorn with their culture the walks of private life, and some, who were to fill the highest office in the State. Strange as it may seem, the Academy, which entered upon its career with such brilliant prospects, soon degenerated into a district school. Its charter in a few years, through the negligence of its Trustees, was annulled, and, in 1848, districts three and four leased the building and grounds, for ninety-nine years, at the rate of one cent per annum. In the autumn of 1874, the hand of vandalism leveled the old edifice with the ground; and in its place, crowning the beautiful hill that overlooks the village, and surrounded by an extensive play ground, with airy and convenient halls, appear-

a structure, which is an ornament to the village, and of which North Kingstown may well be proud.

As we stated at the outset, it had been our purpose, all along, to illustrate, by specific example, the influence of the New England township on the destinies of the nation. We have seen our own town, a small territorial community, complete in outline from its settlement, gradually developing, with all the powers and privileges of the old Germanic mark, and forming a political unit in the Federal Union of towns and states. As, in accomplishing our task, we have passed from the colonial period to the present time, fain would we, here and there, have paused by the way-side, and plucked the flowers of fact and tradition, that have sprung up along the beaten path of our social and political history. But for wearying your patience, gladly would we relate the success of the ambitious triumvirate, who discovered the treasures of Kidd, and tell the melancholy story of the elopement from the Block House. If time permitted, we would describe our ample resources, the development of our industries, the growth of our banks, and, with pleasure, show the part North Kingstown took in the second war, with the mother country; how her privateers preyed on the enemy's commerce and embarrassed her navy, and how many of her sons for the cause of freedom suffered, with heroic fortitude, in Dartmoor prison. * North Kingstown's action in the late rebellion needs no encomium. She heard the first call for men, and scarcely had the smoke cleared away from Sumter, when her sons were marching to the front. Her decision was noble, her devotion complete. The flowers that bloom over the graves of her heroes, in yonder cemetery, are vocal with lessons of patriotism and of sacrifice.

Fellow citizens our past is secure. As a town, as a state, as a nation, we have a record unparalleled in the course of time, a history from which even the countries of the Old World may glean instruction, and from which we and our children may learn much wisdom for future guidance.

There is a belief current among the French, that once a year the great Napoleon marshals his forces on the Champ de Mars.

Then the veterans from Marengo, from Friedland, from Austerlitz, the heroes who struggled in the sunny clime of Italy and of Spain, who dyed the snows of Russia with their blood and who fought beneath the shade of the Pyramids, rise from their graves and, with the Old Guard at their head, march, with majestic mein, by the form of their loved commander. Would, today, we could marshal the spirits of our glorious dead! Would, as we turn to the past for the last time before we cross the threshhold of a new century, we could behold the benignant smile and drink in the sweet counsel of the sages of Vernon, of Braintree and of Monticello! With what reverence and joy, would we gaze upon the heroes, who struck for liberty at Lexington, at Saratoga, at Trenton and at Yorktown! How glad would we behold the patriots, who in defense of that liberty, gave up their lives upon the battle fields of the South! We can, in imagination, at least recall their forms, we can, in reality, recount their deeds. Let us, then, cherish their virtues, let us emulate their actions, let us transmit, for an inheritance, to our children, the principles of individual worth and the broad ideas of state-craft, which they inculcated, and we may rest assured, that, when the next centennial sun shall course its way over our land, from the Atlantic to the Pacific, it shall then, as it does now, shine upon a people—united, prosperous, free.

Population of the town of North Kingstown, in 1708,	1,200
" " " " " 1730,	2,105
" " " " " 1790,	2,907
" " " " " 1810,	2,957
" " " " " 1820,	3,007
" " " " " 1860,	3,104
" " " " " Jan. 1, 1875,	3,505

Amount of Farm Products, Jan. 1, 1875,	$219,504
" Forest " " 1875,	9,968
" Cotton Manuf'rs " 1875,	214,063
" Wool " " 1875,	808,184

Value Farms Jan. 1, 1875,	$928,250
" Manufacturing Property Jan. 1, 1875,	281,850

Number of children of school age Jan. 1, 1875,	667
" " in attendance " 1875,	591

Number of children between the age of 10 and 15 who can read but not write	4
" " " " " " neither read nor write	1
" persons " over " 15 ~~and 17~~ " " " " "	174
" " " " " " read but not write	99

AN

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

Town of East Providence,

DELIVERED BEFORE THE TOWN AUTHORITIES AND CITIZENS OF EAST PROVIDENCE,

JULY 4TH, 1876.

BY

GEORGE N. BLISS.

PROVIDENCE:
John F. Greene, Printer, 13 Market Square.
1876.

AN

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

TOWN OF EAST PROVIDENCE,

DELIVERED BEFORE THE TOWN AUTHORITIES AND CITIZENS OF EAST PROVIDENCE,

JULY 4TH, 1876,

BY

GEORGE N. BLISS.

PROVIDENCE:
John F. Greene, Printer, 13 Market Square.
1876.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

TOWN OF EAST PROVIDENCE.

The territory now known as East Providence, has since its first settlement by white men, submitted to the government of two States and three towns. It was originally a part of the old town of Rehoboth, in the State of Massachusetts, which at one time included within its limits the present towns of Rehoboth, Seekonk, Attleborough, and a part of Swansey, in Massachusetts; East Providence, Cumberland, and a part of the towns of Pawtucket and Barrington, in Rhode Island.

Leonard Bliss, jr., in his "History of Rehoboth," published in 1836, says "The first purchase of land for the settlement of the town was made of Massasoit in 1641, and was according to the measurement of those times, "a tract eight miles square,"* and embraced what now constitutes the towns of Rehoboth, Seekonk and Pawtucket. The second purchase was the tract called by the Indians, (and after them by the English) Wannamoiset, and forms a part of Swansey and Barrington. The third and last pur-

*This tract of land measures ten miles square.

chase was the 'North Purchase,' forming now Attleborough, Mass., and Cumberland, R. I. The last was formerly called 'Attleborough Gore.' In 1667, Wannamoiset was included in the town of Swansey, which was then incorporated, including, besides the present town, Somersett, Mass., Barrington, and the greater part of Warren, R. I. The 'North Purchase,' was incorporated into a separate town by the name of Attleborough in 1694; and this was subdivided in 1746, the 'Gore' becoming Cumberland. The rest of the ancient town continued together till 1812, when Seekonk became a separate township assuming its original Indian name*; and in 1828, Pawtucket† followed the example and was separated from Seekonk."

The Rev. William Blackstone was the first white settler of Rehoboth. He was also the first white inhabitant of the peninsula of Shawmut, where Boston now stands. He sold his lands at Boston in 1634, and in the spring of 1635, a year before the arrival of Roger Williams, built a house on the banks of the Blackstone river, about three miles above Pawtucket, in Cumberland, R. I. Upon leaving his Boston friends, he said "I came from England because I did not like the Lord-Bishops, but I cannot join with you, because I would not be under the Lord-Brethren."

About the middle of April, 1636, after a bitter winter voyage of fourteen weeks in an open boat, Roger Williams landed at the mouth of Ten Mile River, a place now

---

*Seekonk is composed of two Indian words: *Seaki* meaning *black* and *konk, goose*—black goose—the Indian name for the wild goose, which is partly black. The adjective *seaki* always loses the i when combined with other words, and sometimes becomes *sek.*—*Williams' Key to the Indian Language.*

This spot received this name, probably, from the circumstance, that the numbers of wild geese used frequently, in their semi-annual migrations, to alight in Seekonk river and cove. They frequently alight there now.

†Pawtucket is an Indian name, and was applied by the Indians to several places where there were streams or rather falls of water.

called Manton's Neck. Here he planted corn, and made other preparations for a permanent residence. In a letter written to Major Mason, June 22, 1670, he says "I first pitched and began to build and plant at Secunk, now Rehoboth; and in a letter dated Providence, 13th of the 10th month, 1661, he writes "I testify and declare in the holy presence of God, that when at my first coming into these parts, I obtained the lands of Secunk, of Osamaquin, the then chief Sachem on that side, the Governour of Plymmouth, (Mr. Winslow) wrote to me in the name of their Government, their claim to Secunk to be in their jurisdiction, as also their advice to remove but over the river unto this side, (where now, by God's merciful providence we are,) and then I should be out of their claim, and be as free as themselves, and loving neighbors together." In accordance with this advice Roger Williams, with five others, William Harris, John Smith, Joshua Verin, Thomas Angell, and Frances Wickes, who had joined him at Seekonk, embarked in a canoe about the middle of June, 1636, and leaving their growing crops of corn to the spoil of the wild beasts of the forest, crossed the river to commence the settlement of the city of Providence. The boundary between the States of Massachusetts and Rhode Island remained in dispute for two hundred and twenty-six years, until in 1862 it was finally settled by an adjustment which proves Roger Williams to have been in the right in first locating upon the East shore of the Seekonk, as Rhode Island soil. From the Plymouth Colonial Records, Vol. 11, p. 67, it appears that one John Hazell was residing at "Seacunck" in 1642, but the first general permanent settlement of the town was made in the Spring of 1644, by a colony of fifty-eight men with their families, from Weymouth and Hingham, Mass., under the leadership of

the Rev. Samuel Newman, who gave the town the name of Rehoboth, remarking, "the Lord hath opened a way for us." The houses of this colony were built in a semi-circle around Seekonk Common, opening towards Seekonk River, with the church and parsonage in the centre. The first church stood within a few rods of the spot now occupied by the Congregational Church. This circle was known as "The Ring of the Town." At a town meeting holden June 21st, 1644, it was voted that a meeting should be holden by all the inhabitants on every fortieth day "for the consideration and acting of such necessary affairs as concern the plantation." July 3d, 1644. the following compact was signed :

"This combination, entered into by the general consent of all the inhabitants, after general notice given the 23d of the 4th month."

We, whose names are underwritten, being, by the providence of God, inhabitants of Seacunck, intending there to settle, do covenant and bind ourselves one to another to subject our persons (torn off) (according to law and equity) to nine persons,any five of the nine which shall be chosen by the major part of the inhabitants of the plantation, and we (torn off) to be subject to all wholesome (torn off) by them, and to assist them, according to our ability and estate, and to give timely notice unto them of any such thing as in our conscience may prove dangerous unto the plantation, and this combination to continue until we shall subject ourselves jointly to some other government.

William Cheesborough,	Ephraim Hunt,
Walter Palmer,	Peter Hunt,
Edward Smith,	William Smith,
Edward Bennett,	John Peren,
Robert Titus,	Zachery Rhoodes,

Abraham Martin,	Job Lane,
John Matthewes,	Alex. Winchester,
Edward Sale,	Henry Smith,
Ralph Shepherd,	Stephen Payne,
Samuel Newman,	Ralph Alin,
Richard Wright,	Thomas Bliss,
Robert Martin,	George Kendricke,
Richard Bowen,	John Allen,
Joseph Torrey,	William Sabin,
James Clark,	Thomas Cooper.

"At a general meeting of the town of Seacunk, being the 9th of the 10th month, (December) 1644, at lawful warning given, by reason of many meetings, and other strong causes for the easing of the great trouble, and for the (illegible) and the deciding of controversies between party and party as well as the proposing of men's levies to be made and paid, and for the well ordering of the town affairs, as may stand with future equity, according to our former combination, the inhabitants of said place have choose these men here named."

Alexander Winchester,	William Smith,
Richard Wright,	Stephen Payne,
Henry Smith,	Richard Bowen,
Edward Smith,	Robert Martin,
Walter Palmer,	

These men were called "townsmen," and were the predecessors of the officials called Town Councils in these days; the "townsmen," however, had greater powers.

At a subsequent meeting of the "townsmen," "it is ordered that the recording of any man's land in the town book, shall be to him and his heirs a sufficient assurance forever."

In 1645, the people submitted to the jurisdiction of the Plymouth Court, and were incorporated under the Scripture name of Rehoboth.

On the 9th of June, 1645, lots were drawn for land upon the great plain, and the list gives, it is reasonable to suppose, the names of all the original settlers. The lots were drawn by the following persons. in the following order :

1 Stephen Payne.
2. Widow Walker.
3. Robert Martin.
4. Edward Gilman.
5. Ralph Shepherd
6. Richard Wright.
7. Abraham Martin.
8. The Teacher.
9. Will Carpenter.
10. Robert Titus.
11. Walter Palmer.
12. James Walker.
13. Alexan'r Winchester.
14. Samuel Butterworth.
15. William Sabin.
16. Thomas Hitt.
17. Edward Smith.
18. Edward Bennett.
19. Thomas Clifton.
20. John Cooke.
21. Mr. Browne.
22. Wm. Cheeseborough.
23. Ralph Allin.
24. James Browne.
25. The Governor.
26. William Smith.
27. John Sutton.
28. Job Laine.
29. Thomas Cooper.
30. Thomas Bliss.
31. John Peram.
32. Joseph Torrey.
33. John Holbrooke.
34. James Clarke
35. Edward Sale.
36. George Kendricke.
37. Mr. Leonard.
38. Richard Bowen.
39. Edward Patteson.
40. John Read.
41. John Matthews.
42. Matthew Pratt.
43. Robert Sharpe.
44. Ephraim & Peter Hunt,
45. Zachary Roades,
46. John Meggs.
47. John Miller.
48. Thomas Holbrooke.
49. The Schoolmaster.
50. Mr. Peck.
51. Richard Ingram.
52. Isaac Martin.
53. John Allin.
54. Mr. Henry Smith.
55. Mr. Newman.
56. The Pastor.
57. Obadiah Holmes.
58. Robert Morris.

At a town meeting in December 1650, it was voted "to have a convenient way four rods wide, (to be made by Edward Smith) to be for the town's use, or any that shall have occasion to pass from town to Providence, or to Mr. Blackstone's." Peter Hunt was chosen Town Clerk at this meeting, which contains the first record of anyone being chosen for this office.

"June 11th, 1652. It was voted, that by the assent of the town then present, and being lawfully warned, that those lots which lie beyond the lot of Goodman Mathew should remain to the ox-pastor, and henceforth not be lotted." This land was used for the common pasturing of oxen, sheep &c., and was situated north east of Seekonk Common between the new road from Seekonk to Pawtucket and the Seekonk river, extending down the river to the mouth of Ten Mile River.

At a town meeting holden November 20th, 1657 "it was voted that persons neglecting to attend town-meeting should be fined 6d."

"December 16th, 1662. A fine of 18s. 6d. was ordered to be imposed on those who neglected to attend town-meeting." An Indian called Sam took charge of the cows and other cattle of the people of the town for many years, driving them to the "ox-pastor" in the morning and returning them to their several owners at night, in which capacity he become so popular as to secure an admission to equal rights with the other colonists, the only instance of such privileges being granted in this colony. The record is as follows. "May 22d, 1665 Sam, the Indian that keeps the cows, was admitted by the town as an inhabitant, to buy or hire house or lands if he can, in case the Court allow it."

The Indian war known by the name of "*Philip's War*" commenced in 1675 and lasted two years. In July of

this year Philip was discovered crossing Seekonk plain and the Rev. Noah Newman son of and successor of the Rev. Samuel Newman as pastor of the Congregational Church led an attack against him with such success as to kill, one account says twelve and another thirty of Philip's force, without any loss to the attacking party. On Sunday, March 26th, 1676, Captain Michael Pierce of Scituate, Mass., marched from Seekonk Common with a force of sixty-three English and twenty of the Cape Indians, in search of the enemy and having fallen into an ambuscade of Indians near Valley Falls formed his men into a ring where they fought thus back to back for about three hours until fifty-five of the English and ten of the Indians had fallen dead upon "the bed of honor." The enemy paid dearly for this success having sustained a loss variously estimated from one hundred and forty to three hundred warriors. The following letter was written by the Rev. Noah Newman the day after "Pierce's Fight" which was the name given to this engagement.

"Rehoboth, 27 of the first, '76.

Reverend and Dear Sir.

I received yours dated the 20th of this instant wherein you gave me a dolefnl relation of what had happened with you, and what a distressing Sabbath you had passed. I have now, according to the words of your own letter, an opportunity to retaliate your account with a relation of what yesterday happened to the great saddening of our hearts, filling us with an awful expectation of what further evils it may be and damons to, both respecting ourselves and you. Upon the 25th of this instant Capt. Pierce went forth with a small party of his men and Indians with him, and upon discovering the enemy, fought him, without damage to him and judged that he had considerably dammified the

Yet he being of no great force, chose rather to retreat and go out the next morning with a recruit of men; and accordingly he did, taking pilots from us, that were acquainted with the ground. But it pleased the Sovereign God so to order it, that they were enclosed with a great multitude of the enemy, which hath slain fifty-two of our Englishmen, and eleven Indians. The account of their names is as follows. From Scituate 18, of whom 15 were slain, viz :

Capt. Pierce, Samuel Russell, Benjamin Crittenden, John Lothrope, Gershom Dodson, Samuel Pratt, Thomas Savary, Joseph Wade, William Wilcome, Jeremiah Barstow, John Ensign, Joseph Cowen, Joseph Perry, John Rowse. (Rose).

Marshfield, 9 slain—Thomas Little, John Eams, Joseph White, John Burrows, Joseph Philips, Samuel Bump, John Low, More ———, John Brance.

Duxbury, 4 slain—John Sprague, Benjamin Foal, Thomas Hunt, Joshua Fobes.

Sandwich, 5 slain—Benjamin Nye, Daniel Bessey, Caleb Blake, Job Gibbs, Stephen Wing.

Barnstable, 6 slain—Lieut. Fuller, John Lewis, Eleazer C——, (probably Clapp), Samuel Linnet, Samuel Childs, Samuel Bereman.

Yarmouth, 5 slain—John Matthews, John Gage, William Gage, Henry Gage, Henry Gold.

Eastham, 4 slain—Joseph Nessefield, John Walker; John M——— (town officer), John Fitz, Jr., John Miller, Jr.*

Thomas Man is just returned with a sore wound.

---

*John Fits, Jr., and John Miller, Jr., belonged to Rehoboth, and also Thomas Man. What is torn off had on it, probably, the name of one from Eastham, and the word Rehoboth. It will be seen that besides what is torn off, there are five names that follow Eastham.

"Thus, sir, you have a sad account of the continuance of God's displeasure against us; yet still I desire steadfastly to look unto Him, who is not only able but willing to save all such as are fit for His salvation. It is a day of the wicked's triumph, but the sure word of God tells us his triumphing is *brief.* O, that we may not lengthen it out by our sins! The Lord help us to join issue in our prayers, instantly and earnestly for the healing and helping of our land! Our extremity is God's opportunity.

"Thus, with our dearest respects to you and Mrs. Cotton, and such sorrowful friends as are with you, I remain, Your ever assured friend,

NOAH NEWMAN.

On the day after this letter was written, March 28th, 1676, the "Ring of the Town" was burned by the Indians under the command of King Philip, destroying forty houses and thirty barns. Two houses only escaped—the garrison house, which stood a short distance from the place now occupied by the house of Phanuel Bishop, and another house on the south side of the Common, which was saved by a number of black sticks placed in the ground about it so as to present at a distance the appearance of being strongly guarded. The fire was set early in the evening, and next morning a few smoking ash heaps alone remained to mark the site of the thriving village. All the inhabitants of the town, save one, sought the garrison house for safety—a strong building which the Indians prudently declined to attack. The one who did not join the others was Robert Beers, an Irishman and by trade a brick-maker. He was religious, but superstitious and eccentric. When the alarm was given that the Indians were coming, he refused to seek safety in the garrison house, but sat in his own house reading the Bible, believing that nothing could harm him w

reading that book. The Indians shot him through the window, and he fell dead with the Bible in his hand, the only person slain on this occasion.

"December 4th, 1699. The selectmen agreed with Mr. Robert Dickson to keep school in Rehoboth for six months, to begin on Thursday, the seventh of this instant; he engaging to do his utmost endeavour to teach both sexes of boys and girls to read English and write and cast accounts. In consideration of said service, the said selectmen, in the town's behalf, do engage to pay him thirteen pounds, one half in silver money, and the other half in good merchantable boards, at the current and merchantable price; the boards to be delivered at the landing place at Samuel Walker's and Sergeant Butterworth's mill. This landing place was at the cove, at the mouth of the ten mile river, in Seekonk. It is said that early in the history of the town, there were wharves built out into the river near the mouth of this cove; that stores were erected here, and considerable trade carried on, and that the people of Providence frequently came over here to purchase their goods."*

Mr. John Lynn taught a school in Rehoboth during three months of the year 1708, agreeing to instruct in reading, writing, grammar and arithmetic, for the sum of seven pounds in current money of New England.

Mr John Lynn entered into another engagement with the town to teach school one year, from the 28 day of February, 1709, for the sum of twenty-nine pounds in current money of New England. The different divisions of the town in which the school was to be kept successively this year, and from each of which one of the school committee was taken, are named as follows in the records, with the length of time allotted to each: "The

*Bliss' History of Rehoboth, page 132.

ring of the town" and "the neighborhood on the east side of the ring of the town"—21 weeks; "Palmer's river"—14 weeks; Watchemoquet*—13 weeks; "Capt, Enoch Hunt's neighborhood" and "the mile and a half"—9 weeks."†

"December 23, 1718. It was voted by the community, that the rules to be observed in seating the new meeting house for the Sabbath are as followeth: Firstly, to have regard to dignity of person, and secondly by age, and thirdly according to the charge they bare in respect to the public charges, and what charge they have been at in building the meeting-house." A committee was chosen to seat the house in accordance with these rules.

In the war of the Revolution, the town was distinguished for a faithful and untiring support of the principles of the Declaration of Independence, which was manifested in a substantial manner by sending three hundred and ten of its men to the continental army (thirty-seven of whom served as commissioned officers), and furnishing large quantities of saltpetre, manufactured in a building erected near the mouth of Ten-mile river for that purpose.

The following letter of instruction given by the town to its representative in 1773 proves the patriotic spirit of the town.

"To Capt. Joseph Barney, Representative for the town of Rehoboth:

Sir:—

"It is evident from the repeated suffrage of the free

---

*This name was given to that part of the present town of East Providence, which lies below the mouth of the Ten-mile river, along the Seekonk river and Narragansett bay, as far down, probably, as the point of land now called "Bullock's neck," and including it.

†Bliss' History of Rehoboth, page 133.

holders, and other inhabitants of this town, that your late conduct in the General Assembly of this Province has met with a favorable reception. With pleasing hopes and expectations we trust you will, in this day of general oppression and invasion of our natural and inherent rights and liberties, join in every salutary and constitutional measure to remove those unconstitutional burdens and grievances that this Province, and America in general have long and justly remonstrated against. Nevertheless we think it our duty to express our sentiments in regard to the encroachments made on our rights and liberties, as stated by the worthy inhabitants of the metropolis of this Province, whose loyalty, vigilance and patriotic zeal, in this time of common danger, has not been equalled in the present nor exceeded in former times: of which we have the highest opinion, and shall ever acknowledge with gratitude, the particulars of which we do not think expedient to enumerate, but refer you to a pamphlet (for your careful perusal) sent from Boston to this and every other town in the Province, which (upon the most careful and critical examination) we humbly conceive very justly states our rights and privileges as men, as subjects, as Christians, and the unparalleled encroachment made on them by a ministry, who, fond of arbitrary sway, in open violation of the most sacred contract and agreement, entered into with our predecessors, the patentees of this Province, and solemnly ratified by King William and Queen Mary, have hitherto, with impunity, profanely violated the faith and promise of a king, on whose royal word we made the most firm and indubitable reliance, and have involved this province and continent in the utmost distress and calamity, and in its consequences have deeply affected the parent State, whose prosperity and happiness we have ever considered as near and dear to us

as our own. And it now is, and ever has been, our earnest desire and prayer that there may never be wanting one of the illustrious House of Hanover to sway the sceptre of Great Britain and America, in righteousness, so long as the sun and moon shall endure.

We, your constituents, desire and expect that you exert yourself to the utmost of your ability, not only to secure our remaining privileges inviolable, but also to obtain a full redress of all those many grievances, so justly complained of—a full restoration and confirmation of all the rights and privileges we are justly entitled to by nature and the solemn compact aforesaid; that generations yet unborn may know that this town has not been dormant, while the enemies thereof have been vigilant and active to wrest from them every privilege and blessing that renders life worthy of enjoyment.

We trust you will be vigilent even among your brethren, lest some of them, through sinister views or ambitious designs, be induced to barter away and betray our dear-bought privileges and liberties, together with this, our paternal inheritance, established with so much toil, and raised to such a height of glory, and transmitted down to us at no less price than the blood and treasure of our ancestors. Though we hope, and presume, there will not be found a man in that august assembly so abandoned, so profane, so enthusiastic, so mad as to disturb the repose of the pious dead, and bring upon himself not only the just indignation of all the virtuous, but the ire of that dread Sovereign, beneath whose awful frown audacious monarchs and minions tremble.

"We present these hints to your judicious consideration, and wish that not only you, but all true friends to the English constitution, may be guided in the path of wisdom and equity, and never be diverted from it

steady pursuit of the true interests of yourselves, your king, your country and posterity.

EPHRAIM STARKWEATHER, NATHAN DAGGETT, THOMAS CARPENTER, 3d, JOHN LYON, JOSEPH BRIDGHAM, WILLIAM COLE,	Committee of Correspondence."

In Bliss' History of Rehoboth may be found a long list of former residents of this town who became distinguished for learning, civic service or in the professions and among them appears them appears the name of Capt. Thomas Willet the first English mayor of the City of Now York.

On the surrender of New York to the English, under Col. Nichols, in August, 1664, by the Dutch governor Stuyvesant, Capt. Willett attended the Commissioners of Appeals—Nichols, Curr, Cartwright, and Maverick,—to that city; and rendered them great service, by his acquaintance with the customs, usages and language of the Dutch, in organizing the new government. Judge Davis informs us [Memorial, p 311] that "Col. Nichols, in a letter to Gov. Prince, written from New York the spring after the reduction of the Dutch settlements, requests that Captain Willett may have such dispensation from his official engagement in Plymouth colony, as to be at liberty to assist in the modelling and reducing the affairs, in those settlements, into good English. He remarks that Mr. Willett was more acquainted with the manners and customs of the Dutch, than any Englishman in the country, and that his conversation was very acceptable to them." He performed his duties here to the entire satisfaction of all concerned; and his services were so highly appreciated, and he rendered himself so popular with the people, that, after the organization of the government, he was elected

the first English Mayor of the city of New York. He was elected a second time to the office.

Capt. Willett returned here at the close of his official life in New York and died in Swansea August 4th 1674. He was buried in East Providence at the head of Bullock's Cove at a place called Little Neck Burying Ground, where a rough stone with a rudely carved inscription still marks his grave.

Churches.

A tax was made to build a meeting house in 1646 and in 1647 it was so far completed as to be used for public worship. It stood where the tomb now is, south of the present Congregational Church. A tax for finishing the church was levied in 1648; in 1659 it was enlarged and then continued in use until 1718 a period of fifty-nine years,* when the second church was erected thirty feet East of the first and remained until 1814 a period of ninety-six years; it was then torn down and a part of the lumber was used in building the present Town Hall. The house now used by the Congregational Society was erected in 1810. Sylvanus Chace Newman, A. M., in his historical oration, delivered in this Church July 4th, 1860, says: "In the absence of bells, they beat the drum to give notice of the time for public worship; and seating the meeting according to seniority and other orders of respectability, was the delicate task of a yearly committee appointed by the town." The first pastor of this Church Rev. Samuel Newman, was a man of great literary ability, who compiled the first full Concordance of the bible in English, Mr. S. C. Newman says of it: "The first edition was

*It seems probable that this church must have been burned by King Philip, when the town was destroyed, March 28, 1676: but there is no special record of its destruction to be found.

printed at London in 1643—the last year of his ministry at Weymouth. The second edition was prepared in this town and printed at London in 1650, and the third and last edition, still more complete, was prepared here and printed in London in 1658. It has been pronounced by Biblical scholars a monument of learning, genius, industry and skill." He left a son named Noah, who succeeded him as pastor of this Church, and who, as we have already learned, in the perilous times of Philip's war, was as ready with the sword as was his father with the pen.

The first meeting, for devising means to erect a Baptist Church on Seekonk common, was held Dec. 17, 1793. The Church was organized November 27th, 1794, consisting of forty members. The first minister who preached to this church was the Rev. John P. Jones, a member of the Baptist church in Newport, R. I., and the edifice in which he preached has remained to this day, and is now known as the First Baptist Church.

Since the addition of East Providence to the State of Rhode Island, a Union Chapel has been erected at Cedar Grove, a second Baptist Church and an Episcopal Church have been built at Watchemoket, while a flourishing society of Methodists at the latter place are expected soon to construct an edifice for religious worship.

On Saturday, March 1st, 1862, a part of the old town of Seekonk passed under the jurisdiction of Rhode Island, and since that time has been known by the name of East Providence. The following account of the proceedings at the time was published in a daily newspaper printed in the City of Providence.

EAST PROVIDENCE.

"That part of the town of Seekonk which, on Saturday, became a portion of this State, has been called East Providence, that name having been bestowed upon it by

Governor Sprague, who was requested by a vote of a citizens' caucus to name the town.

The ball which we spoke of as having been arranged for at the Vue de l'Eau Hotel, to inaugurate the new state of things, was largely attended, and was a most jubilant affair. Quite a number of citizens of Providence were present, including Gov. Sprague and Staff, the Adjutant, Quartermaster and Paymaster Generals, and other military gentlemen.

Immediately after twelve o'clock, on Saturday morning, the time when the decree making the town a part of Rhode Island went into effect, the Governor made a brief speech, in which he announced the name of the town "East Providence." Hon. Edward D. Pearce, Senator from Providence, but who we understand is about to become a resident of the new town, also made an appropriate speech.

At sunrise on Saturday, a detachment of the Grenadier Battery, under Sergeant Major A. A. Babcock which was stationed at Fort Hill, fired a National salute in honor of the union just consummated. Another salute was fired at noon and a third at sunset.

While the first salute was being fired, His Excellency the Governor and Suite arrived at the Washington (Bullock Point) Bridge, and proclaimed it free, in the presence of a large concourse of citizens, and announced the name of the town. The announcements were received with great enthusiasm on the part of those assembled.

A general holiday followed, business being universally suspended, and the time given to joyful demonstrations. Flags and other decorations were displayed, and other manifestations of satisfaction at the new order of affairs were indulged in.

At eleven o'clock the town meeting was held.

Governor Sprague, who was requested by a vote of a citizens' caucus to name the town.

The ball which we spoke of as having been arranged for at the Vue de l'Eau Hotel, to inaugurate the new state of things, was largely attended, and was a most jubilant affair. Quite a number of citizens of Providence were present, including Gov. Sprague and Staff, the Adjutant, Quartermaster and Paymaster Generals, and other military gentlemen.

Immediately after twelve o'clock, on Saturday morning, the time when the decree making the town a part of Rhode Island went into effect, the Governor made a brief speech, in which he announced the name of the town "East Providence." Hon. Edward D. Pearce, Senator from Providence, but who we understand is about to become a resident of the new town, also made an appropriate speech.

At sunrise on Saturday, a detachment of the Grenadier Battery, under Sergeant Major A. A. Babcock which was stationed at Fort Hill, fired a National salute in honor of the union just consummated. Another salute was fired at noon and a third at sunset.

While the first salute was being fired, His Excellency, the Governor and Suite arrived at the Washington (India Point) Bridge, and proclaimed it free, in the presence of a large concourse of citizens, and announced the name of the town. The announcements were received with great enthusiasm on the part of those assembled.

A general holiday followed, business being universally suspended, and the time given to joyful demonstrations. Flags and other decorations were displayed, and other manifestations of satisfaction at the new order of affairs were indulged in.

At eleven o'clock the town meeting was held. Mr

Resolved, That a committee be appointed to at once bear a copy of these resolutions to the citizens now assembled in the town of Seekonk, Mass.

The electors then proceeded to ballot for a Senator and Representative.

Tristam Burges, Esq., was supported for the office of Senator by Conservatives and Democrats, and Dr. Thomas W. Aspinwall by Democrats alone. The former was elected by three majority. Albert K Gerald, Democrat, was elected Representative

The following gentlemen were elected to the other offices without any organized opposition, the whole number of votes cast being 179, and the successful candidates receiving from 132 to 179 votes:

Town Council—Francis Armington, Allen J. Brown, George O. Carpenter, Daniel S. Peck, Austin Gurney

Treasurer—Francis Armington.

Town Sergeant—Timothy A. Leonard.

Assessors—Daniel S. Peck, Allen J. Brown, John A. Wood.

Collector—Thomas B. Bishop.

Constables—George H. Read, Harvey S. Kent, Nathan M. West.

School Committee—Thomas B. Bishop, William S. Munroe, David V. Gerald.

Justices of the Peace—Thomas G. Potter, Asa Peck, Robert M. Pearce.

Overseer of the Poor—Francis Armington.

At this meeting Christopher Dexter, Esq., presented the town with an elegant ballot box, for which donation he received a vote of thanks "

Since this annexation the growth of East Providence has been rapid and healthy, increasing from a population of 1,250 at that time, to 2,172 in 1865 to 2,668 in

1870, and 4,336 in 1875, thus doubling its population in the last ten years This new town has also erected new school houses—ten in number—in every district, so that to-day all the school houses within our limits have been built since 1862. For this purpose the sum of $39,820.07 has been expended. The valuation of the town has increased from $1,354,935 in 1862, to $5,383,500, in 1875, an increase of nearly four fold in thirteen years.

Although liberal in appropriating money for public purposes, the town has ever kept in view the excellent rule, "pay as you go," and its debt at the close of the present financial year will not exceed $7,000. The improvement most necessary now is a new bridge across the Seekonk at Watchemoket, with which will come horse cars and the Pawtuxet water, while the removal of the obstruction to navigation, now presented by Washington bridge, will open the Seekonk to its natural destiny, and line its shores with wharves. Until the year 1793 the Seekonk was crossed by ferries at Watchemoket and the present site of the Central Bridge In this year bridges were erected at both places; the first team crossed Central Bridge April 9th, 1793, and Washington Bridge April 12th, 1793. Both bridges were carried away by a freshet in 1807, and were again destroyed by the September gale of 1815. A wooden statue of Washington standing on the Providence side of the lower bridge was washed away and lost in this gale. There is now in the possession of Benjamin J. Brown, Esq., a marble slab which stood near the statue, bearing the following inscription:

"Washington Bridge,

Built by John Brown, Esq., 1793 this monument is erected by the founder and proprietor of India Point as a testimony of high respect for the great illustrious Washington."

In 1829 the woodwork of Washington bridge was rebuilt, under the superintendance of James C. Bucklin, architect, who is still working at his profession in the city of Providence, and again in 1875 both piers and superstructure were thoroughly repaired, and now bid fair to last until the new bridge we need is constructed; a happy event which we hope may not long be delayed.

The old Central or Red Bridge remained a toll bridge until 1869, when it became impassable by reason of collision with vessels passing through its inconvenient draw bridge. The present free bridge was opened for travel July 16th, 1872, the State of Rhode Island having contributed $20,000, East Providence $15,000, and the City of Providence about $40,000 for its construction. James C Bucklin, of Providence, Edward D. Pearce, of East Providence, and C B. Farnsworth, of Pawtucket, were appointed by the Governor as Commissioners to superintend the construction of the bridge, but Mr. Pearce subsequently resigned, and the Hon. James Y. Smith, of Providence, was appointed to fill the vacancy, and the work was performed in a manner which reflects great credit upon all concerned.

The addition of this free bridge, thus rendering certain the means of communication between the town and the city, gave a wonderful impetus to the growth of the town: the valuation more than doubled in four years, increasing from $2,461.000 in 1871, to $5,383.500 in 1875, and the population nearly doubled in the same period.

In the war of the rebellion the people of the town proved themselves true descendants of the fearless men of the olden time—they were prompt in sending brave men to the battle's van, and liberal in providing for the families left behind. God grant that never again may war, either at home or abroad, vex our native land, and that hence

forth all our efforts may be turned to build up, instead of to destroy. Hasten the glad time when all may strive for the excellence of which the poet sings :

"Clearer eyed the world is learning, through each upward struggling year,
He is prince whose life is noblest, be he peasant, be he peer."

APPENDIX.

STATE AND TOWN OFFICERS ELECTED BY THE TOWN OF EAST PROVIDENCE.

SENATORS.

March 1st 1862 to May 23d 1863.
Tristam Burges.

June 22nd 1863 to April 6th 1864.
Thomas W. Aspinwall.

1864 to 1866
Francis Armington.

1866 to 1867
Albert K. Gerald.

1867 to 1868
George O Carpenter.

1868 to 1869
Edward D. Pearce.

1869 to 1871
Timothy A. Leonard.

1871 to 1873
Edward D. Pearce.

1873 to 1874
William Whitcomb.

1874 to 1875
Francis Armington.

1875 to 1876
Timothy A. Leonard.

1876 to
Oliver Chaffee.

REPRESENTATIVES.

March 1st, 1862 to April 6th, 1863.
Albert K. Gerald.

1863 to 1864
Wm. A. Carpenter.

1864 to 1865
Henry Ide.

1865 to 1866

Albert K. Gerald.

1866 to 1867

George O. Carpenter.

1867 to 1868

Henry H. Ide.

1868 to 1873

George N. Bliss.

1873 to 1875

Albert C. Howard.

1875 to

Alvord O. Miles.

TOWN COUNCILS.

March 1st to April 2nd 1862.

Francis Armington, Allen J. Brown,
Daniel S. Peck, George O. Carpenter,
Austin Gurney.

1862 to 1863

Francis Armington, Allen J. Brown,
Daniel S. Peck, George O. Carpenter,
Ephraim Ide.

1863 to 1864

Nathaniel Cole, Daniel S. Peck,
Timothy A. Leonard.

1864 to 1865

Nathaniel Cole, John A. Wood,
Timothy A. Leonard.

1865 to 1866

Nathaniel Cole, Luther B. Peck,
William Daggett.

1866 to 1867

Nathaniel Cole, Timothy A. Leonard,
William Daggett.

1867 to 1868

Nathaniel Cole, Timothy A. Leonard,
William Daggett.

1868 to 1869

Nathaniel Cole, Charles A. Cobb,
Rowland G. Bassett.

1869 to 1870

Nathaniel Cole, John A. Wood,
Joseph B. Gurney.

1870 to 1871

Nathaniel Cole, Rowland G. Bassett,
William Whitcomb.

1871 to 1872

Nathaniel Cole, William Whitcomb,
George H. Read.

1872 to 1873

Nathaniel Cole, William Whitcomb,
George H. Read.

1873 to 1874

Edward D. Pearce, William Whitcomb,
George F. Wilson.

1874 to 1875

Joseph J. Luther, Andrew J. Anthony,
Galen Pierce.

1875 to 1876

Andrew J. Anthony, Oliver Chaffee,
Samuel S. Barney, Wm. A. Carpenter,
Alfred A. White.

1876 to 1877

Andrew J. Anthony, Samuel S. Barney,
Alfred A. White, Wm. G. Bliven,
James N. Bishop.

TOWN CLERKS.

March 1st 1862 to August 7th 1870
Henry H. Ide. (died while in office)
August 8th 1870 to September 29th 1870
Daniel A. Hopkins.

September 29th 1870 to August 5th 1875.
Charles L. Hazard.

August 5th 1875 to April 5th 1876
Ellery H. Wilson.

April 5th 1876 to
Charles E. Scott.

TOWN TREASURERS.

March 1st 1862, to March 27th 1865.
Francis Armington.

1865 to 1866
Thomas Cole.

1866 to 1869
Francis Armington.

1869 to 1870
William Armington.

1870 to 1875
Francis Armington.

1875 to
Christopher Dexter.

SCHOOL COMMITTEES.

March 1st 1862 to April 2nd 1862

Thomas B. Bishop, Wm. S. Munroe,
David V. Gerald.

1862 to 1863

Thomas B. Bishop David V. Gerald,
George M. P. King.
April 14, 1862, Thomas W. Aspinwall was elected to fill vacancy ; Mr. King failing to serve.

1863 to 1864

Thomas B. Bishop, Seth L. Horton,
George F. Wilson.

1864 to 1865

Thomas W. Aspinwall, Thomas G. Potter,
George M. P. King.

1865 to 1866

David V. Gerald, Seth L. Horton,
George F. Wilson.

1866 to 1867

David V. Gerald, Seth L. Horton,
George F. Wilson.
George F. Wilson resigned May 23, 1866, and George N. Bliss was elected in his place.

1867 to 1868

Thomas W. Aspinwall, Isaac Chesebrough,
George F. Wilson.

1868 to 1869

Isaac Chesebrough, Allen J. Brown,
Samuel E. Evans.

Isaac Chesebrough resigned April 14, 1868, and George N. Bliss was elected to fill the vacancy.

1869 to 1870

Isaac Chesebrough, Thomas G. Potter,
William S. Munroe.

1870 to 1871

George N. Bliss, Rowland G. Bassett,
Thomas I. Bentley.

1871 to 1872

George N. Bliss, Thomas I. Bentley,
Charles L. Hazard.

1872 to 1873

George N. Bliss, Charles L. Hazard,
George E. Carpenter.

1873 to 1874

Albert C. Howard, George E. Carpenter,
Ahaz Bassett.

Albert C. Howard resigned, and Charles L. Hazard was elected May 1, 1873.

1874 to 1875

Robert H. Paine. Ahaz Bassett,
George E. Carpenter.

Ahaz Bassett resigned June 1, 1874, and Isaac Chesebrough was elected to fill the vacancy.

1875 to 1876

Robert H. Paine, Isaac Chesebrough,
George E. Carpenter.

1876 to 1877

Robert H. Paine, Isaac Chesebrough,
Hiram E. Johnson

APPROPRIATIONS.

The following appropriations are all that have been made at Town Meetings since March 1st, 1862:

APPROPRIATIONS.

April 2nd, 1862.

Schools	$ 500.
Highways	1.200.
Incidentals, including State Tax	1 700.

May 5th, 1862.

For erection and repairs of school houses, and for payment of District property taken by the Town	$ 9.500.

August 4th, 1862.

For Bounty for volunteers	$ 3.000.
" Pay of recruiting officer	100.
" Printing, advertising, rent of offices &c	60.
" Committee	15.

August 29th, 1862,

For raising the Town's quota under the President's call for 300.000 men for nine months	$ 6.000.

August 29th, 1862.

To aid the families of those who are in their Country's service.....$ 500.

April 27th, 1863.

For Schools.....$ 1.000.
" School House Debt..... 1.000.
" Incidentals..... 3.000.
" Roads and Bridges..... 1.200.
" School Houses..... 1.800.

May 20th, 1863.

For School house in District No. 2, in addition to what may be received from sale of old house.....$ 1.200.

July 20th, 1863.

For families of drafted men..... ...$ 9.000.

April 25th, 1864.

For Schools..... .....$ 1.200.
" Sinking fund for debt..... 1.400.
" Highways and Bridges..... 1 200.
" Incidentals and State tax.... ..... 3.500.
" building School house in District No 7 1.000.
" " " " " " " 2 1.500.
" " " " " " " 6
together with proceeds of sale of old house 1.000.

March 27th, 1865.

For Schools.....$ 1.200
" Sinking fund and Interest..... 1 400.
" State Tax..... 5.085.
" Incidentals..... 2.100.

March 26th, 1866.

For Schools.....$ 1.400.
" Sinking Fund and Interest..... 1.200.
" State Tax..... 5.085
" Incidentals..... 2 100.

March 25th, 1867.

For Schools	$ 1 600.
" Sinking fund and Interest	1.300.
" Highways	3.000.
" Incidentals and support of Poor	2.000.
" State Tax	5 084 20

April 6th, 1868.

For Schools	$ 1.600.
" Sinking fund and Interest	1.300.
" State Tax	4.500.
" Highways	3.000.
" Incidentals and Support of Poor	2.000.

April 12th, 1869.

For Schools	$ 1.800.
" Sinking fund and Interest	1.300.
" State Tax	4 500.
" Highways	4.000
" Incidentals and Support of Poor	2.800.

December 9th, 1869.

Towards building a bridge across Seekonk River at the site of Central Bridge... $15.000.

April 6th, 1870.

" For Schools	$ 2.000.
" Sinking fund and Interest	1.300.
" State Tax	4.500.
" Highways	4.000.
" Incidentals and Support of Poor	3.000.
" Roads leading to Red Bridge, to be used only in case said bridge is built	1.000.

April 10th, 1871.

For Schools	$ 2.000.
" Sinking fund and Interest	1.500.
" State Tax	4.500.

For Highways..... 4.000.
" Incidentals and Support of Poor..... 4.000

October 21st, 1871.

For building wing walls at the East End of Central Bridge.....$ 2.000.

February 13th, 1872.

For completing walls at Central Bridge..$ 800.

April 8th, 1872.

For Schools.....$ 2.800.
" Sinking fund and Interest..... 2.000.
" State Tax..... 4.500.
" Highways..... 4.000.
" Incidentals and Support of Poor.... 3.500.
" Wing Walls at Central Bridge..... 1.000.

June 29th, 1872.

For building School house for Districts Nos. 2 and 8.....$ 4.000.
" constructing stations for Police purposes..... 1.500.

November 16th.

For Police.....$ 1.200.

April 14th, 1873.

For Schools.....$ 5.500.
" Evening Schools..... 200.
" Sinking fund..... 2.500.
" Interest..... 1.500.
" State Tax..... 5.500.
" Highways..... 4.500.
" Incidentals..... 4.500.
" Police..... 2.500.
" Completing Grammar School & grounds 1.000.

April 13th, 1874.

For Schools.....$ 5 500.
" Evening Schools..... 250.

For Sinking Fund..... 3.000.
" Interest..... 1.500.
" State Tax..... 5.685. 81
" Highways..... 7.500.
" Incidentals and Support of Poor.... 4.500.
" Police..... 3.000.

April 12th, 1875.

For Schools.....$ 6.750.
" Evening Schools..... 250.
" Sinking Fund..... 5.000
" Interest..... 1.500.
" State Tax..... 5.685. 81
" Highways..... 10.000
" Incidentals..... 3.000.
" Support of Poor..... 1.000.
" School House Account..... 500.
" Police..... 2.000.
" Lighting Streets..... 400.

June 7th, 1875.

For lot for Grammar School.....$ 4.000.

February 26th, 1876.

For Schools.....$ 1.100.

April 10th, 1876.

For Schools, repairs &c.....$ 9.500.
" Sinking Fund..... 6 000.
" Interest..... 2 000.
" State Tax..... 5.700.
" Highways..... 11·000.
" Incidentals..... 4 000.
" Police..... 3.200.
" Support of Poor..... 1.000.
" Lighting Streets..... 350.

In addition to these appropriations by the town, School

District No. 1 (Watchemoket) has raised by district tax for school purposes the following amounts:

June 22d 1864	$ 500.
October 30th 1865	134.
November 20th 1865	700.
September 4th 1866	700.
October 15th 1867	750.
August 11th 1868	900.
November 30th 1869	1200.
August 12th 1870	1400.
November 3d 1871	1700.
November 19th 1872	$ 900.—$8.084

Commencing in 1873 the town has since appropriated sufficient money for school purposes and rendered district taxes unnecessary.

March 30th 1867 a tax was voted for school purposes in District No. 8, by which the sum of $55 was raised.

PERCENTAGE OF TAXATION.

1862	$1 12½	per	$100
1863	61	"	"
1864	80	"	"
1865	78	"	"
1866	73	"	"
1867	75	"	"
1868	70	"	"
1869	72	"	"
1870	80	"	"
1871	80	"	"
1872	80	"	"
1873	95	"	"

1874.....	75	per $100
1875.....	70	" "
1876.....	80	" "

The following is an extract from the report of Christopher Dexter, Esq., Town Treasurer for the year ending April 10th 1876 :

"Year.	Net Receipts.	Net Expenditures.	Highways.	Schools.
1862—3	$12,243 78	$19,761 31	$1,200 00	$ 500 00
1863—4	8,706 81	6,624 33	1,200 00	1,000 00
1864—5	13,173 78	12,212 51	1,200 00	1,200 00
1865—6	11,660 64	9,638 27	10cts. per $100.	1,200 00
1866—7	13,956 86	12,397 69	1,600 00	1,400 00
1867—8	13,648 18	16,685 42	3,000 00	1,600 00
1868—9	16,540 65	13,476 87	3,000 00	1,600 00
1869—70	16,609 52	18,680 18	4,000 00	1,800 00
1870—1	17,250 83	19,359 93	4,000 00	2,000 00
1871—2	21,006 38	29,879 77	4,000 00	2,000 00
1872—3	23,867 79	22,812 88	4,000 00	2,800 00
1873—4	28,937 30	27,280 30	4,500 00	5,700 00
1874—5	43,168 88	39,118 97	7,500 00	5,750 00
1875—6	41,562 87	52,712 02	10,000 00	8,100 00
	$282,334 27	$300,631 45		

Net Receipts, as above.....	$282,334 27	
Outstanding notes.....	19,000 00—	$301,324 27
Deduct Net Payments, as above		300,631 45
Balance in Treasury.....		$702 82

The cost of the various school houses and lots are included in the foregoing table as follows :—

In 1862—3, built No's 3, 4, 8, and raised No. 1 one story, cost with two lots, $6,066 95. In 1864—5, built No's 2 and 7, cost with one lot, $3,411 83. In 1867—8, built addition to No. 1, cost $4,188 57. In 1869—70,

built No's 5 and 6, cost $4,661 74. In 1872—3, and in 1873—4, built Grammar, 2 and 8, cost with lot, $5,145-10. In 1875—6, built Grove street house, No. 1, cost with lot and superintendence, $16,345 88.

TOWN VALUATION AND TAXES.

For the following Table, except the year 1862, I am indebted to Nathaniel Cole, Esq.

The figures for 1862 may not be absolutely correct, but the errors, if any, will not exceed a few dollars.

Years.	Real Estate.	Personal Estate.	Total.	Rate of Tax, per $1000.	Amount of Tax
1862	$1,122,050	$232,885	$1,354,935	$11 25	$15,243 02
1863	1,085,650	245,150	1,330,800	6 10	8,117 88
1864	1,182,075	287,750	1,469,825	8 00	11,758 60
1865	1,268,600	387,375	1,655,975	*6 80	11,260 63
1866	1,336,800	456,625	1,793,425	7 30	13,092 00
1867	1,403,200	433,700	1,836,900	7 50	13,776 75
1868	1,538,700	423,500	1,962,200	7 00	13,735 40
1869	1,629,700	459,150	2,088,850	7 20	15,039 72
1870	1,692,900	442,500	2,135,400	8 00	17,083 20
1871	1,885,100	575,900	2,461,000	8 00	19,688 00
1872	2,151,475	563,325	2,714,800	8 00	21,718 40
1873	2,644,800	742,100	3,386,900	9 50	32,175 55
1874	4,524,400	823,900	5,348,300	7 50	40,112 25
1875	4,565,700	817,800	5,383,500	7 00	37,684 50

*Also, $1 00 per $1000, highway tax in labor."

REPORT OF THE COMMISSIONERS TO MAKE AN ESTIMATE OF THE RATABLE PROPERTY IN THE TOWNS OF PAWTUCKET AND EAST PROVIDENCE.

The Commissioners who were appointed by the Governor, in accordance with the provisions of an Act of the General Assembly, passed at their May Session, A. D 1862, entitled, "An Act to provide for the valuation of the property within the territory, over which the State of Massachusetts, prior to the first day of March last, exercised jurisdiction for taxation, and for other purposes," respectfully

REPORT.

That they were severally engaged to the faithful performance of their duties; they appointed one freeholder in each of said towns to assist them in making said valuation, and conformed in their proceedings to the law of this State, passed May, A. D., 1855, under which the valuation of the towns in this State, in Chapter 12, Title III, of the Revised Statutes was made, and now present the following, as the valuation by them made:

The whole value of the ratable property in the town of Pawtucket, according to the mode of valuation prescribed by said Act is.....$2,129,000

The value of the whole ratable property in the town of East Providence, according to the mode of valuation prescribed by said Act, is.....$1,130,000

The total value of the ratable property within the territory, over which the Commonwealth of Massachusetts hath, before the 1st day of March last, exercised juris-

diction, and which since said 1st day of March last, has been deemed a part of the State of Rhode Island, comprising the territory heretofore called Pawtucket, now the town of Pawtucket, in this state, and that part of the town heretofore called Seekonk, in the State of Massachusetts, now the town of East Providence, in this State,.....$3,259,000

The entire valuation of the said towns, if the property was estimated at its full value, would be:

Town of Pawtucket.....	$2,178,000
Town of East Providence.....	1,378,000
Total of the two towns.....	$3,556,000

All of which is respectfully submitted by

(Signed,) EDWARD D. PEARCE,
ROBERT SHERMAN,
JOSEPH W. SWEET.

The following documents are copies of original papers now in the possession of Joseph Brown, Esq., of Seekonk, and never before published. They were kindly loaned by Mr. Brown for this purpose:

Province of the
[L. S.] Massachusetts Bay }

William Shirley, Esq., Captain General and Governour in Chief, in and over His Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, etc.

To William Brown, Gentleman——Greeting.

By virtue of the Power and Authority, in and by His Majesty's Royal Commission to Me granted, to

be Captain General, etc. over this His Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay, aforesaid; I do (by these Presents) reposing especial Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and Good Conduct, constitute and appoint you the said William Brown——to be Quarter-Master of the Fourth Troop of Horse, under the Command of Maj'r Zephaniah Leonord in the Second Regiment of Horse in the province aforesaid whereof Samuel Miller Esq. is Collonall ——— ———

You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the Duty of a Quartermaster ——— in leading, ordering and exercising said Troop——in Arms, both inferiour Officers and Soldiers, and to keep them in good Order and Discipline; hereby commanding them to obey you as their Quarter-Master——and yourself to observe and follow such Orders and Instructions, as you shall from time to time receive from me, or the Commander in Chief for the Time being, or other your Superiour Officers for His Majesty's Service, according to Military Rules and Discipline, pursuant to the Trust reposed in you.

Given under My Hand & Seal at Arms, at Boston the Seventeenth Day of September. In the Sixteenth Year of the Reign of His Majesty King George the Second, Annoy Domini. 1742.

By his Excellency's command.

J. Willard Story. W. Shirley.

Rehoboth May ye 28th 1778,

To the Seelick men of Rehoboth plese to pay to Capt Nathaniel Carpenter thirty pounds for my Inlisting in to the Continental Sarvis for Nine Mounths after ariving at Camps at fish Kills.

his
Pomp X Reses.
mark

Rehoboth May ye 28th 1778. Rec'd at Capt. Nathan Carpenters Ninety Pounds in full of all Bounty, and hired money being a soldier in the Continental Service for the term of Nine months—for the third Company of Militia in Rehoboth

his
POMP X REANS.
mark

Rehoboth May ye 15th 1770. Wee the Subscribers Do Volintarily Inlist our Selves into the Service of the United States untill the first Day of July Next to Do Duty at Tivetown under such officers as shall be appointed for the Third com ɔany of Milistia in Rehoboth on consideration of the Su n of Thirty Pounds Paid by Capt John Perry on our Signing this Enlistment.

THOMAS WILMARTH, JUN.
NATHANIEL CHAFFEE.

Rehoboth August ye 11th 1779.

Sir) I have Rec'd orders this Day from Coll. Thomus Carpenter for the Porpouse of Raising two Hundred and twenty Eight men out of our Reg't to march to providence, (under the command of the Contanental Genl'. to sarve foure weeks from the time of thare arriving in Camp) as soon as possible and likewise three Capts. and six lieuts. to command them, with one field officer from the reg't: you are therefore Requiered to Raise out of your company 33 Men: and you are Desired to mate at Mr. Jeremiah Wheelers to-morrow at two o'clock in the afternoon to consult further about this matter. Hereof fail not as you Regard the weelfare of these Stats and make Return of the men Raised as soon as ma be to the Co'll of the Regiment or to my Selfe —— —— ——

NATHAN'LL CARPENTER, Major.

(To Capt John Perry)

A list of the men under Lieutenent Brown in Colonel Carpenter's Regiment, 1776:

LIEUTENANTS.

First, Samuel Brown, Second, John De———.

SERGEANTS.

Amos Goff,
Miles Shorey,
Remember Kent,
Stephen Burn.

CORPORALS.

Ezra French,
Elkanah French,
Jacob Allen,
William Eddy.

ALARM MEN.

Amos Handy,
Oliver Read,
Jabiz Carpenter,
William Daggett,
Jacob Shorey
Nathan Ide,
Daniel Carpenter,
William Titus,
Aaron Read,
Charles Peck,
Ephraim Walker,
Nathaniel Phillips,
Azaheel Carpenter,
William Sabin,
John Bowen,
John Shorey,
Leverrit Cushing,
John Robinson,
Jonathan Carpenter,
Training Cand,
James French,
John French,
John Brown,
Caleb Carpenter,
Nathan Read,
David Cooper,
Ephraim Carpenter,
Jedediah Carpenter,
Job Carpenter,
Eliphalet Carpenter,
Comfort Chaffee,
John Barker,
Amos Whitaker,
Moses Walker,
Richard Whitaker,
Noah Newman,

Daniel Perrin,	Abraham Ormsbee,
Samuel Woodward,	Ezekiel Carpenter,
Nathan Peckham,	Noah Fuller,
Aaron Lyon,	Benjamin Ormsbee,
James Carpenter	Samuel Bowen,
David Read,	Samuel Allen ye 2,
James Bly,	John Woodward,
Simeon Read,	Jabiz Perry,
Benjamin Gage,	Jonathan French,
Samuel Lyon,	Seba French,
Ephraim Turner,	Nathaniel Cooper,
Thomas Munro,	Daniel Ide Perrin,
David Hutchins,	Jacob Carpenter,
Penewell Carpenter,	James Read,
Samuel Butterworth Chaffee,	Ebenezer Short,
Samuel Carpenter,	William Slade,
Nathan Newman,	Aza Bowen,
Simeon Hunt,	Abel Medbery,

Josiah Chushing, Junr.

Rehoboth September ye 3 : 1776
then Received of Samuel Brown the sum of Six Pounds in cash for to go to Crown Pint I say received By Me

LEMUEL PERRIN.

Rehoboth September ye 3, 1776,
then received of Samuel Brown the sum of Six Pounds. In cash for ingaiging to go to Crown Pint I say Received by me,

JAMES COOPER

Rehoboth June 4th 1778.
I the Subscriber Do acknolidge, that I Have Received of Capt. Natha'l Carpenter the sum of One Hundred pounds in full of my towns Bounty and Hier for sarving in the

Continental sarvice at the fish Kills for Nine Months I say Received By me, JOHN COLE.

Rehoboth June 8th 1778.
I the Subscriber Do acknoledg that I Have Received of Capt. Natha'l Carpenter the sum of One Hundred pounds it Being for my towns Bounty and Hier in full for my ingageing in the Contanental army at the fish Kills for the term of Nine months I say Received By me,

BEZALEEL BOWEN.

Rehoboth July 1st 1779.
Received of Capt John Perry by his Note Baring Even Date with this Receipt the Sum of seventy-two Pounds with the Bounty for Each our Servies Six months in the Army or till the first of January next as witness our hands, JOB CARPENTER,

LEWIS CARPENTER.

Rehoboth July 24th 1778.
I the Subscriber Do acknlodg that I have Received of Capt. Natha'l Carpenter the sum of twenty Pounds for my Hier as a Soldier to Do Sarvise at Cambridg until the first Day of January Next as witness my Hand,

BRADOCK CHAFFEE.

Rehoboth July ye 23d 1778.
Then I the subscriber Have Received of Capt. Nathaniel Carpenter the Sum of ten Pounds it being a Bounty for him to sarve at Cambridge in the Contenental Sarvice until the first Day of January Next. I say Received By me EPHRAIM TOWNES.

Rehoboth September 24th 1778. A Inlistment.
I the Subcriber for the considerton of forty-five pounds I

do Inlist as a Soldier under the command of Gen'l. Sullien or the Gen'l Court of this State to sarve untill the first of Jeneray Next and to do Sarve as a Soldier for the third Military Companys Quoto in Rehoboth as witness my Hand BRADOCK CHAFFEE.

Rehoboth June ye 26th 1779.
We the Subscribers do Volentary Inlist into the Conten ental Service for the term of Nine Months to Serve under such officers as shall be appointed by the Commander in Chief by orders of the Court of the State, as witness our Hands,

NOAH NEWMAN,
NATHAN NEWMAN,
SEBA FRENCH,
SAMUEL CARPENTER.
DAVID READ, 2nd,
DANIEL PERRIN.

Rehoboth July ye 12th A D. 1779,
Rec'd. of Capt John Perry in the behalfe of said town By his Note of hand for two thousend Dolers Bearing Even Date Hearwith for my Hier into the Sarvice for Nine mounths for said town. DANIEL READ.

I the Subcriber Do here unto Subcribed Being of clar mind to serve and defend our Country and Leberties have this day voluntarily Inlisted as Soldier in the Contanental Army for Nine Mounths from the Date unless Sooner Discharged and do Bind myself to conform in all Instances to such Rules and Regulations as Are or Shall Be Established for the Government of said Army witness my hand,

his
POMP X KEANS
mark.

Rehoboth May 23 : 1778.

Rehoboth June ye 1 : 1778.

A Subscription for the Purpos of Raising men for the third company in Rehoboth to serve Nine months in the Contanental servis after they shall Arive at the Fish kills. ————and for that Porpose we whoze Names are under Ritten Promis to Pay the Sums we shall Annex to our names to Capt. Nathaniel Carpenter for the Above Porpos and to Have for the same Co.

	£	s.	d.
Timothy Titus,	3	0	0
Wm. Daggett	9	0	0
John Shorey	3	0	0
Nathaniel Read	3	0	0
Pennal Carpenter	7	10	0
Timothy Cob	3	0	0
John Carpenter	8	0	0
Elijah Kent	6	0	0
Nathan Ide	3	0	0
Daniel Daggett	5	0	0
John French	6	0	0
Elkanah French	2	2	0
Nath'l. Cooper, Jun	9	0	0
Oliver Read	0	18	0
James Cooper	0	12	0
Timothy Read, Jun	1	10	0
John Lindley	5	0	0
Thomas Read	3	0	0
Thomas Munro	3	0	0
Simeon Goff	0	12	0
William Goff	3	0	0
David Perrin	6	0	0
Amos Goff	1	10	0
Abel Walker	3	0	0
Elkanah French	5	0	0

	£	s.	d.
Received of John Carpenter	2	8	0
Received More	3	12	0
	£6	0	0

State of
Massachusetts Bay

[L. S.]

JOHN AVERY DOLAY,
JERAMIAH POWELL,
ARTEMUS WARD,
CALEB CUSHING,
T. CUSHING,
B. WHITE,
H. GOVONOUR,
F. M. DANA,
SAM'L. DANIELSON,
N. CUSHING,
JOSIAH STONE,
A. FULLER,
SAM'L. NILES,
JOSEPH SIMPSON,
AARON WOOD,
JONA'N. PITTS.

The Major Part of the Council of Massachusetts Bay in New England

To Samuel Brown Gen'l—Greeting. You being appointed First Lieutenant of the fifth Company Commanded by John Perry in the first Regiment of Militia in the county of Bristol whereof Thomas Carpenter is Colonel. By virtue of the Power vested in me, we do by these presents, reposing especial Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and Good Conduct, Commission you accordingly. You are therefore carefully and diligently to Discharge the Duty of a 1st Lieutenant in leading, ordering and exercising said Company in Arms, with Inferior Officers and Soldiers, and to keep them in good Order and Discipline: And they are hereby commanded to obey you as their 1st Lieutenant and you are yourself to observe and follow such Orders and Instructions as you shall from time to time receive from the Major Part of the Council or your Superior Officers. Given under our hands and the seal of said State at Boston the tenth Day of June in the year of our Lord 1779.

By the Command of the
Major Part of the Council.

Bristol ss Rehoboth June ye 29th 1779.——The within Named Samuel Brown Gent'Man personally appeared and took the oath for the faithfull Performance of his office as by Law Required. THOMAS CARPENTER, Col ,

Before NATHAN'L. CARPENTER, MAJOR.

Rehoboth June 2d 1778.

A Subscription to raise the sum of money that is not Drafted in order to Hire the Contenental Soldiers for the nine months service ; For the third Company's Quota in Rehoboth

We the Subscribers Do Promis to pay to Nathaniel Carpenter Capt. of said company the sum affixed to our Respective Names. As witness our hands.

	£	s.	d.
Ephraim Walker	7	0	0
Richard Whitaker	9	0	0
Samuel Woodward Jun	3	0	0
Samuel Lyon	6	0	0
Daniel Carpenter	9	0	0
Josiah Cushing, Jun'r	6	0	0
David Cushing	5	0	0
Jacob Cushing	9	0	0
Josiah Ide	6	0	0
Caleb Carpenter, 3d	3	0	0
Jonathan Carpenter	3	0	0
Samuel Woodward	6	0	0
Asahel Carpenter, Jun'r	6	0	0
Eleazar Carpenter	3	0	0

Camp at Foxbury Oct. 27th 1775, an inventory of Lieu't. Aaron Walker's articles, warlike furniture, left in the Company with others who Deceased Oct. 19th 1775.

	£	s.	d.
One Fire Arm and Bayonett	2	14	0
One Sword	0	7	0
One Cartridge Box	0	6	0

	£	s.	d.
Amount brought forward,	3	7	0
One Flask	0	6	0
One Blanket	0	8	0
and the one half of one chest	0	1	6
one pare shooes	0	3	0
	£4	5	6

As witness our hands, JOSEPH ALLEN, Ensign,
SAM'L. BLISS, Capt.

Foxbury Oct. 30th 1775. This may Certify that I the Subscriber have made Diligent Search, and find this to be a true Inventory of Lieu't. Walkers Estate left in Camp.

ABIAL MITCHELL, Major.

The following letter is deemed worthy of a place here and is well merited by the citizens of a town which has made such liberal appropriations for the improvement of its highways at a time of universal depression in business interests.

(COPY).

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND, }
ATTORNEY GEN'L.'S OFFICE, }

PROVIDENCE, July 6, 1876.

ANDREW J. ANTHONY, ESQ.,
Pres. Town Council East Providence.

At the request of your townsman, Geo. N. Bliss, Esq., I took a ride into East Providence a few days ago to look at certain roads, against which complaints had been made by certain citizens.

Without exception, I consider them the finest country roads I have ever seen. They were in every respect first class; and in my opinion reflect great credit upon all concerned. (Signed.) Very Respectfully

WILLARD SAYLES.

NORTH PROVIDENCE

Centennial Celebration,

JUNE 24, 1865.

NORTH PROVIDENCE CENTENNIAL.

A

REPORT OF THE CELEBRATION

AT

PAWTUCKET, NORTH PROVIDENCE,

OF THE

ONE HUNDREDTH ANNIVERSARY

OF THE

INCORPORATION OF THE TOWN.

June 24th, 1865.

WITH AN ADDRESS,

CONTAINING

HISTORICAL MATTERS OF LOCAL INTEREST.

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED

UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF ARRANGEMENTS.

PAWTUCKET:
ROBERT SHERMAN, PRINTER, MAIN STREET.
1865.

DEDICATION.

To the citizens of North Providence; especially to the natives and older residents of this town, who have welcomed talent and skill from abroad, and have nurtured industry and enterprise at home; and to the absent sons of this town, who still love the place of their birth, and pray for its prosperity, this book is respectfully dedicated.

ACTION IN TOWN MEETING.

NORTH PROVIDENCE, *September* 26, 1864.

IN Town Meeting legally called, the following Preamble and Resolutions were presented by Edward S. Wilkinson, Esq., and unanimously adopted:

Whereas, in the month of June, A. D. 1865, will be the One Hundredth Anniversary of the incorporation of the town by the General Assembly; Therefore,

Resolved, That a Committee of nine be appointed for the purpose of making such arrangements as they may deem expedient for the proper celebration of the Centennial Anniversary of the incorporation of this town, and that said Committee be authorized to draw on the Town Treasurer for any expense that may be incurred in such celebration, provided the amount does not exceed the sum of one thousand dollars.

Resolved, That Daniel Wilkinson, Charles S. Bradley, Henry Armington, Olney Arnold, Hiram H. Thomas, Obadiah Brown, William F. Sayles, Lewis Fairbrother, and Amasa M. Eaton, compose said Committee, and that they be authorized to fill any vacancies that may occur in their own numbers.

TRANSACTIONS

OF THE

COMMITTEE OF ARRANGEMENTS.

In April, 1865, the Committee met, and organized by choosing Daniel Wilkinson, Chairman, and Amasa M. Eaton, Secretary.

After a free interchange of opinion between several of the Committee as to what kind of a celebration to get up, it was

Voted, That Daniel Wilkinson, Henry Armington and Amasa M. Eaton be a sub-Committee to make all the necessary arrangements for getting up a celebration worthy of the occasion.

The Committee extended an invitation to the Rev. Massena Goodrich, Pastor of the Mill Street Universalist Society of Pawtucket, to deliver an Address, which he kindly accepted.

All the preliminary arrangements having been made, Saturday, June 24th, 1865, was fixed upon as the day for the celebration.

THE CELEBRATION.

At 10 o'clock on the morning of Saturday, June 24th, 1865, the procession commenced forming on Summer street, and all things being in readiness, moved in the following order:

THE PROCESSION.

Chief Marshal—William R. Walker, Esq.
Aids—Col. Stephen R. Bucklin, Capt. Christopher Duckworth, and Joseph F. Brown, Esq.
American Brass Band, 24 pieces.
Company H, Pawtucket Light Guard, Capt. Crocker.
Returned Veterans of the town of North Providence, in uniform.
Drum Band.
Rhode Island Engine Company No. 1, Capt. Jenks.
Monitor Steam Fire Engine Company, Capt. McQuistion.
Rough and Ready Engine Company No. 2, Capt. Collyer.
Fairmount Engine Company No. 3, Capt. Bennett.
Committee of Arrangements.
Orator of the day and Officiating Clergyman.
Clergymen of the town.
Town Officers.
Firewards and Presidents of Firewards.
State Officers.
Members of the General Assembly.
Invited Guests.
Carriage containing 36 young ladies, representing the 36 States, under the direction of Capt. C. Duckworth.
Citizens of the town and vicinity.

The procession marched through North Union to Main street, down Main to Pleasant, down Pleasant to Jenks, up Jenks, through Cedar to George street, through George to Common, up Common to Main street, down Main street, over the Bridge, up Main street to Walcott, down Walcott street to Front, through Front street and over the Bridge, up Mill street to Exchange, up Exchange street to High, through High street to the First Baptist Church.

EXERCISES AT THE CHURCH.

Arriving at the Church, the Assembly was called to order by the Hon. Charles S. Bradley, President of the day.

The exercises commenced by the singing of the following

Motett—"Praise the Lord,"

by a select choir, under the direction of Pardon E. Tillinghast, Esq.

Then followed an original hymn, written for the occasion by James Wood, Esq.:

To-day we stand on holy ground,
  Whence ceaseless comforts flow,
Where all was one wide wilderness
  A hundred years ago.

Our fathers, nerved with manly strength,
  Broke up the rugged sod;
Not in their strength alone they toiled,
  But put their trust in God.

He crown'd their labors with success,
  And soon the barren wild
Became a second paradise;—
  Another Eden smiled.

A kindred people join'd as one,
  With hearts and feelings warm,
And industry and thrift built up
  The cottage and the farm.

The church and school-house rose to view,
  To teach, and preach His word,
Till all the place was dotted o'er
  With temples to the Lord.

Here art and science found their place,
  Built reservoir and flume,
The potent power of steam propell'd
  The spindle and the loom.

In kindred works from year to year
  Our sires did thus engage,
Then left to us a pleasant place
  And goodly heritage.

Let us, their children, live like them,
  In faith, and works, and prayers,
So we may leave to future times
  A record bright as theirs.

Prayer was offered by Rev. Charles E. Smith, Pastor of the First Baptist Church, as follows:

Almighty God, Thou Ruler of nations; we thank Thee for the blessings of one hundred years. We thank Thee that by Thy providential

appointment our lot has been cast on this western continent, far from the tyranny of despots and the injustice of the old world. We thank Thee that from our infancy we have known only the benign influences of free institutions; that it has been ours to enjoy the fostering care and the ennobling power of an enlightened christian civilization. We thank Thee that of all places upon the earth, the lines have fallen to us in our beloved New England. We thank Thee for the intelligence, and highmindedness, and piety of our forefathers; that the beginning of our history was due, not to the promptings of the spirit of gain, but to the impulses of conscience. We thank Thee that the experiment of free government has been so successfully tried, and that after a century of local, municipal rule it has not been found wanting; at least, so far as the great essentials to human happiness and prosperity are concerned. We thank Thee that this centennial anniversary finds us in common with all our nation once more in the possession of that peace of which for four terrible years we have been bereft, and in possession of such surprising and excellent results as abundantly compensate us for the expenditure of blood and treasure, and will be a priceless heritage to coming generations. We thank Thee for an emancipated land; for a government strong to protect us against foreign foes and domestic insurgents. And now that we bring our thank-offerings into Thy presence, humbly imploring the forgiveness of our sins, and acknowledging our own demerit, we urge in the name of Christ these petitions: We entreat the continuance of the favor of our fathers' God to their children to the latest generations. We ask Thee that when another century shall have taken its flight, the blessings to be commemorated shall be no less than those we call to mind to-day. We ask Thee that this soil, sacred indeed to us by its associations with the excellent who have passed away, may continue the home of freedom, intelligence, virtue, and religion. We ask Thee that the Great Republic of which this town and State are constituent parts, may advance under the guidance of Jehovah to that unexampled pre-eminence among the nations which our hearts already so fondly foretell. We pray that religious liberty, which first found a civil home within our own State, but now reigns through our land, may never be succeeded by religious persecutions, that our country may continue the home of the exile, and the refuge of the oppressed. Let justice be done through all our borders, let vice be outlawed by the general virtue of the people, let religion be respected, protected, and exert its legitimate influence through our land. And now praying for Thy blessing upon all who are in authority, whether in the General Government, the State, or our town corporation, beseeching Thee to direct in wisdom the issue of these

important political questions which just now agitate the public mind, we entreat Thee to add Thy blessing to the present occasion, making the words of him who shall address us, together with all the exercises of the hour, minister to our profit, and to Thy glory, through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

Then followed another original hymn, written for the occasion by JAMES WOOD, Esq.:

To God—our fathers' God—we raise
The tribute of our heartfelt praise;
Through endless ages still the same,
We bless and magnify Thy name.

We thank Thee that Thy own right hand
Hath saved and sanctified our land,
Where God-crowned liberty alone
Shall hold dominion on her throne.

We bless Thee for the grace that comes
To grateful hearts and happy homes,
To teach our souls to feel and know
The source from whence these blessings flow.

Let greater love each bosom swell,
Than pen can write or tongue can tell,
Till each and all around shall be,
As near as mortals may,—like Thee.

So when we leave these earthly scenes,
To pass the gulf that intervenes,
A Saviour's arms shall bear us o'er,
And land us safe on Canaan's shore.

After which, the President of the day introduced to the audience the Rev. MASSENA GOODRICH, who delivered the following interesting and historical Centennial Address.

INTRODUCTORY NOTE.

Gratitude and propriety demand that I acknowledge my indebtedness to some of my fellow-citizens for information supplied. I forbear to mention the books which I have consulted, as they are public property. I name simply those persons from whom I have received oral information. To Rev. Dr. Benedict, to E. S. Wilkinson, Esq., to Capt. N. G. B. Dexter, Stephen Randall, Esq., Lemuel Angell, Esq., Francis H. Shepard, Esq., and to Daniel Wilkinson, Esq., I return my thanks. I must add to these names, those of Capt. James S. Brown, of Pawtucket, and Mr. Samuel Greene, of Woonsocket. If this address has any merit, it is largely attributable to the information given, and services rendered by the gentlemen above named.

M. G.

CENTENNIAL ADDRESS.

It is interesting in treating of the history of a town or State, to trace it from its feeble beginning through its various stages of growth. It is pleasing to be able to answer the questions, Who felled the first trees of the primeval forests within its borders? Whose plowshare turned the first furrow? Whose hoe broke the first sod? Whose cabin sheltered the first residents? These are questions, fellow-citizens, that cannot be answered with regard to our town. It had no independent existence till a century ago. It commenced its race, not a blushing maiden, but the mother of an already large family. Its early history is therefore connected with that of Providence. Several of the most thriving towns of our State can say, *Providence is the mother of us all.*

A word on this point, however, may not be out of place. The settlement of Providence was probably begun two hundred and twenty-nine years ago this very month. Its territory was then very extensive. In the year 1731, however, its boundaries were materially curtailed. Smithfield, Scituate, and Gloucester, were cut off, and incorporated as independent towns. In 1754, its area was diminished still more; Cranston was incorporated. In 1759, the town of Johnston was established. And lastly our own town was cut off; and then the territory of our common mother was left in peace.

The petition for the severing of our own town from Providence was presented to the General Assembly at the February session in 1765. Action was, however, deferred to the next session in June. At that time an act was passed granting the

prayer of the petitioners, save in respect to the name. They had desired that the new town be called Wenscutt. The Assembly decreed, however, that the name should be North Providence. The grounds on which the petitioners based their request, are stated in the preamble of the act of incorporation. I quote from that document:

"Whereas, a large number of the inhabitants of the northern part of the town of Providence, preferred a petition, and represented to this Assembly, that there are within the limits of said township, upwards of four hundred freemen; that those who dwell in the most compact part, are altogether merchants and tradesmen; and that far the greater part of the petitioners dwell in the more remote part of said township, and are near all farmers, whose interest and business differ from the merchants; that town meetings have been often called and held in the compact part, upon matters and things which did not, and do not, concern the farmers in the northern and more remote parts of said town; that they, the petitioners, nevertheless, have been, and still are, obliged to leave farming business, and to attend upon said meetings, to prevent things being voted to their disadvantage, which hath occasioned much loss of time, contention, and expense, which ought to be borne by the merchants and tradesmen; all which, being very inconvenient, they prayed to be set off, erected, and made into a township," &c.

After this preamble the Assembly proceed to enact that the town of Providence be divided, and they designate the boundaries.

There appear to have been one hundred and fifteen petitioners to the original prayer, and they represent that out of the four hundred freemen of the town, about one hundred and sixty reside in the part proposed to be set off. The act of the Assembly led, however, to no little crimination and strife. The boundary line, instead of being so run as to separate the farming section of the town from the more compact portion, threw quite a strip of the latter part into the new township; and cool historians, who cannot participate in the fierce personal or political controversies of a hundred years ago, have been constrained to conclude that the ostensible reason for dividing Providence was not the sole reason. A bitter feud then existed between Governors Ward and Hopkins; and it is supposed that the main design in establishing a new town at that particular

time, and of throwing into it a part of the compactly settled portion of Providence, was to secure the election of representatives to the General Assembly favorable to Gov. Ward. You will pardon me, however, who am not "a native to the manor born," for confessing my ignorance of the special points at issue between those eminent men. Let the dead bury their dead. I only remark that two years after, when Gov. Hopkins secured the ascendancy in the colony, the southern bounds of North Providence were established as they now exist.

The act further provided that the town of North Providence should be represented by two deputies in the General Assembly. All the justices of the peace, and military officers, previously chosen or appointed for the town of Providence, who lived in the town now made North Providence, were empowered to retain as full power and authority as they had previously possessed; and John Olney, Esq., was authorized to issue a warrant, and call the freemen of the new town to meet together, "at the house of Capt. Thomas Olney, within the same, on or before the 8th day of July, in order to choose and appoint all officers necessary for managing and conducting the prudential affairs of said town, agreeably to the laws of this colony."

From this brief survey, fellow-citizens, you perceive that many interesting matters are left subjects of conjecture. It is highly probable that some part of the territory of our town was occupied shortly after the settlement of Providence. The hardy pioneer seeking a new home, avails himself of every natural advantage; and as our town is pierced by two or three streams, there is no doubt that settlers soon ascended the Pawtucket as far as the falls, and the Woonasquatucket. Indeed, some well known facts show this to have been the case with regard to the former river. Tradition represents that Joseph Jenks came to the neighborhood of Pawtucket falls about the year 1655. He was a native of England, and followed, when a young man, his father to our continent. The senior Jenks had settled in Lynn, Mass., and engaged in the business of manufacturing iron. The younger Jenks, having come to Lynn, found, as tradition represents, that the rapid increase of population was using up wood so fast, that, ere long, there would be an insufficiency for the

supply of coal. And as charcoal was the sole means of heating the forges, a failure of forest trees would be a serious drawback. As the forests were doubtless here standing in their native luxuriance, the shores of the Pawtucket invited the coming of Mr. Jenks. His first purchase of land is supposed to have been of a family named Mowry; but an authentic document has been quoted by Dr. Benedict, in the form of a deed from Abel Potter, of Moshantieut, conveying "sixty acres of land, more or less, which was formerly laid out to my wife Rachel's grandfather, Mr. Ezekiel Holliman, lying near Pawtucket falls, together with a commonage, the said threescore lot and commonage having been bequeathed to my wife Rachel Potter, formerly called Rachel Warner." This deed was dated October 10th, 1671. Over a century, therefore, before the incorporation of our town, Joseph Jenks was within its limits, engaged in some branch of iron manufacturing.

Time forbids my dealing largely, in such an address as this, with the history of any single families. It is not improper, however, to remind you, fellow-citizens, that Ezekiel Holliman was one of the twelve who constituted the first Baptist church in Rhode Island. Joseph Jenks was the father of several men who became eminent in the business and political affairs of the infant colony. The title of Assistant, answering to Lieutenant Governor now, is always added in old writings to the name of the father; and of his four sons, Joseph was governor of Rhode Island from 1727 to 1732; Nathaniel had the title of major; Ebenezer was a minister; and William a judge. Every one of these sons built frame houses, which long stood as landmarks in the village of Pawtucket, North Providence.* The old stone

* A word as to the original use of the word *Pawtucket* may remove ambiguity. The term *Pawtucket* is said to signify *falls of water*. When applied to the adjoining tract of land, it signified in the outset what has since been called the village of Pawtucket, North Providence. When the name was originally given, the territory east of the river formed a part of the town of Rehoboth, Mass. This town was subsequently divided into three townships,—Rehoboth, Seekonk, and Pawtucket. While the last-named town remained in Massachusetts, it was easy to distinguish between Pawtucket, Mass., and Pawtucket, R. I. Four or five years ago, however, on an exchange of territory's being made, Pawtucket, Mass., became the town of Pawtucket, R. I.; so that our State now has the town of Pawtucket, and a village of Pawtucket. The latter lies in the township of North Providence, and is always referred to when Pawtucket is named in earlier histories, or in this address.

chimney house on Mill street was enlarged by the addition to it of a part of the house in which the senior Joseph Jenks once resided. Old residents aver that, in their boyhood, they read on that chimney the figures 168–, the last figure being illegible. Dr. C. F. Manchester occupies the house once the mansion of Gov. Jenks. I see, however, by Gov. Arnold's history that it was deemed "highly necessary for the governor of this colony to live at Newport, the metropolis of the government;" and an appropriation was made of one hundred pounds to defray the expenses of Gov. Jenks's removal. As our town was then a part of Providence, this was doubtless intended as a gentle reminder to Providence, that, even if she had a citizen of hers chosen governor, she must recollect her inferiority to Newport.

But I pass rapidly over other matters connected with the early history of what afterwards became North Providence, till I come to speak specially of the industrial history of our town. Old chronicles inform us that in the year 1676 a Capt. Pierse, with fifty English and a like number of friendly Indians, was slain, and his whole force put to death, near Pawtucket falls, by a band of hostile Indians. This happened March 26th, and three days after, the north part of Providence was destroyed by the Indians. As the foundation walls of the houses were visible years ago near Harrington's lane, the presumption is that a part of the settlers were living in what is now our own town. Indeed, according to Dr. Benedict's reminiscences, the old forge erected by the elder Jenks was burnt by the Indians, during King Philip's war, about the year 1676.

As I shall treat, however, in the sequel of several other interesting matters connected with the history of our town while forming a part of Providence, I pass over the ninety years intervening between the last date mentioned and the time of incorporating our town, by remarking that the enterprising habits of the Jenkses drew around them and their successors many an artisan. As what is now the city of Providence became more thickly settled, the outlying portions were brought under cultivation. Trees were felled, the ground broken up, cabins and houses were reared, and the hills were covered with flocks, and the valleys with corn; so that, when the act of incorporation

was passed, North Providence contained a number of freemen two-thirds as great as those who remained in the mother town. By examining a census of the colony of Rhode Island in the year 1774,—nine years after the incorporation of our town,—I find that the whole number of families in the colony was 9,450. Of the inhabitants, there were of whites 54,460; of Indians 1,479; of blacks, 3,668; making a total of 59,607. At that period the population of North Providence consisted of 138 families. Of the population, there were of whites 792; of Indians 7; of blacks 31; making a total of 830. Of the heads of families 132 were males, 6 females. It may not be uninteresting to note here that the population of our town by the last census, taken five years ago, was 11,820 souls. In eighty-six years therefore it had increased more than fourteen fold.

And here, fellow-citizens, I may pause one moment to note the special character of the early New England towns. A good historian, in speaking of the Roman empire, remarks that there were, properly speaking, "no country places, no villages. At least, the country was nothing like what it is in the present day. It was cultivated, no doubt, but it was not peopled. The proprietors of lands dwelt in cities; they left these occasionally to visit their rural property, where they usually kept a certain number of slaves; but that which we now call the country, that scattered population, sometimes in lone houses, sometimes in hamlets and villages, was altogether unknown in ancient Italy. 'Twas with cities that Rome fought, with cities that she made compacts, and into cities that she sent colonies." In distinction from this, our New England population was largely distributed in little country villages, every one of them a miniature democracy. But unlike the towns of Greece, there was from the beginning a tendency to union. In Greece every city was autonomous. It claimed the extreme of individuality and isolation. The most threatening dangers could hardly drive the cities of that land to united effort. Among our New England towns, on the contrary, while from the first local needs were provided for, local rights, in minor things, watched over, there was a recollection of the fact that every little hamlet in every colony, was but a member of a larger body. The tendency

was, in fine, not to selfish isolation, but to nationality. And if resentment against real or fancied wrongs, committed by the stronger colonies against their feebler neighbors, had tended to repulsion, the perils to which our ancesters were exposed urged to union. Our fathers gloried in their English descent. They were not ready to be absorbed by the French colonies. Constant perils threatened from the Indians and the French. Every town felt therefore the need of sympathy and help. Every colony had at times to seek the assistance of its neighbors. By consequence, while our country villages grew up democratic in tendency, and exercising in many respects a manly self-reliance, they yet clung closely to the large towns for protection or aid.

The preamble to the act of incorporation, which I have already quoted, shows that the majority of the inhabitants of our town a century ago were tillers of the soil. But our territory is not extensive enough, nor is our soil sufficiently rich, to have sustained a large population. North Providence would hardly have quadrupled her population in eighty-six years, had she depended on agriculture alone. The explanation of the large growth of our town is found in the establishment of manufacturing within our borders. I propose now, therefore, to give a brief sketch of the early attempts in that department.

I have already mentioned the arrival of Joseph Jenks here upwards of two centuries ago. A man so energetic and enterprising as he, would not be slow to use the power which the falls of Pawtucket supply. In a case brought before the Circuit Court nearly forty years ago, Judge Story, in giving his decision, rehearsed certain facts that had been established in the trial. Speaking of the dams on the Pawtucket river, he says:

"The lower dam was built as early as the year 1718, by the proprietors on both sides of the river, and is indispensable for the use of these mills respectively. There was previously an old dam on the western side extending about three-quarters of the way across the river, and a separate dam for a saw mill on the east side. The lower dam was a substitute for both. About the year 1714, a canal was dug, or an old channel widened and cleared on the western side of the river; beginning at the river a few rods above the lower dam, and running round the west end thereof until it emptied into the river, about ten rods below the same dam. It has been long known by the name of Sergeant's Trench, and was originally cut for

the passage of fish up and down the river. But having wholly failed for this purpose, about the year 1730, an anchor mill and dam were built across it by the then proprietors of the land; and between that period and the year 1790, several other dams and mills were built over the same, and since that period more expensive mills have been built there. In 1792 another dam was built across the river at a place above the head of the trench, and almost twenty rods above the lower dam; and the mills on the upper dam, as well as those on Sergeant's Trench, are now supplied with water by proper flumes, &c., from the pond formed by the upper dam."

I forbear to quote farther from the opinion of Judge Story, fellow-citizens. Enough that I remind you that the trial just referred to showed that early in the last century, perhaps indeed during the previous century, dams had been built at the Pawtucket falls. Already the buzzing of machinery, the roar of hammers, and the stir of men, prophesied of the business that should make this region an important manufacturing center, within a century or more. But it is amusing, not to say mortifying, to see how slow hundreds are to discern the sources of their thrift. The falls at Pawtucket, and the dams that had been built, were alike voted a nuisance by scores of the dwellers by the Blackstone.* Those obstructions hindered the free migration of shad and alewives to what is now Woonsocket. Accordingly the General Assembly, in 1761, authorized a lottery to raise fifteen hundred pounds, old tenor, for the purpose of making a passage around Pawtucket falls, "so that fish of almost every kind, who choose fresh water at certain seasons of the year, may pass with ease." Of course this legislation was proper enough, bating the lottery; but twelve years later the General Assembly went a step farther, and passed an act making it lawful for any one to break down or blow up the

* The Blackstone river rises in Massachusetts, north of Worcester. It takes its name from William Blackstone, the first permanent settler of our little State. He was a clergyman of the church of England, but early left his native land on account of non-conformity. He was the first English resident of Boston, the early settlers of Charlestown finding him already occupying the peninsula. After residing there a few years, he came down to this region, and settled in what is now Cumberland, R. I. The reason of his seeking a home for the second time in the wilderness, is quaintly stated by himself: "I left England to get from under the power of the lord bishops, but in America I am fallen under the power of the lord brethren." The river from its source to the Pawtucket falls bears the name of the Blackstone. Below the falls it receives the name of the Pawtucket.

rocks at Pawtucket falls, to "let fish pass up;" and "the said river" was "declared a public river." Had the men who petitioned for such an act, but possessed power proportioned to their wishes, shad might have freely spawned at Woonsocket, but Samuel Slater had probably never turned his steps toward our town.

The enterprising family of whom I have already spoken continued to carry on the iron business in its various branches. The descendants for generations of these men trod in the footsteps of their ancestors. Muskets were manufactured for several of the militia companies of the colony as early as 1775, by Stephen Jenks* of this town. Indeed, the iron business made Pawtucket famous in a wide circuit. This was the principal workshop of Providence for anchors, screws, and other heavy articles, that needed a water power and trip-hammers, which were lacking in the mother town. Among the men who came to increase the activity of North Providence was Oziel Wilkinson. He had resided for years in Smithfield, and done a great deal of work for the merchants of Providence. Obtaining his stock largely from that town, it seemed more convenient to transfer his business to the neighborhood of Pawtucket falls; but as the British long held possession of the southern part of the State, and the capture of Providence seemed not unlikely, his custom-

* Through the kindness of Gen. Olney Arnold, the present treasurer of our town, I have been permitted to examine the early treasurers' books. I find that one of those officers occasionally makes a memorandum on his pages. I copy the following obituary:

"Died at Pawtucket, in North Providence, on Sunday, Nov. 16th, A. D. 1800, Capt. Stephen Jenks, in the 74th year of his age. He was descended from a long line of respectable ancestors, and has left a disconsolate widow, and 60 descendants to the fourth generation. He was a kind husband, an indulgent parent, and an obliging neighbour. The widow, the orphan, and others in distress, were partakers of his benevolence. He was a man of sound judgment and integrity, and had been a member of the General Assembly many years. He was a zealous patriot of 1775, and impartially presided at most of the public business of his town. During his last sickness he was exceedingly calm, and perfectly resigned to the will of God. His remains were attended to the meeting house on Tuesday, where a pertinent discourse was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Hurley, of Cambridge. After which they were decently interred."

I have also been permitted to read two or three manuscript letters of Capt. Jenks's, written in 1799, giving an extended genealogy of his family. From him comes the tradition of his ancestor's coming hither in 1655.

ers advised him not to remove, lest his shops be destroyed by some marauding party. With the coming of peace, however, all danger seemed dispelled, and Mr. Wilkinson removed to this place. Mr. W. had five sons, all blacksmiths, and father and sons with characteristic energy enlarged the business of the town. They speedily availed themselves of a part of the water power, commenced making anchors, and extended their operations to other departments. At a very early date the senior Wilkinson manufactured cut nails; and is supposed to have been the first manufacturer of those useful articles in any land.

For a period Daniel Wilkinson was foreman of his father's shop, and years afterwards he and his brother David Wilkinson begun an independent establishment. All the younger Wilkinsons, indeed, were like their father, men of energy and business capacity. One of them in a few years turned his steps to Connecticut, and won eminence and thrift there. The other four long continued to promote the prosperity of the town of their adoption. Abraham and Isaac Wilkinson formed one firm, David and Daniel another, and largely expanded the business of manufacturing iron. Here screws were made, and for years the heavy oil presses of Nantucket and New Bedford were principally supplied from the shops of the Wilkinsons. Here in 1794 was cast the iron for the draw of the Cambridge bridge; here were made the patterns, here cast the wheels for the first canal of the country. Of the younger Wilkinsons, David had rare inventive genius. His was one of those minds fertile in expedients, and teeming with contrivances to abridge toil, and give man larger control over the material world. I have read one of his letters published in the Transactions of the Rhode Island Society for the Encouragement of Domestic Industry: and could not but notice the truth of the poet's saying, "the child is father to the man." In speaking of a new screw machine which he had invented as early as 1794, he describes it as on the principle of the guage or sliding lathe, "the perfection of which," says he, "consists in that most faithful agent *gravity* making the joint, and that almighty perfect number *three*, which is harmony itself. I was young when I learnt that principle. I had never seen my grandmother putting a chip under a table

legged milking stool; but she always had to put a chip under a four-legged table to keep it steady. I cut screws of all dimensions by this machine, and did them perfectly." A great many other lads had doubtless seen their mothers or grandmothers use a three-legged stool, but how few had noticed the steadiness, or the great mechanical invention based on the firmness of the tripod! But I shall have occasion again to refer to the inventive skill of David Wilkinson.

I have slightly disregarded chronological order, but it is proper now to speak of the successful establishment of cotton manufacturing in this town. The early history of attempts to spin cotton by water power in our land may be briefly told. Our country had passed through the Revolutionary war, and emerged from it fettered by debt. Importations from foreign countries threatened to impoverish us still more, and thoughtful capitalists and skillful mechanics were trying to relieve us from the necessity of dependence on foreign looms. In Worcester and Beverly, in Massachusetts, in Providence and other places, in our State, experiments were making prior to 1790, to solve the problem whether we could spin in America the cotton needed for our own use. Moses Brown, of Providence, had purchased a spinning frame, with which others had failed to succeed, and removed it with certain other machines to this place, and attached them to a water-wheel. In vain, however. Success seemed as unlikely by the falls of the Pawtucket as elsewhere. At this juncture, near the close of the year 1789, Samuel Slater, a young English artisan, arrived in New York. He had been induced to leave his native land by seeing in the newspapers what bounties were giving, what encouragements were proffered, particularly in Pennsylvania, for machines for manufacturing cotton. He left England, however, by stealth. From the very settlement of our country, there had been a jealousy on the part of English manufacturers against every attempt of the colonists to provide for anything but their simplest wants. Statesmen were willing, nay, desirous, that the colonies should furnish the raw materials for the use of the artisan in the fatherland; for that would relieve Great Britain of dependence on foreign countries; but tolerated nothing further. Parliament was constantly

seeking to repress every branch of industry that might make the colonists rivals of their trans-atlantic fellow-subjects. The war of the Revolution severed the political dependence of the colonies on England, but British statesmen and manufacturers were alike resolved that it should not sunder the commercial dependence. For this reason harsh laws were enacted, forbidding any person, under pain of forfeiture, to carry or send from the United Kingdom models, patterns, or machinery, that would be likely to aid a young people in setting up a new branch of business. Nay, artisans themselves were liable to detention. Under these circumstances young Slater neither dares inform his family of his destination, nor take with him patterns, drawings, or memoranda, that can betray his occupation, or reveal his plans.

He arrives in New York, and engages with a manufacturing company. The water power of that neighborhood, however, does not satisfy him. The business wherein he was employed seems inferior and unpromising, compared with that to which he had been accustomed; and that God who directs man's steps, and prepares the heart, threw him into contact with the captain of a Providence packet, and he informs him of the efforts that Moses Brown is making to introduce the manufacture of cotton. With characteristic promptness the young man writes to Mr. Brown. In the business of cotton spinning, he says, "I flatter myself that I can give the greatest satisfaction, in making machinery, making good yarn, either for stockings or twist, as any that is made in England; as I have had opportunity, and an oversight, of Sir Richard Arkwright's works, and in Mr. Strut's mill for upwards of eight years."

Mr. Brown replies that he has transferred the business to Almy & Brown. He candidly informs the young man that he fears that they can hardly give him such encouragement as he could receive in his present place of business. "As the frame we have," he writes, "is the first attempt of the kind that has been made in America, it is too imperfect to afford much encouragement; we hardly know what to say to thee; but if thou thou[illegible] thou couldst perfect and conduct them to profit, if thou w[illegible] come and do it, thou shalt have all the profits made of th[illegible]

over and above the interest of the money they cost, and the wear and tear of them. We will find stock and be repaid in yarn as we may agree for six months. And this we do for the information thou can give, if fully acquainted with the business. . . . . We have secured only a temporary water convenience, but if we find the business profitable, can perpetuate one that is convenient. . . . . If thy present situation does not come up to what thou wishest, and, from thy knowledge of the business, can be ascertained of the advantages of the mills, so as to come and work ours, and have the *credit* as well as advantage of perfecting the first water-mill in America, we should be glad to engage thy care so long as they can be made profitable to both, and we can agree."

This letter, from which I have been quoting, was dated Providence, 10th 12th month, 1789. Soon after Mr. Slater comes to Providence, and late in that year, or early in 1790, is taken to the village of Pawtucket, in this town, to see the machines. He does not view them with admiration by any means. Says Mr. Brown, "When Samuel saw the old machines, he felt down-hearted with disappointment, and shook his head, and said, 'These will not do; they are good for nothing in their present condition, nor can they be made to answer.'" Fortunately, however, fellow-citizens, the spirit of both these men was too resolute to succumb to trifling difficulties. After various disappointments, it was proposed that Mr. Slater should erect the series of machines termed the Arkwright patents. He accedes to the proposition on one condition, namely, that a man should be furnished for him to work on wood, who should be put under bonds neither to steal the patterns nor disclose the nature of the works. "Under my proposals," says he, "if I do not make as good yarn as they do in England, I will have nothing for my services, but will throw the whole of what I have attempted over the bridge."

The shop in which Mr. Slater begun the manufacture of his machines stood on what was then called Quaker lane, now Pleasant street. The mechanic employed to assist him was Mr. Sylvanus Brown, father of our enterprising fellow-citizen, Capt. James S. Brown. That shop is now the salesroom of Mr.

Beers, and adjoins his baker's shop. Everything was managed with the greatest secrecy. Shutters were put on the front windows, and the back windows were shielded by blinds. The various patterns were made of wood, all the parts being first constructed of that material, to see whether they could be made to work. The motive power was furnished by a wheel, which was turned by an aged negro by the name of Prime, or fully Primus Jenks, as he had once been a slave of one of the Jenkses. There was no fear that he would pilfer their patterns, or disclose their plans. Moses Brown visited the shop every day to witness the progress making. In due time Mr. Slater built a water frame of 24 spindles, two carding machines, and the drawing and roping frames necessary to prepare for the spinning; and soon after added a frame of 48 spindles. When all the preliminary work was done, everything was found to work satisfactorily but the carder. After vainly trying to remedy that, Mr. Slater was almost in despair. The most agonizing thought with him was not, however, that he had failed, but that the men who had confided in him would think him an impostor. He even contemplated running away, but his companion dissuaded him from so rash a step. "Have you ever seen one of these carders work in your own country?" asks Mr. Sylvanus Brown, looking him steadily in the eye. "Yes," was the prompt reply. "Then it can be made to work here." As Mr. B. was waiting a few minutes for his dinner one day, he took up a pair of hand-cards that his wife had been using, and examined the shape of the teeth. He saw that they were bent somewhat differently from those in the machine, and the thought suggests itself, by altering the shape of the teeth we can surmount the difficulty. Mr. Brown promptly tried the experiment, and the machine worked.

From the patterns thus made, such castings as were needed were supplied from Mr. Wilkinson's shop, and the machines were set up in a small building then standing on what was then the southwest abutment of the bridge over the Pawtucket. That shop no longer stands, for it was swept away by the angry surges of the Blackstone, in the great freshet of 1807. Operations were begun in the fall of 1790, or the winter of 1791.

"I was then in my tenth year," says Mr. Smith Wilkinson, "and went to work with him, and began attending the breaker. The mode of laying the cotton was by hand, taking up a handful, and pulling it apart with both hands, shifting it all into the right hand, to get the staple of the cotton straight, and fix the handful, so as to hold it firm, and then applying it to the surface of the breaker, moving the hand horizontally across the card to and fro, until the cotton was fully prepared."

I hardly need remind you, however, that in preparing even this machinery Mr. Slater encountered no trifling obstacles. Skilled mechanics of the class needed for his work were entirely lacking; drawings, models, patterns, he had none; his sole reliance was on a retentive memory, a determined will, and the help of God. He was fortunate, however, in the home that he found. He went to board in the family of Oziel Wilkinson; from him and from his ingenious son he doubtless received many a profitable hint; from Mrs. Wilkinson he had genial sympathy and motherly care; and from a daughter, who afterwards became Mrs. Slater, co-operation and tender love. Only the Omniscient One knows the mighty aid which that household afforded the otherwise lonely stranger, who was striving to transplant to the shores of the Pawtucket the perfected invention of England. In the restricted quarters of that rude mill, Mr. Slater continued his operations for about twenty months, at the end of which time several thousand pounds of yarn had accumulated on the hands of himself and partners, notwithstanding every effort to sell and weave it. When indeed 500 pounds had accumulated, Moses Brown writes to Mr. S., "Thee must shut down thy gates, or thee will spin up all my farms into cotton yarn." Obstacles had meanwhile been successfully surmounted; Arkwright's machines had been reproduced; mechanics had been trained; the problem had been solved; the waters of the Pawtucket were made subservient to a new kind of manufacture; and the spinning of cotton by water was acclimated in the United States. Who has despised the day of small things? What an expansion of industry was destined to flow from that successful enterprise! Well did President Jackson say to Mr. Slater, some forty odd years afterwards, "I under-

stand you taught us how to spin, so as to rival Great Britain in her manufactures; you set all these thousands of spindles at work, which I have been delighted to view, and which have made so many happy by a lucrative employment." "Yes, sir," was the modest reply; "I suppose that I gave out the psalm, and they have been singing to the tune ever since." Happily, fellow-citizens, it is a psalm whose singing brings profit, as well as pleasure.

The experiment had succeeded in that old shop, and a new mill was erected. The building so long known by the name of Slater's mill, and which has for several years been occupied by the Pawtucket Hair Cloth Company, was built in 1793. During the same year mills were reared by Oziel Wilkinson and Thomas Arnold; the former was a slitting mill, and the latter a flouring mill. Indeed, the claim can be justly put forth that the first flouring mill in the State was erected in this town.

I have already spoken in brief of the extent to which manufacturing of iron was carried on in North Providence at this early period. In a letter written by Moses Brown, near the close of 1791, he says: "The manufacture of iron into blistered steel, equal in quality to English, has been begun within about a year in North Providence, and is carried on by Oziel Wilkinson. I thought of speaking also of pig and bar iron, slitting it into nail rods, rolling into hoops and plates, making it into spades and shovels, hot and cold nails, anchors, &c., all in this district."

Another interesting fact may be named. In speaking of the inventive genius of David Wilkinson, I mentioned that I should have occasion to speak of him again. About the year 1794 there was a man living in Providence named Elijah Ormsbee. He was born in Rehoboth, but had worked for a season near Albany. While there his observation of the difficulty of navigating the Hudson by sails alone, led him to think of steam as a propelling power. While employed at Cranston, repairing a large steam engine used for pumping water from an ore bed, he was called on by Mr. David Wilkinson, and communicated to him the idea of a steamboat. He offered to furnish the boat, provided Mr. W. would provide the engine. The proposition

was accepted; Mr. Wilkinson went home, made his patterns, cast and bored the cylinder, suggested two plans of paddles, and the boat was finished. At a retired place called Winsor's cove, about three miles and a half from Providence, Ormsbee completed his arrangements, and, on one pleasant evening, made his first trip to Providence. On the following day, he went in his steamboat to Pawtucket, to show her to his friends, and the two ingenious mechanics exhibited her between the two bridges. "After our frolic was over," says Mr. Wilkinson in writing of the matter more than half a century afterwards, "being short of funds, we hauled the boat up and gave it over." It is fair to claim that, had the Pawtucket been a longer stream, so that steam had been as important for it as for the Hudson, or had some discerning capitalist been ready to afford the pecuniary aid needful for testing and perfecting the invention, the chaplet that adorns the head of Fulton might have been woven for the brows of Wilkinson and Ormsbee. And the Pawtucket river and Narragansett bay would have had an additional claim to fame.

In 1797, Mr. David Wilkinson perfected his slide lathe, and on the following year obtained a patent for it. As, however, the machine business was then in its infancy, but little profit flowed to the ingenious inventor. Before the time arrived for its extensive use, the original patent ran out, and Mr. W. being occupied with other business, and planning other contrivances, neglected to secure a renewal. Fifty years after the original patent was granted, Congress voted him ten thousand dollars as a partial remuneration "for the benefits accruing to the public service from the use of the principle of the guage and sliding lathe, of which he was the inventor, now in use in the workshops of the government at the different national arsenals and armories." The Senate Committee on Military Affairs, who recommended the above-named appropriation, was composed of Messrs. Rusk of Texas, Cass of Michigan, Davis of Mississippi, Dix of New York, and Benton of Missouri.

This enterprising man was not only occupied with his own private business, but was interested with others in more extensive operations. At a furnace in this town, owned by him in

connection with other parties, cannon were cast solid and bored out by water power, early in the century. "It was then the current conversation, that to Pawtucket belonged the credit of the first cannon cast solid in the world. They were bored by making the drill or borer stationary, and having the cannon revolve against the drill." A paragraph from a familiar letter of Mr. Wilkinson's, written years afterwards, gives a succinct statement of the business activity of North Providence between the years 1800 and 1829:

"We built machinery to go to almost every part of the country;—to Pomfret and Killingly, Conn.; to Hartford, Vt.; to Waltham, Norton, Raynham, Plymouth, Halifax, Plympton, Middleboro', and other places in Massachusetts; for Wall & Wells, Trenton, N. J.; for Union & Gray, on the Patapsco; for the Warren factories, on the Gunpowder, near Baltimore; to Tarboro' and Martinburgh, N. C.; to two factories in Georgia; to Louisiana; to Pittsburg; to Delaware; to Virginia, and other places. Indeed, Pawtucket was doing something for almost every part of the country."

In 1799 the second cotton mill was begun. This was reared by Mr. Oziel Wilkinson and his three sons-in-law, Samuel Slater, Timothy Greene and William Wilkinson, and was built on the Massachusetts side of the river. I have named Mr. Greene as a son-in-law of Oziel Wilkinson. He had been previously engaged in the manufacture of leather. His tannery occupied the site of what are now called Greene's mills. Indeed, his original business was the manufacture of shoes, and even after he gave his attention to tanning, he employed several men in the former business. As illustrating the extent of his operations in tanning, the incidental statement of one of his workmen may be quoted: "We ground 200 cords of bark per year, while I worked for Mr. Greene. We tanned 1000 hides a year for him, and fulled 1500 for others." Mr. Greene's activity contributed to the prosperity of our town, and his descendants have continued to do their share of the business of this place.

About this time another kind of business was begun. There was an ingenious clock-maker residing here by the name of J. Field. He commenced the casting of brass in the anchor shop of Mr. Oziel Wilkinson.

Another important branch of business claims at least a passing notice. It was that of ship-building. This was carried on extensively on both sides of the Pawtucket river. In the Sergeant's trench case, George Robinson, who plied his business in North Providence, testified that between the years 1794 and 1805, he built seventeen vessels of from 80 to 280 tons burden. He employed from ten to twenty ship carpenters. In the same case, Thomas Arnold testified that he was concerned in building seven or eight vessels. Other parties were also employed in this business, and all of them had the iron-work done in the shop of the Wilkinsons, and obtained their anchors from the various anchor shops in this town.

The above facts I obtain from an interesting abstract of the testimony in the case just spoken of, which is now in the possession of Samuel Greene, of Woonsocket, who was himself an enterprising artisan in this place years ago. And in glancing hastily over that volume, I find evidence of the existence of other kinds of industry. One witness speaks at one time of having worked in a chocolate mill. He was also employed in 1797 and 1798 in the lower anchor shop. While there he was engaged in welding gun-barrels and making scythes. In those two years he welded 1400 gun-barrels, and assisted in making forty dozen scythes. These may seem like trifling details, but before machinery was perfected as has since been done, they bespeak activity and enterprise here. In the beginning of the present century, also, two manufactories of snuff were in operation.

For years manufacturing was mainly confined to the village of Pawtucket in our town. Near the close of the Revolutionary war, indeed, a lime-kiln was in operation near the present residence of Lemuel Angell, Esq.; but after a while the quarry whence the limestone was obtained was exhausted, and the business was given up. The employment of the residue of the inhabitants was mainly agricultural. Indeed, there is reason to believe that more farming was done in our town about the commencement of the present century than now. Every farmer sixty years ago raised his own rye and corn, and provided the entire food of his household from his own soil. Tobacco was also

reared to some extent. Tracts are now covered with forests, which half a century ago were meadows.

The time came, however, when other parts of the town were to engage in manufacturing. In 1807, Judge Lyman and others bought a privilege on the Woonasquatucket river, and erected a mill. In later years, along the western part of the town, the Greystone mill, the Allendale, Centerdale, Manton, Dyerville, and the Atlantic De Laine mills have been constructed. And it may be interesting to note the increase of wealth in our town from the introduction of new forms of industry. In 1815, Lemuel Angell, Esq., was collector of taxes. At that time from what is now Olneyville to Manton there were but five estates taxed, and the whole amount assessed was fifteen dollars. During the past year the tax of the Atlantic De Laine works alone was nearly four thousand dollars. As indicating the same fact, another incident may be mentioned. About the year 1810, Oziel Wilkinson and his son Abraham were estimating the expenses of the town for the ensuing year. As they were both influential politicians, they were making arrangements in advance for the annual town meeting. With a piece of chalk they marked on the counter of their store the sums supposed to be needed for the various departments, to wit, for highway tax, support of poor, &c. As common schools were not then established by law, there was no sum specified for them. As they added up the column they found the amount to be about $800. And the elder Wilkinson energetically exclaimed, "It will not answer, Abraham; we must cut some of these figures down. The town of North Providence will not stand such a tax as that." Times have changed, fellow-citizens. This year a tax is assessed of seventy thousand dollars; and the only question debated was, Shall we raise this sum, or a larger one?

For years the mode of weaving cloth was by hand looms. The cotton was first sent out from the various shops and mills to be picked. This involved much waste, delay, and expense. Four cents per pound was paid for picking, and the owners complained that what was stolen by the various families to whom the cotton was entrusted, doubled this sum. In addition

to this, after the yarn was spun, it must be sent out to be woven into the various kinds of cloth. From six to twelve cents per yard was the current price. Of course the proprietors of mills were anxious to be rid of such inconvenience. In a few years a picker was devised; and about the year 1814 weaving by power-looms was commenced. The first loom used in this town was J. Thorpe's, which was, if I am rightly informed, an upright loom. In 1816, however, the Scotch loom was introduced into Lyman's mill. It was brought to the notice of Judge Lyman by Mr. William Gilmore. The loom was made under the inspection of Mr. G. himself, and at first failed to work. Judge Lyman, of course, thinks of David Wilkinson when any difficulty arises, and Mr. W. goes over to see the machine. He quickly discovers the trouble, suggests a means of removing it, and in due time the loom does its work. Manufacturers in other parts of the country soon hear that a loom is working successfully in North Providence, and flock from every quarter to see the wonder. All gladly purchase from Mr. G. the right to use his pattern; and to the present time, the same loom, with trifling change, is used in all the cotton mills in our land.

I have not time, fellow-citizens, to specify the period when other mills were erected in our town. My object has been mainly to mention the earliest essays in manufacturing here. Where a branch of business, largely carried on elsewhere in our country, has been established here, there seems little to challenge attention. But before I dismiss this part of my subject, I may properly enumerate some of the important inventions that have been made during the present century in our town. I ought to have mentioned that Mr. Gilmore introduced a dresser from a Scotch invention. In 1822, Mr. Asa Arnold invented the Differential Speeder. In 1823, Pitcher & Gale invented a geared cone speeder. In 1824, Pitcher & Gale having dissolved, our ingenious fellow-citizen Mr. James S. Brown became associated with the former in business, their shop being on the eastern side of the Pawtucket. In 1838, Mr. Brown invented a machine for boring passage for rover and speeder flyers. In 1842, Mr. Brown dissolved partnership with Mr.

Pitcher, and in 1849 commenced the erection of the spacious building which he now occupies in our town. In 1852, he took out a patent for turning irregular forms; in 1857, a patent for improvement in speeder. In 1863, he obtained a patent for grinding files, and another, for improvement in furnace for hardening files.

I am aware that I am here treading on delicate ground. My education and mode of life have not given me knowledge of mechanical inventions. I know that I am not presenting an exhaustive account of the important inventions which have given Pawtucket fame. A lawyer of large experience in patent cases lately remarked that it is truly surprising, in investigating the history of valuable inventions, to see how many of them you can trace back to Pawtucket. I stop my account, therefore, here, by remarking that important improvements in the manufacture of hair cloth have been made in this town, and that during the present year E. O. Potter has obtained a patent for an improvement in the mode of cutting files.

But though I have closed my account of inventions, I am not precluded from remarking that for years calico printing has been extensively carried on near the Woonasquatucket river. The establishment owned by Richmond & Co. has proved a center around which other branches of manufacturing have largely clustered. And still another kind of business deserves a passing notice, from the largeness of its increase. In 1834, Lewis Fairbrother, Esq., came here to establish himself. He begun the manufacture of picker-string and lace leather. At that time there was but one other manufactory of a like character in the country, and that was conducted on a very small scale. So light was the demand for the commodity, that the proprietor of the other establishment begun with tubs alone in preparing his leather. Mr. F. was more enterprising and far-sighted. He had the hardihood to begin with a vat or two. Those who see from day to day the activity of Mr. F.'s successors in business, and of their rivals in this neighborhood, need no other assurance of Mr. Fairbrother's forecast. In 1850, Messrs. Corliss & Nightingale moved from Providence to our own town. Their establishment, too, has proved a nucleus-

around which other and different kinds of manufacturing have gathered. The proximity of that neighborhood to the busy part of Providence invites capital from the city. Indeed, a stranger, ignorant of the boundary lines, knows not where the city ends, and the town begins.

I have thus completed, fellow-citizens, what I designed to say of the industrial history of our town. I cannot close this branch of my subject, however, without a word as to our indebtedness to the men whose energy and industry brought such activity and thrift to our region. We have borrowed from the Greek language the word *aristocrat*. Too often the term is employed to describe a mushroom class, who are subsisting on the wealth which their ancestors won, and, by their conceit and disdain, are trying to fasten a reproach on the class from whom their ancestors sprung. Inherited riches are their sole passport to eminence. Among the Greeks it is said that the class who styled themselves the *aristoi*, that is, *the best*, were generally least entitled to that term. They were lawless, reckless, tyrannical, and frequently disturbed the peace of their communities by their insufferably disorderly conduct. It is our boast as a people, that we have no order of nobility. As some one said of Cincinnati, "the democracy there consists of those who now kill hogs for a living; the aristocracy, of those whose fathers killed hogs." Our true aristocracy are those who, springing from the laboring class, by sheer force of character and untiring toil, work their way to eminence and thrift, and who never forget the people from whom they spring. And if to this capacity and energy, they but add high-toned principle, and seek but to make the community nobler, as well as richer, they have a higher patent of nobility than any monarch can bestow. Jefferson is reported to have said that that man is a public benefactor who makes two blades of grass grow where but one grew before. And has not the artisan who acclimates a useful branch of industry, the inventor who perfects a new machine, and thus introduces a new branch of employment, or provides comforts that render life easier, or home more dear, an equal claim to be regarded as a benefactor? As local benefactors our Jenkses, our Browns, our Slaters, our Wilkinsons, our Greenes, of past

generations, (it were invidious to speak of the living,) may challenge the love of their successors. How much did they do to give permanence to society! How many did they help cling around the old homestead! How much thrift and content were they instrumental in fostering! Our town owes them a debt of gratitude. We share, fellow-citizens, in the benefits they conferred. Other men labored, and we have entered into their labor. Inscribe their names high on the roll of honor, and let their memory be ever green. But let us not forget that there are business successors of these men, whose energy, and enterprise, and faith, have established new branches of industry in this place. Too often men fail of justice from their contemporaries. Envy blinds multitudes to their real merits. Let us be prompt to recognize worth and energy and skill. If a Corliss introduce among us the manufacture of steam engines; a Jeffers, that of the fire engine; a Dexter cling worthily to his knitting cotton, wherein he has won a national fame; if a Brown wield his influence to introduce among us file manufacturing; if he make inventions, and transplant branches of industry that swell our population, and increase our wealth, let us rejoice in whatever prosperity they win. In their success we are all interested. No farmer that brings a dozen eggs to market; no landlord that has even a cottage to let; no laborer seeking employment; but that is benefited by the thrift of our citizens. We constitute one body, and if one member be benefited, all the other members should rejoice. Let envy be forever hushed, and detraction be dumb!

Fire Department.

So long as our town remained a part of Providence, it of course depended on the fire department of that town to extinguish any serious conflagration. And even after North Providence was incorporated, many years elapsed before any steps were taken for organizing a fire company here. The General Assembly granted in February, 1801, a charter for a fire district in the village of Pawtucket. A single company was authorized, to have not exceeding fourteen members. The company was not organized, however, till 1803. The first cap-

was David Wilkinson, and that skillful mechanic built the first fire engine. It lacked suction hose, and was filled by hand. From that time to the present, as necessity has required, additions have been made to our effective force. At the present time the Pawtucket fire district has three fire engines, and one hook and ladder company. This force, in conjunction with the fire companies of the town of Pawtucket, and the village of Central Falls, constitutes a very efficient body in protecting us from the devouring element. Our citizens rely confidently on their promptitude, courage, and skill, and have never found their confidence misplaced.

Banks.

The first incorporated moneyed institution established in this town was the Manufacturers Bank, which was chartered in 1814, and remained here till after the disastrous business revulsion in 1829. Having sustained heavy losses, it was removed to Providence. The next bank was styled the Farmers and Mechanics Bank, and obtained its charter in 1822 or 1823. The same cause that crippled the Manufacturers Bank carried down this institution also. A new company was organized, however, upon its forfeited charter, and now does business, in Providence, under the name of the Phenix Bank. Of the banks now existing in this town, the oldest is the New England Pacific, which, originally chartered in 1818, and established in Smithfield, was, after certain reverses, transferred to the village of Pawtucket, North Providence. The North Providence Bank was chartered in 1834. The Peoples Bank was incorporated in 1846. The Slater Bank in 1855. During the current year a new bank has been organized under the United States Banking Laws, called the First National Bank of Pawtucket. The Peoples Bank having decided to close its business, most of the capital is absorbed by the National Bank. The Slater Bank has also become a national institution.

Of Savings Institutions there are two located in this town. The eldest, though incorporated under the style of The Pawtucket Institution for Savings in 1828, was not organized till 1836. Its present number of depositors is 2500; amount

deposited, $777,000. The Providence County Savings Bank was organized in 1853. Its present number of depositors is 2060; amount deposited, $644.576.

Newspapers.

But few towns in New England possessing a population of thousands, can be found, but that boast of having had a newspaper. For years, however, from various causes the country newspapers have been dwindling in number. The larger city journals are so easily supplied, through the multiplication of railroads, to the citizens of our various villages, and the expenses of publication have so largely increased, that merely local journals have been allowed to die. It argues therefore not a little merit in an editor, not a little tact and enterprise in a publisher, when a country journal has been successfully maintained in the immediate vicinity of a city so large as Providence. The Pawtucket Gazette and Chronicle has existed upwards of twenty-eight years. The Chronicle was first published in 1825, by John C. Harwood, and was edited by William H. Sturtevant. After Mr. H. had published it for about two years, he sold it to Randall Meacham. In a short time Mr. M. engaged Samuel M. Fowler as editor, and the two subsequently were associated. Mr. M. afterwards withdrew, and Mr. F. remained proprietor till his death in 1832. On his decease the paper passed into the hands of H. & J. E. Rousmaniere, and remained in their possession till 1839. At that time, Robert Sherman, Esq., who had established the Pawtucket Gazette in 1838, purchased the Chronicle, and united the two papers. The united journal enjoys a large local circulation, and can claim the merit of being managed with ability, courtesy, and dignity. And it has a merit which too many country papers lack; it is a good local paper.

Bridges over the Pawtucket.

It was many years after the settlement of our town before any bridge was erected over the Pawtucket. The water now flowing in the Blackstone is more regular in quantity than it was years ago. The building of dams on the Blackstone, and the

forming of numerous reservoirs, make the volume of water much larger in summer than formerly. For weeks in the warmer season of the year it used to be easy to cross the Pawtucket a few rods below the falls, by fording. In 1713, however, a bridge was erected at the joint expense of Massachusetts and Rhode Island. In about sixteen years the bridge became so weak that the General Assembly voted to rebuild it, provided Massachusetts would bear half the expense. On that colony's delaying, our General Assembly passed a resolve, advising that the bridge be "demolished, that it may not remain as a trap to endanger men's lives." Massachusetts appointed a committee to assist in this work, and in 1730 the bridge was taken down. A year or two afterwards the bridge was rebuilt; and in 1741 was again rebuilt. In 1746 a new boundary line was run by authority of our General Assembly, and, from that time to the present, Massachusetts refused to pay anything for maintaining a bridge over the Pawtucket.

Originally the bridge stood a little south of the place which the present bridge occupies; but the advantages of its present site became so manifest that it was chosen. On the 15th day of February, 1807, about two-thirds of the west end of the bridge was swept away by what was well styled the *great freshet;* but the bridge was promptly rebuilt. In 1817 it was again reconstructed, chiefly at the expense of our town. In 1832 it was rebuilt once more, at the expense in part of the town, in part of private subscribers. In 1839 the bridge needed repairs, and the question was now earnestly put among our citizens, Whose duty is it to maintain this bridge? Investigation showed that the obligation rested on the State. In 1843 the old bridge was removed, and a new one built. In 1857 this bridge was found badly needing repair, and the question arose, Is it worth while for us to be annoyed every few years with the work and discomfort of building a new bridge? This question was answered negatively, and measures were at once taken for rearing a stone bridge. Preparations were made during the fall and winter of that year; stones were quarried and shaped; and on the 6th of July of the following year travel was suspended on the old bridge, and its destruction com-

menced. In four months the work was completed, and on the 4th of November, 1858, the present structure was opened for travel. It is at once an ornament and a credit to our town, and, unless shaken by an earthquake, or blown up by malice, will stand long after the youngest child who witnessed its dedication has passed away.

Education.

Rhode Island was long behind the other New England States in providing for the education of her youth. Providence, indeed, early sought to establish free schools, but the liberality of her wealthier citizens was overruled by the short-sightedness of poorer, but more sordid men. For nearly two centuries whatever education was furnished to the young, was supplied by private schools. In the village of Pawtucket a company was organized near the close of the last century, to build a school-house. In due time the edifice long known as the *Red School-house* was reared near the site of our town hall. For years this was the only building that could be used for any secular public gathering. It was long used by the First Baptist Society as a kind of vestry. Here the day school was taught; here the Sunday School long held. At a time when the population of what is now the town of Pawtucket was quite small, as that territory was then in Massachusetts, and the laws of that State required the free education of the young, the people of that district made a contract with the teacher on the Rhode Island side of the Pawtucket, to teach their children; and they were also sent to the Red School-house. Subsequently a school was established by a Mr. Bailey, who taught his pupils in the basement of his house, not far from the school-house now owned by the first district in this town.

The time came, however, when the citizens of our State perceived that sound policy, no less than duty, required that as many of our youth as possible should receive education. In 1828, common schools were established by law. Our town was not slow to provide them; and from that time to the present the youth of both sexes have been permitted to enjoy advantages which only the children of the wealthy had enjoyed before.

At the present time there are ten school districts in our town. Over two thousand scholars have attended our public schools during the past year. Eleven thousand dollars have been paid for teachers' salaries, in addition to the various sums paid for fuel and other expenses by the different districts. Large sums have also been paid for private schools, and a proper high school seems now a necessity in a town so rich and populous as ours. If not every citizen can feel that he owns a portion of our soil, let every one at least feel that his children have a right in our schools.

And may I not say, fellow-citizens, that still another agent is needed. It has well been said that the youth, when he leaves the school or the college, instead of having finished his education, has but just begun it. Apart from that instruction which the world can give him, however, he still needs the help of books. Talents and aptitude are not confined to the wealthy, and many a youth would gladly increase his knowledge, had he suitable books to read. Some of the cities and larger towns in our country have public libraries, which are an honor to them. As yet, North Providence has nothing of the kind. It were perhaps too much to hope that some son of our town, resident elsewhere, will imitate the liberality of a Peabody to his native town; but we have rich men in abundance here, who can provide such a library. Will not some of them soon give their townsmen reason to thank them?

The patriotic history of our town.

Since the organization of our town there have been calls more than once for the more obtrusive virtues of patriotism and manly courage. North Providence was incorporated in a brief breathing-place between two exhausting wars. The French and Indian war had but just closed, and the lurid folds of the storm that was soon to break over our devoted land, and to rage for eight weary years, were descried on the horizon. Of those whose homes were in this town, and who did bold service during the Revolutionary war, the name of Commodore Hopkins stands eminent. Though born in another town, he made for years this place his abode, and his ashes are mouldering within

our borders. It were superfluous to praise him. His valor is a part of the heroic heritage of his native State. His name and Perry's, who alike, in different wars, upheld the honor of our country on the sea, have given our little commonwealth cause to glory in her naval warriors. For between two and three years Hopkins was commander-in-chief of the navy, but the bitter sectional feeling in Congress, which operated so much on many an occasion to the disparagement of New England men, finally succeeded in ousting him from his honorable position. But by this act our country suffered most. Another eminent patriot of the Revolution was Capt. Stephen Olney, a native and resident of North Providence. During the entire contest he remained in the service, and signalized his valor on many a well-fought field. His heroism was specially manifest at Yorktown. Two redoubts were occupied by the British which checked the advance of our army, and Washington decided that they must be carried. To gratify and provoke national emulation, the task of capturing one was assigned to the French, that of the other to the Americans. Lafayette and Col. Hamilton commanded the American force. In selecting an officer to head the storming column, Lafayette made choice of Capt. Olney. The company which the latter commanded is said to have been mainly composed of North Providence men. Capt. O. well knew the peril of the undertaking. He calls his company together, and frankly states to them the dangerous work to which he had been assigned. "Most of us will probably fall, and I want nobody to go, but such as are willing to risk their lives. I order no one; let those that are ready to volunteer step three paces in front." Instantly every man stepped forward.

The American forlorn hope was led by Col. Gimatt, a French officer. The entire column marched in perfect silence, and with unloaded guns, resolved to carry the works at the point of the bayonet. At the distance of two hundred yards from the redoubt the column halted, to make the final arrangements for the assault. One man from every company of the force was detailed for the forlorn hope. Six or eight pioneers lead the way, as many [illegible] the forlorn hope come next; then Col. Gimatt, half a dozen volunteers; and then the main column led by [illegible]

Olney himself. The dread silence was broken by a heavy discharge of the musketry, as our force reached the abatis. While the pioneers were attempting to cut this away, some of the main force climbed through it and entered the ditch. Foremost among these is Capt. Olney. As soon as a few of his men are collected, he forces his way between the palisades, and with a voice that rises above even the roar of the conflict, cries out, "Capt. Olney's company—form here!" The audacious order meets a stern response. A gun-shot wound in the arm, a bayonet thrust in the thigh, and another in the abdomen, admonish our brave townsman that war is no holiday-affair. With one hand he presses in his intestines, while with the other he parries the bayonets of his foes. He is obliged to be carried from the field, but not until most of the regiment have entered the redoubt, and he has given the command to "Form in order." In ten minutes from the first fire of the British, the redoubt was in our possession.

Lafayette praised the gallantry of Olney in general orders, and still more warmly acknowledged it in private correspondence. In 1824, when the chivalric Frenchman was making his tour through our land, he visited Providence. Among those who gathered to greet our nation's benefactor, was Capt. Olney. Standing on the steps of the State House, he waited the approach of his old commander. As they met, though years had weakened the vigor of both, they disregarded cold, tame conventionalities, and, like fond brothers, clasped each other in a warm embrace. Capt. O. was for twenty-five years president of the town council, and for fifteen years represented North Providence in the General Assembly.

The reputation of those earlier days has been well maintained in later times. When treason reared its unhallowed hand, and struck at the life of our common government, Rhode Island was not wholly unprepared for the struggle that ensued. Many others of the northern States, which have since rendered good service, were destitute of any organized militia; and, when Baltimore was in possession of a treacherous mob, and Washington was severed from the loyal north, our little State heard the cry for help. Our patriotic governor had been in intimate corres-

pondence with Gen. Scott; and, when the exigency came, the soldiers of Rhode Island followed close on the heels of those of Massachusetts. On the eve of the Revolution, among other companies, the North Providence Rangers was chartered. Two or three years before the late rebellion commenced, the Pawtucket Light Guard was organized. And when volunteers were called for, four years ago, to open the road to our national capital, one company, largely composed of our own citizens, went from North Providence and Pawtucket. When, too, Burnside first showed on the field of battle those qualities which have since won for him a national reputation, in those Rhode Island regiments which followed his lead, a Slocum and a Tower from our own town sealed their devotion to country with their blood. And from the day when that first battle of Bull Run was fought, how many a son of our town, in fortress and in camp, on the lone picket and in the dread fray, has watched and prayed and fought, till victory has come, and we can rejoice together in a saved, a free, a regenerated country!

Moral history.

But another branch of history claims attention. Inventive genius and mechanical skill give man control over the material world, but not over his own passions. Education may sharpen the intellect, but leave man a shrewd savage. Heroism on the battle-field is not incompatible with the character of a barbarian. The pen of inspiration has written that "righteousness exalteth a nation." Integrity, high moral principle, religion, are our safeguard, and constitute the mightiest conservative power in a community. A few words, therefore, about our religious societies, and other moral agencies, seem in order.

I preface this account with a reference to one of our present honored citizens. Near the close of the last century a lad came to this place from a farming town in Massachusetts. Though born in that State, there seemed a kind of poetic justice in his coming to spend the larger part of a useful life in this commonwealth. In the deed from which I quoted, conveying to Joseph Jenks the land once owned by Ezekiel Holliman, it is mentioned that it bordered on land owned by a Mr. Dexter. Dr. Benedict

suggests that this was Gregory Dexter, an eminent clergyman in the Baptist denomination, and fourth pastor of the First Baptist Church in Providence. This lad was a descendant in the sixth generation from Gregory Dexter, and bore the name of Nathaniel Gregory B. Dexter. The free and easy condition of matters here in respect to religion jarred rudely with the native sentiment of reverence that he had for the Sabbath. He was soon employed by Mr. Slater in his mill. At that time no regular meetings were held. A small Baptist meeting-house was standing, which could be used by any other denomination, when the Baptists were not using it, but was not always used. Sunday was observed by some as a holiday, though the sound of the trip-hammers and forges could be heard, and young men and old were seen playing ball, and occupied in other sports. "Mr. Slater," said the wondering lad, "you don't have any Sabbath here in Rhode Island. I don't know what to do." Mr. S. doubtless felt the truth of the boy's words; and when, a while after, he found seven of the lads engaged in his employ debating whether they should go on that Sabbath day to Smithfield, to rob a farmer's orchard, he rightly decided to try and shield them from temptation. "Boys," said he, "go into my house, and I will give you as many apples as you want, and I will keep a Sunday School." That school, commenced in 1799, was composed of seven scholars; its library consisted of three Webster's spelling-books; the branches taught were reading, writing, and arithmetic. A year or two ago, Capt. Dexter met the present honored governor of Massachusetts in Boston, and the governor was reading the inscription on the patriarch's gold-headed cane, which stated that he was a scholar in the first Sunday School in America. "Ah!" said Gov. Andrew, "I would rather have that distinction, than to be governor of Massachusetts." Our honored townsman, a link connecting us with past generations, with eye scarce dimmed, and natural force but slightly abated, while he entertains an honest pride that he has for half a century or more prosecuted a business, whose fabric has won a national reputation, glories still more in his connection with the Sabbath School. And whatever men may think, in the estimate of angels, that act of Mr. Slater's, in

assuming for a season, in addition to the cares of a harassing business, the personal charge of educating those youth cast under his care, is his noblest crown.

It is not unlikely that a Sabbath School was kept prior to this for a few weeks, in this place, but we know nothing of its history, and it could have been maintained for but a short time.* Our first circumstantial knowledge comes through Capt. Dexter. After attending that school for a time, he was himself employed by Mr. Slater and partners, to teach on the Sabbath the youth employed in the mills. And that Sunday School, though designed to furnish simply secular instruction, was the germ in New England of the mighty agency which all sects are now using to impart religious knowledge to the young.

But I pass to the history of religious societies.

The first society organized here was a Baptist one. It was incorporated, as a kind of village organization, about the year 1793. A small house was erected on the lot now held by that society. The ecclesiastical body or church proper was fully organized in 1805. Dr. Benedict, then a student in Brown University, begun his labors here in 1804; and, after finishing his introductory studies, was ordained and settled here. After several years of service, Dr. B. withdrew from pastoral labor. Other clergymen, however, successively filled the post, and the church has ever wielded a potent influence in the town. The present pastor is Rev. C. E. Smith.

The society now known as the Second Baptist Church in North Providence, seems, in its germ at least, to have been the next religious organization in this town. Near the close of the last century, and at the beginning of the present century, Elder Angell preached in a meeting-house near Wenscott reservoir. After a while, however, interest waned, piety languished, and the house of God was forsaken. The windows were broken out, swallows built under the eaves, and around the roof, and the building was a reproach to its owners. At length Elder

* I base this statement on a memorandum found in the account books of Almy & Brown, or Almy, Brown & Slater. Under date of November 5th, 1797, the following charge occurs: *Cash paid Benjamin Allen, for teaching a school first days*, £2. 14s. The next date for the same object is October 25th, 1800.

Tift begun meetings. An aged friend informs me that he had been to meeting there, when the house was used as a carpenter's shop. The artisan's bench was converted into a kind of pulpit; the minister and deacons stood behind it, and the latter lined off the hymns; the congregation were seated—males, on one side, and females, on the other—on rude seats, made of slabs, supported by four slender legs. After a few years of this kind of worship under difficulties, the meeting-house was taken down, and removed to Fruit Hill. This was done in 1816 or 1817. A new church was then organized, made up of such of the members of the old church as were not physically or spiritually dead; residents of Fruit Hill; and certain brethren from Providence. Its present organization dates from the year 1818.

The next society organized was the St. Paul's Church. Episcopalian services were commenced in North Providence in 1814. The organization, however, dates from December 22d, 1815. Rev. Mr. Blake was the first rector; and the corner stone of the meeting-house was laid on June 24th, 1816. In the fall of 1824, Rev. George Taft came to this town to preach, and has remained till the present day. This long union in days of fickleness is honorable to both pastor and people. The present junior pastor is Rev. J. D'W. Perry.

The first attempts to propagate Methodism in this town were made by circuit preachers prior to 1813. Of course the earlier efforts were without regularity. The first class was formed at some time between 1813 and 1816. This became the nucleus of a church. The first meeting-house was reared in 1829–30. Israel Washburn was the first pastor. The present house of worship was erected in 1841, during the pastorate of Rev. R. M. Hatfield. This edifice was enlarged and refitted in 1857, while Rev. S. F. Upham was pastor. The present pastor is Rev. D. H. Ela.

In 1827 the first Universalist Society was incorporated by name of the First Universalist Society in North Providence. A meeting-house was reared and dedicated, but after being occupied for a few years, passed from the hands of the society. Severe commercial revulsions caused the removal from the town of several of the members; and the meeting-house was finally

bought by the Baptists, and is now called the High Street Baptist Meeting-house. In 1841 another Universalist Society was incorporated under the name of *The Mill Street Universalist Society.* This society is still in existence. The present pastor is Rev. Massena Goodrich.

The Pawtucket Congregational Church was established in what was then Pawtucket, Mass. As, however, a large share of its members reside in North Providence, and as from the length of time for which their present pastor has watched over his flock, both he and his church have wielded a potent moral influence in this community, it seems not improper to chronicle a fact or two as to its organization. In April, 1829, nine members of the church in Attleborough were dismissed to form a church in Pawtucket. A commodious meeting-house had been previously erected, and was in due time dedicated. Two pastors preceded the present one; but in July, 1836, Rev. C. Blodgett was installed, and has emulated the example of Dr. Taft by cleaving to the people of his charge. So long a union is mutually creditable to pastor and people. During the past year, the house in which that church worshiped was destroyed by fire; but I doubt not a still more commodious and attractive one will be reared on the old site.

The land for the Roman Catholic Church was given by David Wilkinson, Esq. In 1829 the church was built, under the supervision of Rev. Mr. Woodly. For a number of years the church was supplied by non-resident clergymen. Father Fenly was the first regular pastor who lived in Pawtucket. Since him three others have had the pastoral charge of St. Mary's Church. The present pastor is Rev. P. G. Delany.

The Allendale Chapel was built by Zachariah Allen in the spring of 1847. Immediately after being dedicated, meetings begun to be held regularly on the Sabbath, though for a couple of years there was no settled pastor. Rev. Christopher Rhodes commenced his labors in May, 1849. A church was organized in April, 1850, under the name of the Allendale Baptist Church.

The Church of the Immaculate Conception was organized in 1858. Their meeting-house was dedicated on July 5th of same year. The present pastor is Rev. E. J. Cooney.

To correct any misapprehension, I may be allowed to add a word here. I give no account of the formation of any religious society within the limits of our town for more than a century and a quarter after its first settlement. Do I then suppose that all its inhabitants were living in skeptical disregard of Christianity? By no means. Churches were organized at an early day in Providence, and doubtless many of the inhabitants of what is now North Providence were members of them. Many of the residents of Pawtucket, too, were Friends, and they went to Smithfield to meeting. Social meetings also were doubtless often held in different neighborhoods. Still, all experience shows that only very devout natures will regularly visit meetings held miles away.

I am aware that some may deem this detail of the history of our religious societies superfluous. I shall be pardoned, I trust, if I dissent from such a judgment. The wealth of a community depends not alone on its riches. These two terms have come, in modern usage, to be regarded as synonymous. In an elder and better usage, the term *wealth* meant the sum total of what contributed to the weal of a people. Not silver and gold, houses and lands, alone, make a community prosperous and happy, but virtue, intelligence, and sympathy must abound, and order and justice be maintained. For these last matters, however, fellow-citizens, we cannot depend on legislation alone. The spirit of our people brooks but few restraints, and specially spurns the fostering of religion by governmental aid. And yet a civilization destitute of Christianity is but gilded barbarism. Ordinary legislation deals only with the overt act. It punishes theft, when committed; while that higher law, which it is the business of the Christian ministry to announce, and of the church to uphold, utters its more emphatic mandate,—*Thou shalt not steal; Thou shalt not even covet.* It deals with the temptation in its very birth. And then those thousand amenities, which sweeten social intercourse, and bind men together with hooks firmer than steel,—how genially are these fostered by Christianity! Indeed, the mightiest problems with which the soul ever grapples, are themes for the pulpit and the church, rather than for the halls of legislation. And many a statesman has

been ready to acknowledge the indebtedness of his country for the highest elements of grandeur to those influences which go forth from the Bible and the sanctuary. Said John Adams, substantially, "I doubt whether we could have passed successfully through the Revolution, had it not been for the moral aid afforded by the clergy." And in the four anxious years through which our nation has been passing, the heroism and stern faith of the loyal north have been largely upheld by the appeals of our preachers, and the prayers of our churches. What though the Christian minister is compelled to say,—*Silver and gold have I none?* Like his great predecessors, he can also add,—*Such as I have, I give thee.* And I trust it will not be deemed indelicate for me to say, that it were hard to find three men in this region who have done more to increase the real wealth of this community than Drs. Benedict, Taft, and Blodgett. Their long residence here, strengthening annually their moral power, has proved an unspeakable benefit to the community. And Goldsmith's lines seem singularly applicable to such as they. To their people,

> "——their heart, their love, their griefs are given,
> But all their serious thoughts have rest in heaven."

But it is time, fellow-citizens, that I close. To-day our town begins a second century. It is not improper to ask as to its future. Has our town attained its full growth? Are we to look for decadence, rather than progress? I see not why these questions should be answered in the affirmative. If I rightly interpret the signs of the times, manufacturing is destined to an indefinite expansion in our country. We are a young nation. Though recently tried in the fire, we have shown the wonderful energy of our people, and the strength of free institutions. We emerge from this war burdened with debt, to be sure, yet how much better is our condition than that of our ancestors eighty years ago, at the close of our Revolutionary strife! Then, almost everything was to be provided; now the wonderful contrivances of machinery exist among us in unrivalled abundance. Our domestic needs are to be supplied; the question whether our workshops are to be in Europe or in our own country, is

no longer debatable. We are to make our own wares, weave our own cloths, provide our own furniture and implements, on this side of the Atlantic. In a few years manufacturing will be largely extended in the regenerated southern States. We can afford to resign to them the making of the coarser fabrics, especially of cotton, but New England will long continue the workshop of our country for many of those articles that require nice machinery and skilled labor. Already our English brethren, to be sure, are grumbling at our tariff, but our answer to them is brief: "By your selfish policy you prolonged this contest; we put the rebellion down without your help; we shall legislate for our country to suit ourselves. Your trained workmen, your industrious laborers, are welcome to a home here; but our work is mainly to be done in our own land." And while the west, on account of its comparatively small population, and fertile soil, will be slow to establish manufacturing, New England will long retain the precedence. What then is to check the growth of North Providence? Even if our water-power is all taken up,—a point fairly open to discussion,—manufacturing by steam is as economical here as in any part of New England. Capital is here; enterprise is here; laborers can be brought here, and all that seems needed is the forecast to discern the wants of the future, and faith and sagacity to use our means. Our town committed one suicidal act nearly forty years ago. In the severe business revulsion of 1829, David Wilkinson and other enterprising mechanics were allowed to leave the place. The capitalists of the neighborhood should have prohibited it. A few words of encouragement, and, in due time, seasonable pecuniary aid, had kept them here. Other revulsions may occur in the future, but it is not worth while for rich men to conclude that the world is coming to an end, because the wheels of business are temporarily stopped. The wants of a young, vigorous, thrifty nation like ours, a nation so rich in resources and all the elements of material wealth, are constant. A little patience, a little faith, and the storm blows over, and industry resumes its wonted activity. No, fellow-citizens, if you are but true to yourselves, your town will continue to grow. A hundred years ago, and your population was

less than a thousand; to-day it cannot be much less than fourteen thousand; and in respect to capital, the disparity is still more largely in our favor. More mills, more workshops, more houses, are yet to be reared within our borders. The time must come when our farmers must vary their agriculture, and, leaving to richer soils the work of supplying the commoner fruits and grains, convert their farms into gardens.

I rejoice in such a prospect. There has been quite too strong a tendency for our New England youth to desert their homes, and emigrate to distant States. True, those States have gained by their coming, but we cannot afford this constant drain. Like the Roman matron, we can say of our sons and daughters, *These are our jewels.* Fain would I see them kept around the old homesteads. Here, where there are a thousand fond recollections of childhood, a thousand dear associations, would we see them lingering in manhood and womanhood, and contributing, by their industry, talents, and virtue, to the real weal of our State. Nurture we then every laudable enterprise; build we our community up; and let us ever recollect that where Christian institutions are vigorously sustained, education fostered, order, temperance, and integrity maintained, there property is safest, life dearest, and man happiest. The past record of our town is in many respects honorable. It is a record of unconquerable energy, inventive skill, unflagging toil. The citizens of to-day need not blush for their ancestry. Shall our children's children have equal cause to glory in our wisdom and fidelity? God grant that they who stand here a hundred years hence, to celebrate the second centennial anniversary of our town, may be able to exult in a free, a united nation, a prosperous Christian people, a thrifty, vigorous community! O, loved town and land, peace be within your homes, prosperity within your marts and mills!

At the close of the address, the choir sung the old anthem, "Denmark."

The services at the church closed with the benediction by the venerable Rev. DAVID BENEDICT, D. D.

THE DINNER SPEECHES.

After the services at the church, the military and firemen formed a procession and marched to Manchester Hall, where an ample table was spread for their entertainment.

The citizens, both ladies and gentlemen, to the number of about two hundred, together with invited guests, proceeded to the Armory of the Pawtucket Light Guard, where a dinner had been prepared by Messrs. Dispeau & Childs. The dinner was a magnificent one, and every plate was filled.

When the company were seated, the Rev. George Taft, D. D., invoked the Divine blessing.

After the viands had been disposed of, the Hon. Charles S. Bradley, President of the day, called to order, and said:

REMARKS OF MR. BRADLEY.

Neighbors, fellow-townsmen and friends—No body of American citizens can assemble upon an historical occasion to-day without their first emotion being that of thanksgiving to Almighty God, who, if for a time in His wisdom He has allowed us to be punished for our sins by the scourge of civil war, has at length in His mercy restored to us the Union and peace.

If our minds run back a hundred years in the history of this country, they rest at the other end of the century upon the revered form of Washington, and we cannot but instinctively pray that his spirit may chasten the characters of the youth of our land, so that his moderation, his dignity, the moral grandeur of his nature, may become the type of American mind.

Upon these themes it doth not become me to speak. For to whom shall we turn when we ask for an interpretation of the elements of moral character, but to the reverend clergy around us; and to whom shall we turn for a consideration of the matters pertaining to education, except to those whose life-long labor it is to mould the human intellect. I introduce President Sears of Brown University.

Dr. Sears spoke as follows:

REMARKS OF REV. DR. SEARS.

I rise with unaffected diffidence to answer the sentiment which has been given by the President of the day. Personally I cannot profess to respond. But holding by accident of office a representative place in respect to education, and also, sir, in respect to the ministerial functions, I speak for the class to which I have the honor to belong.

Undoubted reference has been made to the seat of education with which I am connected. That from the beginning was the representative of piety and learning. The first two Presidents were distinguished particularly for their advocacy of religious and moral liberty, and for their zeal in the diffusion of knowledge for the benefit of all the learned professions. Those first Presidents in their own persons illustrated the excellence of the doctrines they proclaimed, themselves the best specimens both of pulpit eloquence and also of that kind of education which befits men to exert a salutary influence upon society.

I remember furthermore on this occasion that the college actually went into operation the very year that this town was incorporated, although we had our centennial one year ago, dating it from the first meeting of the corporation; so that in a certain sense we may be looked upon in connection with the town as two sister manufacturing establishments. I will not attempt to describe the quality of the manufacture in either establishment. There is one disadvantage, however, under which we labor, and that is, that while you can select and purchase such materials as you choose, we are obliged to take such as are sent to us, and make the best of them.

Religion, Education, Industry; these are associated with this occasion. They are the foundation of the success and power and dominion of the State. To my mind it is a happy combination;—Religion, first and chief; Education, its hand-maid and subject, to minister to all the wants of society; and Industry, without which Education fails of its practical object.

And never in the history of this country has the importance of these three qualities been more prominent and more clearly observable than at the present moment. If we have been taught any lesson by the sad scenes through which we have passed during the last four years, it is in the first place that all national prosperity must be founded on sure moral and religious principle,—that we cannot depend upon anything short of a *religious* foundation for the political fabric; and equally has it been demonstrated that intelligence, under the influence of religious sentiment, is the great power to act upon matter and upon mind. And in the struggles that have been in progress for the last four years, in how many instances have

looked with delight to see the achievements of mind,—to see how vastly superior the intellect is to the mere accumulation of physical strength. We have had mighty physical forces wasted for want of directive energy. We have expended treasure and blood beyond what we can estimate, for want of mind sufficient in grasp and power to control the vast machinery we have put in operation. But, thank God, we were not to remain in this humiliating position. God put before us men who had intellectual power and could wield the mighty forces we had called into being. We to-day see the happy results.

And the mechanical ingenuity and industry of our people is that which has distinguished the New England States during this war. We have met the boldness and dash of the south, and found that they would not bear a moment's comparison with the ingenuity, energy and practical intelligence which can make things work effectually when they are put into the hands of men trained to New England principles, New England habits and New England ideas. We admit that the northwest has shown magnificent ability both in the command of forces and in the executing of the great achievements which have distinguished them in the war, but still we look to the New England army, as a whole, for an amount of power, distributed through all the ranks, unequalled, so far as ingenuity and intellect are concerned, by anything to be found on the continent.

And now, I ask, what is the office which we in this small State—this little angle of a vast continent—have to perform? What is the mission of New England? I answer. It lies in these three words—Religion, Education, Industry. Carry these sacred three all the way to the Gulf of Mexico; carry them all the way to the Pacific, and let them shed their benign influence on the isles beyond. If there is salvation for this country, it is to come through these means, and no other. There never was a brighter era for an inhabitant of the New England States to live in than the present. There never was a nobler opportunity for the genius of New England character to infuse itself into all the institutions of the land, than at this time; and the appeal made to young men to know their own mission, which is to diffuse these sentiments all over the land, is scarcely less sacred than that for missionary enterprise to give the gospel to the nations of the earth.

The sentiment which lies nearest my heart is the mission we owe to the country, beautifully illustrated in more than one of its aspects in the history of your town, by such men as have commenced and guided the enterprise of this place, men who have started the manufacturing interests of Pawtucket, men who have shown such bravery by land and sea, men who,

in every emergency, have stood up and shown their loyalty to the State and the nation. I think we shall not always need to be told of the fact, although it will be of interest, that the State of Rhode Island is situated near to Pawtucket. I think the influence of town and State will expand itself to a larger sphere. The ideas that go forth from the history of this town are the ideas we wish to spread all over the land. I close with these three single words—Religion, Education, Industry.

Mr. Bradley. We have paid our first respects to Religion and Education; and I think every New England man will see the justness of the reverend speaker's claim that the diffusion of these ideas constitutes our mission as a people. He has complimented our State, as well he might, upon being one of those workshops or hives of Industry which unite this last with Religion and Education. Our little State,—is she not, in her industry and energy, like that statue of Hercules, which, only a cubit high, was so perfect in its proportions as to give a better idea of muscular vigor than the Colossus? Our little State is represented here by one of her chief magistrates, than whom none is more versed in historic lore, none more fit to occupy a seat upon the Bench where Justice sits serene and impartial. I introduce Judge Brayton.

Justice Brayton spoke as follows:

REMARKS OF JUSTICE BRAYTON.

My business is not to make addresses, but to weigh arguments and decide causes. I, of all men, should least be called upon for such a speech as would entertain this assembly.

But since I am called upon, and since I do know something of the history of this State, I will refer for an instant to that history. I will not detain you many minutes. We have been called upon for the last four years to consider something of government: What is government? who are to be governed? and who has the right to govern? This has been one of the grounds of this great contest, whether these southern States had a right to secede from this young government, or what is there that binds a man under his government? Now I refer to this matter simply because it is connected, and materially connected, with the very early history of this colony. The first planter here was a man who was driven away by the intolerance of a government. There grew up a necessity with those who went with him to have some sort of a government. They formed a union among themselves by voluntary association, and made experiment of it as a government. It was not long before they quarreled among themselves, and the experiment failed. Not many years after this there was

new settlement formed. The settlers came from a similar quarter of the country, and for similar reasons. Not being allowed to remain where they were, they sought a new home three thousand miles from the sovereign power which thrust them forth. One portion of them were merchants. Another were farmers. They went on well for a year, and then they had a difficulty. There was a secession and afterwards a re-union. But it was not so perfect but that an individual could resist the power of the government. Now for a series of years this has involved the question, "In what does government consist?" We have gone through all the phases; and it was in this State that liberty was cradled. This State was able to resist all encroachments, maintain its stand, and make a government. After the formation of this government there came hither an individual of whom much has been said, and who said that the government at Portsmouth was no legitimate government; that the people were subjects of the crown of England, and until they received authority from it they had no government. There was a difficulty, and he was banished from that State. He came to Providence, and they refused to admit him there. They denied the validity of any government but that of Providence. They said they might get along by voluntary agreement, and if they got into difficulty they could submit it to arbitration. They did so, and said there was no power aside from that agreement for one man to bind another. He claimed that they must have the authority of the crown or sovereign power to which they were subject, in order to form an association to exercise the powers of government,—the power to issue judgment, pass a decree and carry it into execution;—then every man would be bound by it, and no man have the right to secede.

Now he went on and formed an association. They acted upon that principle. They did not attempt to exercise the powers of government until they had received a charter from the sovereign of the mother country and from its Parliament. From that time they went on, and this man whom they charged with being so turbulent and opposed to all government, sat down as quietly as any individual even under the government of Massachusetts.

Now look at these phases which we have gone through. They came and established a government, but not until they had received power from an authorized source. They felt that they were bound from all considerations to pay deference to the sovereign power. And I may say that this is the principle which they have wrought out. It was wrought out here through all these phases from necessity. And that principle must operate, and is operating now. It is a principle that must be established throughout this Union if it is a Union at all. That is all that I intended to say.

Mr. Bradley. The Judge has spoken of the State laws and of government. There is a section of the State which gives name, indeed, to the whole of it, which, through one of its citizens, (not personally present, however,) has sent us its courteous greeting. This section I often heard your late colleague, Judge Bullock, apostrophize in the language of his favorite poet and philosopher, Coleridge:

> "O rare and beauteous island! thou hast been
> My sole and most adorable temple."

That great man, historian, philosopher and poet, loved that island almost to idolatry, as did that philosopher of whom Pope spoke as possessed of every virtue under heaven, the founder of colleges, libraries and churches, who wrote the immortal prophecy:

> "Westward the star of empire takes its way.
> * * * * * * *
> Time's noblest offspring is the last."

Well might Berkeley, and men of culture and leisure and genius, choose their homes upon that verdant isle, whose climate is made so genial by the influence of that stream which comes up from the tropics, laden with balmy fragance

> "From the spicy shore
> Of Araby the blest."

We are remembered kindly and courteously by that distinguished gentleman who has shared your favor, (though the breath of popular favor is always unstable.) I will read a letter from the learned author of Treatises on International Law, the Hon. William Beach Lawrence of Newport.

[The letter having been mislaid, it is necessarily omitted in this report.]

Mr. Bradley. We have among us a distinguished guest who has acquired fame and fortune in other States, although he is proud to date his nativity from this town. I will introduce to you Mr. Moses Pierce, now of Norwich, Conn., but formerly one of our own citizens.

Mr. Pierce spoke as follows:

REMARKS OF MOSES PIERCE, ESQ.

Mr. President—During the rebellion which has just been put down, I have looked with pride upon what my native State has done in the raising of men, and upon their heroic action in battle. And I have had an especial eye upon this town, where I first drew breath, and where I spent some seventeen years of my early life. But I cannot but think at this moment that you must be largely indebted to my old friend, the chairman of your committee, for your success in raising recruits, if, indeed, he took the same

advantage of them which he did of me in making his application to me to be present here, while I was in the church, completely absorbed in the celebration, without one idea of making a speech; for I graduated at the old red school-house, near this spot, where even the sunlight of Brown did not reach in those days.

My memory has been busy since I have been here with scenes connected with this place forty or fifty years ago. I remember the village as it was then. I see venerable men around me who were then just in the vigor of manhood. And I remember those who have passed away—many of them the companions of my youth. Some forty years ago this very month I stood on Bunker Hill among that innumerable throng, and saw upon that platform two hundred of the ancient and honorable and brave men of the Revolution, surrounding an orator whose eloquence on that day has seldom been excelled. I saw there the bright, particular star of that constellation of worthies, Lafayette, and by his side sat Stephen Olney, a citizen of North Providence at that time; and I remember the scene in the Court House yard at Providence, to which the orator referred this morning. I saw Lafayette embrace that honored man of North Providence in friendship begun at the battle of Brandywine, and cemented at the battle of Yorktown. They were brothers in arms. Those men have all passed away. Not one of all those who stood upon that platform among those Revolutionary worthies is now in life.

I remember venerable citizens of this town at that period. My memory runs back to the time when Oziel Wilkinson was the nine o'clock of this village. Many a time have I played with the companions of my boyhood between those elm trees that stood in front of that dwelling, and when nine o'clock came, Oziel Wilkinson came to the door, saying, "Jeems, Jeems, does thee know it is nine o'clock?" That was the signal for us boys to find our homes. I remember Jeremiah Jenks, Moses Jenks and Stephen Jenks. Those were the old men of the place. Abraham and Isaac Wilkinson, Thomas Steere, Nathaniel Walker, and many others I could name, were just in the prime of life—some of them just passing out of the active business period. I remember the industrious habits of this community, for this place was one of the workshops and bee-hives of this country, to which the orator alluded. It was required that all the cotton should be carried home in a hand-cart to be whipped. You would continually see it carried along the streets in hand-carts, that the seeds might be whipped out of it, to fit it for manufacturing purposes.

I am not going to detain you with these reminiscences, but will tell you a fish story. I have not alluded to Timothy Greene, who was one of the

active men of the days of my earliest recollection, and with whom my father found a home when he came here. Timothy Greene had been born and brought up on the shores of Narragansett Bay, where he had more experience in digging Chippewanoxsett clams than he had in that ancient way of fishing in the winter time, (kept up, I believe, to this day,) by means of a scoop-net through holes cut in the ice. I used to take great delight in this sport. Many a time have I skated to Brown's Bridge and back again, stopping at Swan Point, Bucklin's Island, and every fishing ground around it, to see how they got along fishing. Some time after Timothy Greene came here he desired to go fishing in the winter. Stephen Jenks and Daniel Wilkinson concluded also that they would go down and have a little fishing on the ice. They took scoop-nets, and, like the disciples of old, toiled all the night and caught nothing. Coming home near morning, (the weather being so severe that ice formed up to the rear of Pardon Jenks's grist mill,) they landed in an old coal yard near Stephen Jenks's shop. Here Timothy put his net through an opening in the ice, and drew it up heavy with fish. But instead of getting bass, the kind generally caught, he caught the small perch, which were so very small that a great many slipped through the meshes of the net and hung down from the outside of it. Timothy, excited by his unexpected success, exclaimed, "Did you ever know anything equal to this? The fish are so glad to get out of this icy cold water that those who cannot get into the net take hold of the outside of it with their teeth."

Mr. Bradley. I would like to inquire of the gentleman whether the story is an authentic one which is told of Col. Stephen Olney, that when in the army his regiment was disordered somewhat, and Washington said to him, "Your regiment gives me more trouble than any other in the army," and that the Colonel rejoined, "That, sir, is precisely what the enemy say."

Mr. Pierce. I cannot say of my own knowledge.

Doct. Charles F. Manchester read the following regular toasts:

Our Town—Though five score years of age, it is still fresh and vigorous, energetic and enterprising, and we can with reason and confidence predict that its record for the succeeding hundred years will be as pregnant with themes for eulogy in another centennial address, as we have to-day found to be its record for the century which is past.

The President called upon Hon. Thomas Davis.

REMARKS OF HON. THOMAS DAVIS.

I was thinking, Mr. President, as you called upon the gentlemen who preceded me, that I could not help wishing that I possessed the fine classical taste with which you accompanied each introduction. I always feel a

regret when speaking that it was not my fortune to derive all the benefits which might have accrued from early education; and therefore I fail to speak elegantly on occasions like the present, where, although the subjects under consideration are weighty, they do not peculiarly stir the mind like contest or debate.

It is the condition of no inconsiderable number of the States, cities and towns of our country to have subjects connected with their history which seem to single them out as something distinguished and superior. We hear on almost all public occasions of the services of States or towns or cities. Perhaps it is a proper feeling. Certainly we are bound to look over the history of the past, and derive encouragement and impulse from contemplating the labors and conduct of those who have gone before us, and prepared the condition of things which we now find to exist. But it seems to me that this town has peculiar claims for considerations of this kind. It seems to me that no locality of equal extent has a more marked history. It undoubtedly owes this in some measure to the fact that a stream poured forth its waters here, and made a power which enabled men to overlook the ground and see where they could contribute to their own wealth. Doubtless this was the original reason why this became a great center of business. If we who are here, fellow-citizens, if we can carry our minds back a hundred years, and see what progress has been made in that period, we may well feel astonished, and ask ourselves if another century that is to come can accomplish more for the welfare of the human race. Within the lifetime of most of us the whole condition of society has been changed by the inventive genius of man. Nearly all of us recollect the first railroad that ever ran here. We recollect the introduction of steam and of telegraphs, and what a revolution they have made in the social system. We cannot calculate their effects. The worthy President of Brown University spoke of Religion, Education and Industry—three matters of great moment; great each in its own sphere. But how little progress either could make without the aid of the other. Even in regard to religion; though a man might individually be a christian,—and that is a great deal,—yet the only way christianity can prevail in the world is by marching side by side with industry and science—physical science; and I may say, without presumption, that it appears to me that the whole christian world has thus far made only failures in its attempts on heathenism, because it did not carry with it our industrial modes and scientific improvements.

In that spirit we are here to-day to take in the whole range of these matters, and give no one of them undue importance. As religion is potent in its place, it derives its power to be so as much from the mechanic arts

and from science as it does from the purity of its principles. I wish to detract nothing from these. I believe the utterances made by Christ to be all that can be uttered of the Divine. But they do not comprehend the whole of the relations of man to the universe and to the God who created the universe. It is only by developing the whole of these matters that we can know anything about what either of them is in its ultimate results.

Well, sir, we are here to-day. But if we could cast our eyes forward and contemplate the century which is to come, what changes would we behold. Here are the young about us. How few of them will remain when half a century shall have passed. There will a few be gathered together on the semi-centennial. And the great aspiration of us all is, that when we shall pass off this stage we may comprehend something of the progress we have witnessed here. This is, indeed, our highest aspiration, that these minds given us by our Creator may be continued in their powers, and expand to the capacity to comprehend in its progress all that belongs to our earthly existence of that which is beyond,—of which we scarcely have an apprehension now,—and of the vast system in which we live. If, indeed, we could be assured this day that we should comprehend these things, we should go home with lighter hearts, and with a more elevated view of society and of man. And notwithstanding all that has been said about this matter, we still doubt. We have not full faith to believe, or our lives would give higher exhibitions of the ends for which we were created. But it is something even in a moment to feel that such things may be; that this our festivity may be in harmony with those higher ideas that elevate our minds and alone make existence of value.

I do not know, sir, that I am prepared to enlarge on this subject of industry. I have seen something of the progress of the mechanic arts in Rhode Island, although entirely disconnected from this village. Forty years ago—certainly a long period in life—I commenced mechanical labor in a jeweller's shop, and I have seen every step in the progress of that business to this hour, and can say that it is a perfect wonder to comprehend it. I may not be able to give it in detail. It would make, in itself, a little history, which a person having the taste and ability might write. Now all the work that was once performed by the hands of the younger apprentices is done by machinery. The hardest work was rolling down the stock in a little mill, which was before done by boys. It is now done by steam power. A hundred appliances of machinery all bring out the most beautiful structures in connection with that business. Indeed, in our own city has been invented a machine for the manufacture of articles of jewelry in chains, which is now running in Europe. It has never been

equalled by any invention for this purpose. I presume the same remark applies to the mechanic arts generally, and to those branches of them prosecuted in Pawtucket, where the same genius has been expended with the same happy results.

And, sir, in the midst of all this progress we have sometimes been alarmed at the magnitude of the great corporations that have grown up. I confess, Mr. President, that I sometimes have entertained the idea that they might be unfavorable to the freedom of men. I was somewhat later, perhaps, in my ideas of democracy, or, rather, I did not apply to them the right principles. But it now seems to me, fellow-citizens, that all these great corporations are working out for the masses of mankind a favorable result. Instead of being in the hands of one man, the artisans will, by degrees, become participants in the results of their labor. They can be owners of the stock. They are distributed among the masses. They can own little or much, and derive a proportion of the profit of what they produce. I could not but reflect during the last session of the Legislature, where great numbers applied for acts of incorporation, (some for purposes beyond this State, but a great proportion for purposes within it,) that all these acts were tending to contribute to the equalization of property rather than to destroy it. I think I can clearly see a tendency in these toward this result. I cannot but believe that all these are to become means of distributing wealth, and raising up the masses, and giving them an interest, though it may be a small one, in every great corporation. If industrious and prudent, they may oftener become owners in this position of affairs, than if left to combat with capital in the hands of a single person. And so of all our other great improvements which have resulted from the progress of physical science. Our railroads, and especially our new horse railroads, are conferring great benefits on the mass of our citizens. We struggle against them at first, but soon learn to recognize their utility, and value them accordingly.

During the oration to-day, when the orator was speaking of the opposition made to the dams across the river on the ground that they interfered with the passage of fish, I was reminded of an incident related to me by Hon. Lemuel Angell, a Senator from this town in a former Legislature ten or fifteen years ago, but whom I do not see here to-day. He stated to me that when the Legislature of Rhode Island was in session—it may be forty years ago—about the time the first steamer came up our bay—the Senate passed an act prohibiting steamers coming into Rhode Island waters, on the ground that they would disturb the fish. I do not think the bill ever extended to the other house. I never heard anything more

of it. But it showed the spirit which prevailed. The Senate was a small body, and probably had not many popular ideas, although men of eminent ability as politicians. But, Mr. President, I have spoken long enough, and thanking you for your attention, will quietly sit down.

Mr. Bradley. My neighbor and friend who has just taken his seat will pardon me for adding a word as to the progress made in machinery. A gentleman engaged in the cotton manufacture told me that from the time he first entered a cotton mill up to the present day, the cost of producing a yard of cotton had been decreased just sixteen times. One person can now produce as much cotton, through the aid of improved machinery, as sixteen persons could have done when he first entered a cotton mill.

Through this inventive faculty of the mind, great burdens are to be lifted from the people of this country. When in Europe I was astonished at the vast difference in readiness of perception in regard to the understanding of machinery between European nations and our own. I think, although it is said that the new continent produces the best specimens of vegetable growth, and the old world the finest specimens of the human kingdom, that the American mind is more akin to those finer powers of nature, electricity and magnetism, and evinces more of the faculties of discovery and imagination. Perhaps in no place on this continent has this been more illustrated than here. My friend knows that in hunting up patent cases, we can find the earliest discoveries about here.

The second regular toast was—

The Orator of the Day—With the skill of an artist has he daguerreotyped to our view the men and transactions of one hundred years, so that we and those who come after us and read the history, may say with pride, such were our fathers and the works of their hands.

Rev. Mr. Goodrich was called upon to respond, and spoke as follows:

REMARKS OF REV. MR. GOODRICH.

The only speech I ought to make, Mr. President, would be an apology to our friends for taxing their patience so long during the meeting. I wish to say here, that what little I have been able to do shows me the necessity that a great deal more should be done. In conversation with Rev. Dr. Benedict a while ago, he told me that some interesting reminiscences that he had written years since were to be revised and put in shape. I hope the worthy Doctor will be spared to us a great many years. I hope some of his friends will suggest to him that he should do this work soon, that we may have this interesting local history preserved.

Our worthy Dr. Taft has also informed me that he was preparing reminiscences of his time. I trust he will be led to do that work soon, that a

great deal of interesting matter relative to the local history of this region may be preserved.

Having gone out of the room oppressed with the heat, I came in as our worthy President was speaking of Religion, Education and Industry. It is unnecessary that I speak any more about industry in Pawtucket. It would be bringing coals to Newcastle. It is not unlikely that as we have taken such a start, this will continue to be a thriving industrial center.

I want to speak a word about education. Public education and common schools unhappily are a comparatively recent invention in Rhode Island, though to the credit of Providence be it said, and to the credit of Moses Brown in particular, that it was not so with all parts of the State; for he long strove to popularize that system, and complained that it was not the men of wealth whose children attended the common schools upon whom the tax must bear the hardest, but upon the poorest. We have had a great many illustrations of that fact in other places. It is not enough for us in our country to depend on our higher institutions. They have their worth. But for all the money that has ever been invested in them, for all the talent concentrated there, look at Virginia. At the outbreak of this rebellion she had six or eight colleges, well officered—their course of study equal to that of the average northern colleges. She had in her larger colleges eight hundred youth instructed—more than Harvard had, more than Brown has; and yet Virginia went staggering into the rebellion, dragged in by those seeking only to enforce the will of a corrupt oligarchy. We look at Virginia with pity to-day.

Let us have collegiate education; let the higher institutions of learning be maintained; but let common schools have a full share of our interest and our liberality.

I recollect a story that President Felton used to relate with considerable glee, when I was residing at Cambridge. He happened to be at the time on the school committee, as were several of the professors at Harvard University. It was a favorite idea with the President that all education should be free—that colleges should speedily be made free to all who saw fit to attend. It was his desire, and that of the professors referred to, to make the common schools of the city of Cambridge so good that no private institutions could live; and they pretty well succeeded. The story was of some lads whom he happened to hear conversing together, and who had been in the habit of going to private schools, but had then just commenced attending the public schools. One of the lads said to his fellow, "I say, Bill, these common schools are capital institutions; they take the starch out of a fellow finely." I hope we shall have good common schools that will take the starch out of all that need to be subjected to such a process.

Another fact I would call attention to in this connection. Education is not finished when a boy or girl leaves the school. It is but just begun.

Another important institution is a good public library. I do not mean private affairs. We have one of those here in this village. I cannot get into it. I have not the money to invest in it. It is the property of a private corporation. It is a good institution for those that have a share in it. I wish it were a public institution, in the largest sense of the term. The only practical application I want to make of that thought is this: George Peabody caused his name to be remembered in his native town, not by building a monument, but by establishing a library. South Danvers, small as she is, is glorious in her public libraries. Another absent son of Boston laid the foundation of its noble public library. Is there not some absent son of this town, blessed with the means, who wants to make his own neighbors' children, and their children's children down to the latest generation, recollect him lovingly? Let him endow a public library. Perhaps it is not worth while to say there is an immense amount of wealth in this little region. Let that wealth be duly consecrated to the work of spreading intelligence among the people, and we will have a public library.

About this matter of religion. I suppose there has been a great deal of wrangling among sects, and that there is a great deal at the present time. Mere utilitarians may consider this unnecessary. In reading the history of Rhode Island, one of the incidents that stirred me most was to read of Roger Williams's efforts to maintain in this community perfect freedom of conscience; and yet he was not indifferent to theoretical views. When he learned that George Fox was down in Newport creating a sensation and disseminating views which he considered prejudicial, he proposed a friendly discussion, and rowed down to that city in a boat, (this was before the day of steamboats,) reaching there about midnight, commencing his discussion the next day, and continuing it three days. He was at that time over 73 years of age. I honor him for that, and should if it had been John Calvin or John Murray he was discussing with. My religious convictions are dearer to me than all others. But I honor my Baptist, Methodist, Episcopal, Congregational brethren, and those of every other denomination, for fidelity; and I believe that it is for the advantage of every community that religious sentiment should be active, and that there should be religious institutions maintained in all vigor and vitality. I recollect a remark of Chief Justice Parsons when he resided in Newburyport. There was at one time a good deal of religious excitement in that place, and a friend residing in Salem was rather condoling with the Chief Justice where there was so much agitation. "Come up and live in Salem," said he, "w

we don't have any quarrels about religion." "There is but one difference," replied the Chief Justice, "between us at Newburyport and you at Salem. You don't care anything about religion, and we do care enough about it to quarrel about it." If men won't work without a little stimulus, I would rather they would get up interest enough to quarrel a little intellectually; anything but apathy and indifference. I have read of a man who went to polished Athens some eighteen hundred years ago. He met the philosophers, Epicureans and Stoics, disputed in the Market Place, and spoke before the assembly of the Areopagus. But this people, with all their intellectual culture, were a very frivolous kind of people, and the major part of them, visitors and residents, cared nothing except to hear or tell some new thing. These are not the persons to make earnest, striving and successful men, either in initiating social improvements or in maintaining liberty, and the apostle gathered no church there.

Mr. Bradley. I suppose, after the example we have had, we should all like to hear more from these clergymen who quarrel so much, as our brother has told us. The toast-master will read a sentiment to which the Rev. Mr. Ela is expected to respond.

The third regular toast was—

The Town of North Providence—The first place in the world to apply steam power for the purposes of navigation; the first place in America to spin cotton yarn by machinery; the first place in New England to establish Sunday Schools.

REMARKS OF REV. D. H. ELA.

I have been very much interested, Mr. President, in listening to the speeches I have heard this afternoon; so much so that I should like to carry them away without having them mixed up with others such as I can give. I hardly see how this toast can come specially within the province of the clergy. It occurred to me that if I were in a legislature or a deliberative assembly, I should ask that the question might be divided. It seems difficult to understand how the first steamboat, the first spinning jenny and the first Sunday School have any connection. I believe it is a principle of legislation that the different parts of a bill must be german to each other. The steamboat may have brought the first spinning jenny, but I do not know how the spinning jenny is cousin to the Sunday School, unless it be through the waterfall. Justice Brayton assents, and I shall therefore consider that we have the judgment of the Supreme Court that that opinion is correct.

There is a connection between these matters of scientific and industrial improvement and that interest which the Sunday School represents. It is

not an accident, Mr. President, that these things come together—that they are neighbors to each other in time and neighbors in locality. It is only a part of that great fact which we can see widely displayed in all the christian world,—that science has attended upon religion, and art has accompanied the advancement of morality. It is not an accident that God has put into the hands of christian nations the larger portion of the wealth of the world. It is not an accident that the telegraph, the printing press, steam power, and all the different departments of art and science, are in the hands of christian nations. It is not an accident, it seems to me, that commerce is mostly in the hands of christian nations. It is not an accident that the great gold deposits of the world, over which it seems as if God had placed His hand and covered them for ages and for generations, have been uncovered by Him to christian people, so that they have found the treasures here gathered, and may pour them forth in blessings on the world. It is not an accident that the great coal fields are under the control of christian civilization. It is not an accident that a christian nation has lately "struck ile." These things have a purpose in the great providence of God. They are for the blessing of the nations. They are for the improvement of humanity. God has given them to His people for a great and glorious purpose. And thus right here, in the history of this town, we have the Sunday School growing up in the midst of the industry and business of a manufacturing community. This is not an accident. What could have been done without the influences of religion? How could the good order of society have been maintained? How could civilization have been advanced? How could we have been prepared for these great times? How could we have remained firm in our contest for civil liberty without these great influences, without regard to something more than expediency and the considerations of political economy to keep us steady? We needed these mighty principles that God has blessed the land with, to steady us in these momentous revolutions through which we have passed. It is a significant fact that this Sunday School movement has taken such a hold of society in these latter times. This single institution, planting here its seeds of truth, has had a mighty influence in preparing us for the great work which God has given us to do. I see, then, more clearly than at first, the connection between these important matters and our history; but I will not detain you longer.

Mr. Bradley. We had expected the presence of His Excellency the Governor of the State, but he is unavoidably detained, and has sent the following letter:

LETTER FROM GOV. SMITH.

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND, EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,
PROVIDENCE, June 23, 1865.

GENTLEMEN,—His Excellency Gov. Smith desires me to acknowledge the receipt of your invitation to attend the celebration of the centennial anniversary of the town of North Providence, and to express to you his regrets that several pressing engagements for the day will make it impossible for him to be present on the above occasion.

Assuring you of His Excellency's congratulations upon the rapid advancement of your town, and upon the high position which it has attained, from its wealth and manufactures,

I am, gentlemen, with great respect,
Your very obedient servant,
CHARLES E. BAILEY,
Col. and Priv. See'y.

To D. Wilkinson, William F. Sayles, Obadiah Brown, etc.

The fourth regular toast was—

Our Mother, the City of Providence—Though long separated from her, we are not estranged; and though living in a more northern clime, our hearts are sufficiently warm to welcome her representatives here to-day.

MR. BRADLEY. It was expected that this would be responded to by His Honor Mayor Doyle, who is absent. He has, however, sent the following letter:

LETTER FROM MAYOR DOYLE.

MAYOR'S OFFICE,
CITY OF PROVIDENCE, June 23, 1865.

GENTLEMEN,—Your polite invitation to participate in the festivities of the centennial celebration of North Providence was handed to me by the chairman of your committee.

I regret that my recent indisposition, from which I have not fully recovered, together with a press of official duties upon the day appointed, will prevent me from being with you.

Permit me, however, to express my gratification at the prosperity which the town has attained, and at the influence she exerts in the State.

As she increases in population and wealth, and as her agricultural and manufacturing interests are developed, so her prosperity and influence must continue to increase.

I sincerely hope that her past progress is the harbinger of future greatness, and that the pleasant and harmonious relations existing between this

city and her daughter may never be broken, but be strengthened with each passing year.

Thanking you for the courtesy which prompted the invitation,

I remain, respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

THOMAS A. DOYLE, Mayor.

To D. Wilkinson, William F. Sayles, Obadiah Brown, etc.

The next regular toast was—

Our Predecessors in the Building up of North Providence—Gladly would we welcome them to this festive board, and thank them for their labors and sacrifices in the past; but their race is run, and their goal, we trust, is won; and we can do no more than pay this tribute to their memory in silence.

To this there was no response.

The next regular toast was—

Samuel Slater and David Wilkinson—Two names intimately connected with the history of the Pawtucket part of North Providence. By their genius and perseverance they left their impress upon the place, but while the former was rewarded for his labors, and ended his days where he had been useful and was appreciated, the latter was forced by misfortune to leave in his old age, and go among strangers to "see if he could earn his own living."

Rev. David Benedict, D. D., made the following response on invitation from the President to relate some portion of the early history of the town:

REMARKS OF REV. DR. BENEDICT.

Mr. President—It is a grateful spectacle to see so many people assembled to unite in celebrating this anniversary. Having had no previous notification, it cannot be expected that I should make much of a speech at this time. I was pleased with the address of the Rev. Dr. Sears. It comprises the sum and substance of human economy. As a citizen and *quasi* native of this State, I feel a superior interest in its concerns. I have resided here now just about sixty-one years; that is, I came here in the summer of 1804. I am thinking how many there are here now that have resided within the boundaries of North Providence for that length of time—my neighbor Capt. Dexter, perhaps, and a very few others. I have, for a great length of years, in addition to my other professional pursuits—my historical pursuits of a denominational character, and my general pursuits of all objects suitable for man to pursue—been attending to the collection of items and reminiscences pertaining to the history of this State and vicinity. A number of them have been touched upon in the discourse to which you this morning listened. Some that I hinted to my friend, the orator, he had not time to introduce. I am still in pursuit of such items and desire, in the first place, to get an account of who were the first settl-

here when the aborigines were the sole inhabitants—to get an account of the very first shanty or log cabin built within this region. Only a little while ago my friend, Rev. Dr. Taft, asked me if Joseph Jenks, Senior, was *bona fide* the first white man that came and resided about Pawtucket falls. I replied that it had always been my general impression that he was; I had not studied into the subject, but would do so. I told my friend, Rev. Mr. Goodrich, all I could say about the matter. The probability is that some people settled here before Joseph Jenks, Senior, built his little shanty. The old stone chimney house was moved farther up the river because they wanted to run the street by the river side. It stood formerly just below the Town Clerk's office,—just about where the street now is. It was moved after Joseph Jenks died.

Well, now as to the moral character of the vicinity. It has been greatly celebrated for sectarian peculiarities during the whole period of my own life—two generations of men, as they are ordinarily estimated. I have been accustomed to hear sneering remarks respecting the want of a certain something found in other sects, in the State of Rhode Island. It was a maxim long ago that any man who had lost his religion and wanted to find it, should go into the State of Rhode Island, where there was a flood of religions of all sorts. There is something in this. In early times the neighboring States were downright intolerant. There is no use in mincing the matter. *Culpa temporum*, it was the fault of the times. There were many people persecuted for want of orthodox opinions. Some were loose in their tenets, others were very conscientious and sincere. The conscientious part went to Rhode Island. The loose and irreverent part also fled there and found shelter. It was engraven on the first bell of the old Providence Meeting House, as you, perhaps, remember:

> "For freedom of conscience the town was first planted;
> Persuasion, not force, was used by the people;
> This church is the oldest, and has not recanted,
> Enjoying and granting bell, temple and steeple."

I suppose this was intended to be a hit, not only at the neighboring province, but was also an allusion to Old England, where dissenters could not have steeples on their houses of worship.

There is another point connected with the history of Rhode Island. Callender, in his centenary discourse, delivered one hundred years after Rhode Island was settled, says: "There is an advantage in having religion established by law, in having houses of worship established and maintained without the trouble of voluntary collections. But there is a growth of formality and a loss of spirituality which want of religious freedom particularly superinduces."

But notwithstanding all the imperfections of old Rhode Island, I feel attached to her and cannot help it.

The village of Pawtucket, what was it when I came here sixty years ago? Our orator to-day has given some description of it. I believe there were but fifty houses within half a mile of the bridge, on both sides of the river. It was a steady population—a pretty regular population—until ship-building came in and brought a set of hands rather wanting in stability. Afterwards cotton mills came in, and employers were obliged to pick up hands from all quarters. It was exceedingly uncomfortable, and this class of people were very unpopular. And even against Mr. Slater—would you think it of a man so famous?—there was a prejudice because he was an Englishman and a foreigner. This lasted some time, and attached to everything pertaining to cotton manufacturing. Josiah Wilkinson did not want Mr. Slater to form a connection with his daughter. When the two latter were in conversation one evening, Josiah abruptly said, "Hannah, it is time for thee to go to bed." That showed the prejudice he had against Mr. Slater, and that he did not want his daughter to continue the conversation. The manufacturers were obliged to pick up all sorts of help in every place, from Dan to Beersheba. They could get no other than such as they did. People considered the place a very nest of corruption and disorder, with a helter-skelter population. They compared it to "forty live crabs in a bucket."

Mr. Pierce has noted a singular peculiarity in the fact that they had to pick cotton by hand—the long staple cotton. In my parochial visits I would often find the women each with a basket of cotton waste before them, and they got as much for picking the waste as the cotton has been sold for ordinarily before the war.

I cannot go into details concerning the Sunday School cause. Capt. Dexter and myself disagree a little about dates. I was not present at the formation of the first Sunday School. I came to the place a short time afterwards. I became chief manager of the Sunday School. I have subscription papers in my possession on which cotton mill owners were the only subscribers to the funds for procuring preachers, teachers, books, and everything that was required.

Mr. Bradley. There is one theme which, at every festival gathering, is left to the last. That must be the worthiest and the best. And I shall call upon the most acceptable person, namely, the bachelor clergyman, to answer to the last regular toast, which is—

The Ladies—While we accord to man due praise for his enterprise and labors, we do not forget that woman, by her virtues and graces, her affections and sacrifices, her restraining influences and wholesome admonitions, contributes her full share to those features of society and those enterprises most acceptable to the Creator and His creatures.

I will call upon Mr. Spaulding to respond.

REMARKS OF MR. C. H. SPAULDING.

Mr. President—I hardly know wherein consists the peculiar sacredness of this subject that a clergyman should be called upon to speak in reference to it. It was with great reluctance that I consented to do so. I think, perhaps, that I could have found greater inspiration at an earlier hour than this. But there is some left, surely.

We, to-day, are celebrating the one hundredth anniversary of this town. We have seen that there was a link which allied the town to the nation and to the commonwealth. It becomes me now to say that there is another step in this gradation—an ultimate point which is strongly allied to the town, through the town to the commonwealth, and through the commonwealth to the nation. Need I say that that ultimate point is the home where is felt the influence of the christian mother and of the christian system. I read before me to-day in a most beautiful prophecy of the future what is to proceed from the home; for I see "Louisiana" (or the lady bearing the name of that State) beside "Maine." I see, singularly enough, "Rhode Island" between "Florida" and "Tennessee." I see all these States linked together to-day in this beautiful picture. And what is the influence that is to effect this? It is the influence of christian mothers and of christian sisters. Through the influence of these there is to be brought about a beautiful fulfilment of the prophecy, "Mercy and Truth have met together; Righteousness and Peace have kissed each other."

I will mention two incidents which will illustrate the point. We have no more beautiful picture in our American history than that of our immortal Washington, about to depart from his home to the high and responsible offices which awaited him, receiving the benediction of a christian mother. I recollect when a lad hearing the orator of the day on some great festive occasion make the statement: "This George Washington had a good mother, and that was the secret of his greatness." And so we may say that there is a great deal of unwritten and unrecorded heroism which proceeds from the home where a mother has sent forth to the war, with a "God bless you, my son," those who have fought and suffered for us, yea, died for us; and we to-day, through their unwritten heroism, are enjoying the fruits of peace, which we trust will be as lasting as time.

There is one other incident to which I will allude, and that is the letter which was written to Mrs. Lincoln by Queen Victoria of England. Ever since the death of Prince Albert, Queen Victoria has presented one of the most beautiful spectacles of grief and sorrow which the world has known;

and who more fittingly than herself could have written a letter of condolence to Mrs. Lincoln in the hour of her great sorrow?

Yes, in the picture before me we read a beautiful prophecy of the future greatness of our country.

Mr. Bradley. I am almost unwilling to say anything which shall disturb the picture in living canvass to which the speaker alludes. I would we might carry the memory of it with us when we leave this place. But I fear that it is nearly time to bring the exercises to a close. The pleasure we have had has been largely owing to the kindness of the gentlemen who have addressed you.

The following volunteer sentiment was given:

The New Police Court of Pawtucket—Behold "a second Daniel come to judgment."

Responded to by Mr. Daniel Wilkinson as follows:

REMARKS OF MR. DANIEL WILKINSON.

There used to be a play among young folks when I went to see the girls called "cross questions and unlucky answers," and I think this illustrates it exactly. I was notified that there was a sentiment to be read applying to me, but they would not tell me what it was. You may all take off your hats to me until the first day of July. The court will not be organized till then. After that, if any of these gentlemen, clergymen or laymen, are brought before me as Justice, I shall endeavor to administer to them according to their deserts, and treat them more fairly than I have been treated in this respect.

Mr. Bradley. Is it your pleasure that we shall hear what remains to be heard from the lips of the beautiful and fair? If so, we will turn to them in silence.

"America" was then sung by a choir of young ladies, the Band accompanying them.

Mr. Bradley. Let us close this celebration with the wish that the good old mother town will not wait another hundred years before she assembles her children under the roof-tree of the old homestead again

APPENDIX.

In the preparation of the foregoing address, I have been haunted by the dread of making it too long. For this reason I have omitted many things, which, though interesting, seemed of minor consequence. Now that the final sentence is penned, I find that I could have used more space without rebuke. I therefore append, at the suggestion of some of our older citizens, the reminiscences of David Wilkinson. These have been previously published, but are not, perhaps, generally accessible. It has also seemed to me desirable to publish in a shape convenient for preservation a history of the various bridges built over the Pawtucket. This history was published in the Gazette and Chronicle of April 8th, 1864. M. G.

DAVID WILKINSON'S REMINISCENCES.

AUTUMN, 1846.

In April, 1776, Eleazer Smith, who had been at work for Jeremiah Wilkinson, Junior, a Quaker of Cumberland, came to my father's blacksmith shop, which was making scythes, in the town of Cumberland, Rhode Island, to make a machine to manufacture card teeth, for Daniel Anthony of Providence, who was going into the card making business. While at work, Smith told my father of Jeremiah Wilkinson's making card tacks of cold iron. In laying the strip of leather around the hand card, he lacked four large tacks to hold the corners in place, while driving the tacks around the outer edge. He took a plate of an old door lock off the floor, cut four points with shears, and made heads in the vice; but afterwards made a steel bow with scores in it, and put it in the vice, and in that way made tacks.

I think in 1777 my father made a small pinch press, with different sized impressions, placed on an oak log, with a stirrup for the foot, and set me straddle on the log, to heading nails, which were cut with common shears. He cut the points off of plates drawn by trip-hammer. This was the commencement, in the world, of making nails from cold iron.

I think about 1820 I went to Cumberland with Samuel Greene, my nephew, and purchased of Jeremiah Wilkinson the old shears with which he cut the first four nails. He was, I think, ninety years of age at that time. The shears were a pair of tailor's shears, with bows straightened out, and the blades cut off half the length. They were deposited with the Historical Society, in Providence, by Samuel Greene.

My father, Oziel Wilkinson, lived in the town of Smithfield, Rhode Island, in 1775, at the commencement of the war, and owned a blacksmith shop, with a hammer worked by water. It was here Eleazer Smith made the machine for Daniel Anthony. I was then about five years old, and my curiosity was so great to see the work going on, that my father set me on Mr. Smith's bench, to look on, while he worked. And at this time, seventy years afterwards, I could make a likeness of nearly every piece of that machine,—so durable are the first impressions on the mind of youth. After Smith had finished the machine, so as to make a perfect card tooth, he told the people in the shop that he could make a machine to make the tooth, prick the leather, and set the tooth, at one operation.

Jeremiah Wilkinson carried on the business of making hand cards for carding sheep's wool, and it being difficult to import wire, he drew the wire out by horse power.

In 1784 or '5 my father put the anchor shop in operation at Pawtucket falls, on the Blackstone river, in North Providence, Rhode Island.

About this time I heard of cotton yarn being made in or near East Greenwich, in which John Reynolds and James Macarris, who employed a Mr. Mackwire, or Maguire, to make yarn on a jenny, for which I forged and ground spindles. I made a small machine to grind with, which had a roller of wood to roll on the stone, which turned the spindle against the stone, and so ground the steel spindles perfectly. I heard of no machines for carding cotton.

About this time also, a number of gentlemen in the town of Providence commenced some machinery for working cotton. Andrew Dexter, merchant, the father of S. Newton Dexter of Orickany, Oneida county, New York; Aaron Mann, father of Samuel F. Mann of Providence; Lewis Peck, merchant; Daniel Anthony, and, I think, Moses Brown of Providence, were aiding in the work. My father was applied to, to make iron work for a machine for carding cotton, which was done by the help of a carpenter named Joshua Lindley, and a brass founder named Daniel Jackson, father of Samuel and John Jackson of Providence. The card circles, or rims, were made of wrought iron, as there was no furnace near. The card was put in operation in the Market House chamber, in Providence

and was turned by a colored man named Prince Hopkins, who had lost one leg, and, I think, one arm, in Sullivan's expedition at Newport, a few years before. The cotton was taken from the card in rolls about eighteen inches long, and carried one mile from town to Moses Brown's, where it was made into roping by a young woman in Mr. Brown's employ named Amey Lawrence.

About this time, too, Daniel Anthony made a trip to Bridgewater, and returning said he had some parts of a machine called the Arkwright water frame, which was commenced by a European in the employ of Colonel Orr of Bridgewater, and given up, or the few parts thrown by. He soon had one under way in Providence, which was made and finished in Pawtucket, and put in operation there by Anthony's two sons, Joseph and Richard, assisted occasionally by two other sons, Daniel and William. The rollers were made of half inch wrought iron, with swells of brass cast on, and fluted with files. The bobbin which received the yarn from the spindle was made with a score in the bottom, to receive a cross cat-gut twine, with a tightening wooden thumb-screw, like a violin, to regulate the taking up;—which Mr. Slater performed in his first water frames, by making a wide flat bottom to the bobbin, set on a wooden cloth washer, to regulate the taking up, as the friction would increase by weight as the bobbin filled, and needed more friction. (Mr. Slater ran his first machinery by rope bands, for his carding machines, roping and drawing, as the use of belts was not then known in this country. The first leather belts I ever heard of were made by John Blackburn, when he was setting a mule in operation for Mr. Slater. Mr. Slater informed me there had been a new machine for making yarn got up in England, which was a mixture of the jack and jenny and the Arkwright water frame.)

I assisted the Anthonys in finishing and keeping in order their machine.

There being no cotton gins at the south, they (the Providence people above referred to) imported some of the cotton in seed, and picked it off by hand, which being in bad condition, and the machinery imperfect, they made some few tons of yarn, and laid the machinery by. Moses Brown bought the machinery, and advertised in New York, which brought Mr. Samuel Slater to Providence.

Mr. Slater came out with Moses Brown to my father's at Pawtucket, to commence an Arkwright water frame, and breaker, and two finishers, carding machines. I forged the iron work, and turned the rollers and spindles, in part. All the turning was done with hand tools, and by hand power, with crank wheels. When the card rims and wheels were wanting, I went with Slater to Mansfield, Massachusetts, to a furnace owned by a

French gentleman named Dauby, who came, I think, with Lafayette's army, who has a son and one daughter now living in Utica and Auburn. The card rims broke in cooling. Mr. Slater said the iron shrunk more than the English iron. I told him we would make a crooked arm, that would let the rim move round,—the arms being carried one way, and when the hub cooled would return, and leave the wheel not divided against itself,—which proves a remedy in all cases, if the arms are made the width the right way, to let the curve spring easy, with sufficient strength of iron. I told him cast iron broke more often by division in its own family, than by labor.

About the year 1786–7 my father bought the machinery for cutting iron screws,—called the fly screw, for pressing paper,—of Israel Wilkinson of Smithfield, the son of Israel who built the Hope furnace for the Browns and others,—and with the help of a Mr. Crabb, who was employed by the Browns, John, Joseph, Nicholas and Moses, in building the sperm candle works on what is now called India Point. They used a screw of cast iron, about seven inches in diameter, and five or six feet long, which was cut by setting it upright, with a wooden guide screw, which was connected with an iron socket, with a mortice to hold the cutter, which was fastened with an iron wedge.

After Wilkinson had finished the candle works, with Mr. Crabb, he put in operation works for making screws, in Smithfield, and cut in the same manner as the English plan, brought over by Mr. Crabb. The old man (old Israel Wilkinson) went to different furnaces in Massachusetts to mould his screws. There were no moulders who would undertake it. My father had once seen old Israel Wilkinson mould one screw, and, after he had bought these old tools of young Israel, as he was called, and at a time when he wanted some moulding done, he took me—then about fifteen years old—into his chaise and carried me to Hope furnace, about fourteen miles from Providence, in Scituate, to mould a paper mill screw, as they had no moulder at their furnace who would undertake to mould one. I had never seen a furnace in operation, or seen a thing moulded, in my life. I moulded three or four screws before I left for home. I stayed there about a month. The screws weighed about five hundred pounds each—were [illegible] inch top, with cross holes seven inches diameter, through a lantern [illegible] for a lever seven inches diameter. They were cast in dried-clay mou[illegible] hooped and strapped with iron bands. I took the screws home to P[illegible] tucket, and cut and finished them there. They were made for H[illegible] & Goodwin of New York, and Lazarus Beach of Danbury. Conne[illegible] We made many screws of wrought iron for clothiers' presses and oil [illegible]

but they were imperfect, and I told my father I wanted to make a machine to cut screws on centers, which would make them more perfect. He told me I might commence one. My father, in 1791, built a small air furnace, or reverberatory, for casting iron, in which were cast the first wing-gudgeons known in America, to our knowledge, for Samuel Slater's old factory.

On my way home from the Hope furnace I called at the ore bed in Cranston, and found Mr. Ormsbee (I think Elijah) of Providence repairing the large steam engine, which raised the water seventy-two feet from the bottom of the ore pits. The engine was made with the main cylinder open at the top, and the piston raised with a large balance lever, as the news of the cap on the cylinder by Bolton & Watt had not yet come to this country when that engine was built. Mr. Ormsbee told me he had been reading of a boat being put in operation by steam at the city of Philadelphia, and if I would go home with him and build the engine, he would build a steamboat. I went home and made my patterns, cast and bored the cylinder, and made the wrought iron work, and Ormsbee hired a large boat of John Brown, belonging to one of his large India ships—should think about twelve tons. I told him of two plans of paddles; one I called the flutter wheel, and the other the goose foot paddle. We made the goose foot, to open and shut with hinges, as the driving power could be much cheaper applied than the paddle wheel. After we had got the boat nearly done, Charles Robbins made a pair of paddle wheels, and attached them to a small skiff, and ran about with a crank, by hand power. After having the steamboat in operation, we exhibited it near Providence, between the two bridges; I think, while the bridges were being built. After our frolic was over, being short of funds, we hauled the boat up and gave it over.

About this time a young man called on me, and wished to see the boat, and remained a day or two examining all the works. He told me his name was Daniel French, from Connecticut. I never knew where he came from, nor where he went.

Some three or four years after we laid our boat by, I was at New York, and saw some work commenced at Fulton's Works, for steamboat shafts, and saw a small steamboat in North river, built by Col. John Stevens of Hoboken. I went over to his place, and saw his boring mill. I thought he was ahead of Fulton, as an inventor.

In the winter of 1814–15, hearing of a trial which was coming on before the Legislature of New Jersey, between Robert Fulton and Col. Ogden of New Jersey, I had the curiosity to attend—as I always thought it singular that the idea of the paddle-wheel should strike two persons so, at the

same time, at such a distance apart; yet I knew so simple a thing might happen. I learned in Trenton that Fulton had said he made the draft of the wheel in London. The case in court was managed for Ogden by Hopkinson and Southard; and for Fulton, by Emmet and Sampson. I, being a stranger there, was in the crowd to learn what I could. After the trial was over,—in company with Emmet, Sampson, Fulton, and others,—I took stage for New York; and, in the midst of an extremely heavy snow storm, wallowed our way along as far as Jersey City, where we found all the houses full, and no mail had crossed to New York for two days. Fulton, Emmet and Sampson took a boat, with four oarsmen, and got over by crossing the cakes of floating ice, and launching the boat several times. The boat returned with General Brown and suite. The next boat took me, with several others. Not long after I arrived home, I saw an account of Fulton's death.

About the year 1840, I was on the railroad from Utica to Albany, with an aged gentleman in the cars, and the subject of steam power came up, when I informed him of my early acquaintance with steam power, &c. He was a well informed man, and, I think, had been a member of Assembly. He said he thought more credit had been given to Fulton than was his due; that Col. John Stevens was more deserving than Fulton. I told him I never thought Fulton an inventor, but simply a busy collector of other people's inventions. "Well," replied the gentleman, "I always said so; and he would never have succeeded had it not been for Daniel French." "What do you mean by Daniel French?" asked I. "Why, a Yankee," said he, "that Fulton kept locked up for six months, making drafts for him."

The name of Daniel French burst upon my ears for the first time for forty-nine years, and almost explained some mysteries.

In 1798, when in Philadelphia, I called in at the Museum, and saw an old bald-head eagle walking about the yard. The keeper, who, I think, was named Peal, told me the eagle was ninety-six years old; that he was taken from the nest ninety-six years before, at Halifax, or Nova Scotia, and that he would have a new bill in four years. Four years after, I saw mention in a Philadelphia paper that the old eagle had got a new bill on. I had never seen any other account of the eagle, except in scripture,—of his renewing his age, like the eagle.

In or about 1794, Col. Noami Baldwin came from Boston to Pawtucket, after machinery for a canal he was going to make, north from Boston. We made the patterns and cast his wheels, racks, &c., and he took them to Charlestown and finished the locks. I was there and saw the operation

It being the first canal in the country, a good deal of curiosity was excited among the people.

About this time I saw the platform hay scales at Charlestown Neck, at what was called Page's Tavern. The plan of the scales was brought from Ireland by a Mr. Cox of Boston, who built the old Warren bridge, from Boston to Charlestown, and who was called to Ireland to build a bridge there. On his return to Boston, he brought a three-wheeled carriage, with a Shetland pony, for his son, and the plan of the platform scales, which has been the subject of so many patents in the United States.

We cast at Pawtucket the iron for the draw for the Cambridge bridge.

A Mr. Mills, who built the South Boston bridge, came to me for the machinery for the bridge. I fixed the patterns, and went to Raynham, got the castings, and carried them to Boston, for the first new bridge.

Jeptha Wilkinson, Junior, nephew of Jeremiah Wilkinson, invented a machine for making weavers' steel reeds by water power.

Gardner Wilkinson invented the rolling axletree in two parts, so useful on railroad curves, &c. He also made the morticing machine, and, I think, he and his brother made the pivot bridge used on canals.

About 1794 my father built a rolling and slitting mill at Pawtucket, on the gudgeon of the wheel of which I put my new screw machine in operation, which was on the principle of the guage or sliding lathe now in every workshop almost throughout the world; the perfection of which consists in that most faithful agent *gravity*, making the joint, and that almighty perfect number *three*, which is harmony itself. I was young when I learnt that principle. I had never seen my grandmother putting a chip under a three-legged milking stool; but she always had to put a chip under a four-legged table, to keep it steady. I cut screws of all dimensions by this machine, and did them perfectly.

I now made a model in miniature, and had thought of trying to procure a patent, but was afraid there might be something somewhere to interfere with me, already in use. So I started off to make inquiries. I went to New York, and found an Englishman in Greenwich street, on North river, named Barton, making clothiers' screws. He was welding an iron guide on the end of his tap, and forcing it through a socket with an iron bar, by hand, which was the old imperfection that troubled me always. I could hear of no other in New York. I had heard of one in Canaan, in Connecticut. I went on board a sloop, old Captain Wicks of Long Island, master, bound for Albany. In five days I landed at Fishkill, and went ashore, and walked some thirty miles to Canaan. I found screws made there by Forbes & Adams, by water power, but they welded on, and forced through

a socket in the old way. I heard of screws being made in Canaan, from Abram Burt of Taunton, Massachusetts. He called at Pawtucket, and looking at the old machine I was at work with by horse power, said he had been making screws at Canaan by water power; that he could "set his cutter in the socket, draw the gate, and then it lathered away like the devil," which I fully believed when I saw the machine. I returned to New York, and from there went to Philadelphia, and found no screws made there except after the same mode as in New York. I heard of screws being made on the Brandywine, but my informant assured me they were made the same way as his and Barton's, at New York. I now returned home, and in the year 1797 went on to Philadelphia, when Congress was in session, and made application for a patent; Mr. Joseph Tillinghast, then a Senator from Rhode Island, assisting me. On my return home, my father informed me that Jacob Perkins had been there, and wanted to see my machine, and that when he saw it he laughed out, and remarked that he could do his engraving on cast steel, for bank note plates, with that machine,—that he could make a hair stroke with that, for it would never tremble,—that he could put an oval under the end of the rut, and, with an eccentric, make all his oval figures. I suppose Mr. Perkins afterwards derived great benefit from the thing.

Whilst I was at work on Slater's machinery, the owners were unwilling that I should make a slide lathe on the principle of my screw machine, which was made for large turning; it was too heavy for cotton machinery. Mr. Slater said he had heard of one being made in England since he left, which would turn rollers. He wrote to Derbyshire, to his brother, John Slater, to come over, and bring a man who could build one. John came, and brought a Mr. John Blackburn, who made a slide lathe, which was on the principle of the old fluting machine, with the slide rest grooved in, in four edges, on two edged bars, forced in towards each other by wedges, in mortices, behind the tenon. They worked this lathe some few weeks, and then threw it out of doors, and afterwards did their work by the old hand tool, as before.

About that time my father, brothers, brothers-in-law William Wilkinson and Timothy Greene, and James, William and Christopher Rhodes, purchased a water power on the Quinnebaug river, Connecticut, at Pomfret, and commenced building a cotton factory. These owners consented that I might build a guage lathe like my large one. I then went to work, and made my patterns in Sylvanus Brown's shop, in Pawtucket. I left out the three friction rollers from under the rut, as for light work and slow motion I was willing to risk the friction.

About this time a company in Providence got a master machinist from England, named Samuel Ogden, to build a factory at Hope furnace. He was a man of great experience and good abilities. He advised me as a friend to abandon my new machine, for, said he, "you can *ner* do it, for we have tried it out and out at *'ome*, and given it up; and don't you think we should have been doing it at *'ome*, if it could have been done?"

Mr. Pitkin of East Hartford had an Englishman named Warburton with him, building a factory. Warburton told me "*they* could never make our work in Europe,—that Watt & Bolton gave it to a man for a month's work to finish a piston rod, with hand tools."

When I had finished my patterns for the lathe, and was all ready to start next morning for the furnace in Foxborough, Sylvanus Brown took it into his head to put them into the stove and burn them up. I made others then, and got them cast, and made my lathe, and it worked to a charm. Mr. Richard Anthony, who was building a factory in Coventry, with his brother William, paid me ten dollars for the use of my lathe patterns, to cast after. And this is all I ever received for so valuable an invention.

Captain Benjamin Walcott, father of the Walcotts at York Mills, Oneida county, New York, and of Edward Walcott of Pawtucket, with Nathan J. Sweetland, put the "live centre" arbour, and the rack, in place of the screw for the feeder, to a lathe they built afterwards. But, on long experience, the screw is found best, and the two "dead centres" will make the truest work,—though they are not quite so convenient, perhaps, as the "live centre" arbour. But the two great principles of my machine can never be improved upon,—that is, *three bearings* to the rest, and *weight* to hold it down, where you may weigh your friction to an ounce.

The slide lathe has been sent to all parts of the world. A certain mechanic commenced business in this country, but after using one of my slide lathes a while, he bought one, and returned to England with it; remarking, that with that lathe in England, he could do better than at any business he could get into in this country.

It was unfortunate for me patenting my machine when the machine making and manufacturing business in this country was only in its infancy. The patent would run out before it could be brought into very extensive use. It certainly did run out without my deriving that benefit from the invention I was so justly entitled to. One solitary ten dollar note is surely but small recompense for an improvement that is worth all the other tools in use in any workshop in the world, for finishing brass and iron work.

The weighted slide, the joint made by gravity, applies to planing, turning, and boring of metals of every kind, and every way, as it needs no

watching, and, instead of wearing *out* of repair, it is always wearing *into* repair.

I was always too much engaged in various business to look after and make profit out of my inventions. Other people, I hope, gained something by them.

We built machinery to go to almost every part of the country,—to Pomfret and Killingly, Connecticut; to Hartford, Vermont; to Waltham, Norton, Raynham, Plymouth, Halifax, Plympton, Middleboro', and other places in Massachusetts; for Wall & Wells, Trenton, New Jersey; for Union & Gray, on the Patapsco; for the Warren factories, on the Gunpowder, near Baltimore; to Tarboro' and Martinburgh, North Carolina; to two factories in Georgia; to Louisiana; to Pittsburgh; to Delaware; to Virginia, and other places. Indeed, Pawtucket was doing something for almost every part of the Union, and I had my hands too full of business, and was laboring too much for the *general prosperity*, to take proper care of the details, perhaps, and the advancement of my own individual interests.

In 1829 we all broke down; and although I was sixty years of age, and in very bad health, I thought I would move away, and see if I could not my earn my own living. I moved with my family to Cohoes Falls, in the State of New York, and there fixed my new home. I have since recovered my health wonderfully, and, at this moment, being about seventy-six years old, I am hearty and well—enjoy my food as well as any one, and can bear a good deal of fatigue and exposure. Few men of my age enjoy their faculties and health better than I do. Have I not much to be thankful for? I have, and am most sincerely thankful to a merciful God for the many and great blessings.

The prospects at Cohoes were flattering for a time. But nullification, free trade, and such abominations, killed the new village just born. Europeans who were applying for water power at Cohoes at this time, went away, saying, now we were going to have free trade; they could do our work cheaper at "'ome" than they could in this country, and they would build their factories there.

We were compelled now to get our living where we could,—to go abroad, if we could not get work at home. I went to work on the Delaware and Raritan Canal, in New Jersey; then on the St. Lawrence improvements, in Canada; then to Ohio, on the Sandy and Beaver Canal; then to the new Wire bridge, on the Ottawa river, at Bytown, Canada, and Virginia. Wherever I could find anything to do, I went: and it is wonderful how I endured exposure to wet and cold as I did.

In 1835–6, while engaged on the St. Lawrence river, I met a gentleman at Kingston, who advised me to go back of the Rideau lake, to get what I wanted, about seventy miles north of Kingston, to a village named Perth, which was given to the officers and soldiers who served in the late war with the United States. At the hotel at Perth, the landlord showed me a silver clasp which was taken from the leg of a large eagle which was shot in the village. The plate, or clasp, was from some place in Connecticut; I do not remember the town, nor the person's name; but directed to Henry Clay. It was after the war, and the bearer of the express probably thought he might safely take a circuitous route through the British provinces. But these Canadians didn't like the name of Henry Clay; his policy had too anti-British a tendency to suit them; so they took the poor express eagle as a spy, I suppose, and refused to sell the clasp at any price. Perhaps they wanted to have the story to tell, that our American eagle had been struck to them, at least.

These are the recollections of an old man, and you will please take them for what they are worth. If they are worth anything to any one, I shall be glad. To yourself, I believe they will be valuable, and be the means of recalling many pleasant incidents of olden times, and of an old friend.

David Wilkinson.

Cohoes, Albany County, N. Y.,
December 1, 1846.

Rev. George Taft, Pawtucket, R. I.

HISTORY OF PAWTUCKET BRIDGES.

The following interesting history of the bridges built over the Pawtucket river, was presented by the Presidents of Firewards, at the annual meeting of the District of Pawtucket, held on April 4th, 1864:

The Presidents of Firewards take this opportunity to congratulate the citizens of the District upon being relieved from all liabilities assumed by them more than six years ago, toward the erection of the stone bridge across the river in this village. It will be remembered by most of you, that bonds to the amount of twelve thousand dollars were issued by the District, the payment of which was assumed and guaranteed by the State of Rhode Island. The last of these bonds for two thousand dollars fell due on the first day of July last, and was paid, thereby relieving the District from any further liabilities.

As the building of the present stone bridge, of such a substantial and permanent character, was an event of the greatest importance to the business and travel of our village, it has been suggested that a brief and comprehensive sketch or history of the various bridges across the river at this place, running back nearly or quite one hundred and fifty years, might prove interesting to the present inhabitants, and find a place on the records of the District, which can be referred to in years to come.

From an examination of the State records of Rhode Island and Massachusetts, it has been ascertained that up to the year 1746, the bridges were built and kept in repair by the two States jointly. In 1712 a joint committee was appointed by the two States, to make a thorough examination of the bridge then standing, and if in their judgment they deemed it necessary, they were authorized and empowered to destroy the old bridge and build a new one. At that time the bridge crossed the river over the "Fishing Rock," (so called,) a little south of the present locality, and the road passed up through the coal yard to Main street. The bridge and the roads connected with it at that time constituted a part of the great thoroughfare for travel from Boston, through the State of Rhode Island, to New York.

In 1746 the General Assembly of Rhode Island appointed a committee to run a new boundary line between this State and Massachusetts, and from that time up to the present, Massachusetts has refused to appropriate any money towards said bridge, or to exercise any ownership or control over it.

From 1712 to 1840, Rhode Island, as appears by the records of the General Assembly, took action and passed votes and resolutions in more than eighty instances, in relation to the Pawtucket Bridge.

The records of the town of North Providence also show various resolutions and votes—the appointment of committees, and the appropriation of money for repairs and toward the erection of the bridge.

On the 15th day of February, 1807, about two-thirds of the west end of the bridge was swept away by what is called the "Great Freshet." The General Assembly of Rhode Island took immediate action in the matter, and appointed Abraham Wilkinson, who was the Representative from North Providence at the time, a committee to rebuild the bridge, and an appropriation was made for that purpose.

In 1817 the bridge was rebuilt, (under the direction of John W. Dexter, Surveyor of Highways for North Providence,) principally by an appropriation from the town of North Providence.

In 1832 the bridge was again rebuilt, under the supervision and direction of Messrs. Clark Sayles and Isaac Ellis, at an expense of about sixteen

hundred dollars—six hundred of which was an appropriation from the town of North Providence, and the balance of one thousand dollars, by subscription made by the inhabitants on both sides of the river.

In 1839, the bridge needing repairs, much dissatisfaction was expressed by the tax-payers of North Providence at being further taxed, believing that the bridge belonged to the State of Rhode Island, and that the State should bear the expense. Messrs. Stephen Randall, Jr., and Edward S. Wilkinson, who were the members of the General Assembly from North Providence, commenced an examination of the records of the General Assembly, to ascertain who rightfully should maintain the bridge. Commencing back nearly or quite one hundred and fifty years, and making a careful and minute examination up to the year 1839, they found the evidence so strong, that at the January session of the General Assembly in 1840, Mr. Wilkinson introduced a resolution into that body, appointing a committee "to ascertain who is bound to keep the bridge over Pawtucket Falls in repair." Messrs. Randolph of Newport, Mathewson of Scituate, E. R. Potter of South Kingstown, Spencer of Warwick, and Bosworth of Warren were that committee. Subsequently, William A. Robinson of South Kingstown was appointed in the place of E. R. Potter.

The committee of the General Assembly held several meetings, and the evidence that had been collected by Messrs. Randall and Wilkinson was laid before them. After hearing all the evidence, the committee came to the unanimous conclusion that the bridge was State property, and that it was incumbent on the State to maintain and keep it in repair. In accordance with that decision, they submitted their report to the May session of the General Assembly, with a recommendation that the Providence and Pawtucket Turnpike (which then had become State property) be extended through Pleasant and Main streets in the village of Pawtucket to the Massachusetts line, including the Pawtucket Bridge. In accordance with that report, at that same session the following act was passed:

"*Be it enacted by the General Assembly as follows:*

"That said road be, and the same is hereby extended as the road is now established from the present northern termination thereof, to the Massachusetts line, including the bridge at Pawtucket Falls, in the township of North Providence and in the village of Pawtucket; and the agent of said turnpike for the State, is hereby directed to take charge of said bridge and additional road, and keep the same in proper repair. And said agent is also hereby required to make an annual report to the General Assembly at its January session."

At a special session of the General Assembly in March, 1842, the following resolutions were introduced by Mr. Edward S. Wilkinson, and adopted:

"*Resolved*, That Stephen Randall, Jr., Gideon L. Spencer and Edward S. Wilkinson be authorized to erect a substantial wood bridge over the falls at Pawtucket, provided the expense thereof does not exceed the sum of three thousand dollars.

"*Resolved*, That the agent of the State having charge of the Pawtucket Turnpike Road, be directed (after having paid for the necessary repairs of said road) to retain in his hands the balance of the moneys that may be collected on the said turnpike, from and after the 1st day of April, 1842, for the purpose of paying the expense of erecting the aforesaid bridge; and to pay over the aforesaid amount of three thousand dollars to the order of the Building Committee, in such sums and at such times as they may require."

The committee at once entered into a contract with Mr. Albert Cottrell of Newport, and a new bridge was built in the summer of 1843 for $3000.

Complaints being made to the General Assembly at their January session, 1857, that the bridge was very much out of repair, and even dangerous for travel, they appointed a committee, consisting of Jonathan C. Kenyon of North Providence, Stephen N. Mason of Smithfield, Nathaniel Spaulding of Smithfield, James C. Moulton of Cumberland, and Obadiah Brown of North Providence, to examine Pawtucket Bridge, and decide whether the present bridge could be repaired, or whether a new bridge would have to be erected.

The town of North Providence, at their April town meeting of the same year, appointed a committee, consisting of John H. Weeden, Gideon L. Spencer, Andrew R. Slade, Enoch Brown and Edward S. Wilkinson, to meet and confer with the State committee in regard to the bridge. Early that season the State committee met at Pawtucket; the town committee met at the same time, and a thorough examination of the bridge was made. The State committee came to the unanimous conclusion that it was absolutely necessary to erect a new bridge, and that it ought to be done immediately. Some estimates were made of the cost of a new bridge, and it was found that to build a bridge of wood, would cost five or six thousand dollars—to erect a stone bridge would incur an expense of twelve or fifteen thousand dollars. The State committee raised the objection that the constitution prohibited the General Assembly from creating a debt exceeding the sum of fifty thousand dollars, and that the debt of the State already

amounted to about that sum. The State committee, with the constitutional objection, could not see their way clear to recommend the erection of a bridge by the State, and decided to report the facts.

At this stage of the proceedings, Mr. Edward S. Wilkinson, one of the town committee, stated that he had foreseen the constitutional objection, and had been maturing in his own mind some plan to overcome the difficulty. He then made the proposition,—that the General Assembly should authorize the District of Pawtucket to issue its bonds for the purpose of raising funds to build a stone bridge. At the same time, the General Assembly should pledge the net amount of tolls, collected from the Providence and Pawtucket Turnpike, for the payment of principal and interest of said bonds. He estimated that a stone bridge could be erected for about twelve thousand dollars. From a careful examination of the receipts of the turnpike, the last ten years, a basis could be arrived at to fix the income for the next few years. Upon that basis he estimated that a small annual appropriation from the State treasury, together with the annual income from the road, two thousand dollars of the principal and the interest on said bonds would be paid each year, and that in the course of six years the whole amount of bonds would be liquidated. This plan was favorably received, and at the request of the committee he drew up an act, embracing the main features as proposed, and also a statement containing an estimate of the receipts of tolls for the next six years, and also a statement of the estimated amount that would annually be required to be paid from the State treasury.

The State committee made their report at the next session, recommending the erection of a stone bridge, which report was accepted and adopted. Subsequently the following act was passed:

"AN ACT in relation to Pawtucket Bridge.

"*It is enacted by the General Assembly as follows:*

"Section 1. Lewis Fairbrother, Enoch Brown and Daniel Wilkinson are hereby appointed commissioners to receive proposals for the erection of a stone bridge across the Pawtucket river, at the east end of the State turnpike, and to superintend the erection of the same, provided its total cost shall not exceed the sum of twelve thousand dollars.

"Sec. 2. The 'District of Pawtucket' are hereby authorized and empowered, at any regular meeting of said District, to issue bonds not exceeding the sum of twelve thousand dollars, bearing interest at the rate of six per cent. per annum, payable semi-annually. The proceeds of said bonds are to be used by the commissioners to defray the costs of the erection of the aforesaid bridge.

"Sec. 3. The net amount of tolls collected from the State Turnpike are hereby appropriated, together with such other sum as may be found necessary, to be paid from the State treasury, for the purpose of liquidating the interest on the aforesaid bonds, and two thousand dollars of the principal of said bonds annually until the whole are discharged.

"Sec. 4. The agent of the State Turnpike is hereby directed to retain in his hands the net amount of tolls collected from said turnpike, and from the same to pay the interest on the aforesaid bonds, and draw on the General Treasurer for such amount as may be necessary to annually discharge the amount to be paid as specified in the preceding section."

The commissioners under the act at once secured the services of Samuel B. Cushing, Esq., of Providence, as engineer, to draft a plan, with specifications, for a stone bridge. Proposals were advertised for, and when opened, the commissioners found that such a bridge as was designed and needed, could not be built for the amount appropriated by the State. Fifteen thousand dollars would be required. The District of Pawtucket authorized their treasurer to issue bonds to the amount of twelve thousand dollars—two thousand dollars of which were to mature annually. The bonds were issued and placed in the hands of the commissioners. Application was made to the towns of North Providence and Pawtucket to contribute the three thousand dollars wanted to make up the fifteen thousand dollars. By votes in special town meetings, those two towns contributed the sum of fifteen hundred dollars each. With the fifteen thousand dollars thus secured, the commissioners at once entered into a contract with Mr. Luther Kinsley of Fall River to build the bridge, and at the same time engaged Samuel B. Cushing, Esq., as engineer, to superintend the work.

The heavy rains of that summer rendered it hazardous to commence the work that season, and the commissioners concluded to delay the work till the following year. During the fall and winter of 1857 the stone was being quarried and put in shape. All due preparations being made, on the 6th day of July, 1858, travel was suspended on the old bridge, and its demolition commenced. From that day the work was vigorously prosecuted, and the present stone bridge, built complete in all its parts, was opened for travel on the 4th day of November, 1858. The event was one of signal satisfaction to all of our citizens, and the day was given up to public rejoicings. The bridge is an ornament to our village. Its beauty and symmetry have been the admiration of all who have seen it, reflecting the highest credit upon Mr. Cushing, the engineer, and Mr. Kinsley, the builder. It will stand long after all those who now travel over it, have passed into the spirit-land. Time, only, can work its decay.

The foregoing brief history discloses the fact, that to our fellow-citizen, Mr. Edward S. Wilkinson, this community are in a very great degree indebted for the present noble structure, and we take pleasure in thus putting upon record the merit that is due him.

Respectfully submitted.

G. A. Mumford,
Secretary Presidents of Firewards.

Pawtucket, April 4, 1864.

Note.—In the history of the newspapers of North Providence, on page 38 of the foregoing address, it should have been mentioned that Shubael Kinnicutt, Esq., was associated with Mr. Sherman in the original establishment of the Gazette in 1838. In January, 1864, Mr. Ansel D. Nickerson purchased an interest in the establishment, and became associated in the publication of the Gazette and Chronicle. M. G.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

PAGE

Action in Town Meeting 5
Transactions of Committee of Arrangements 6
THE CELEBRATION 7
Order of Procession 7
Route of Procession 8
EXERCISES AT THE CHURCH 9
Original Hymn 9
Prayer 9–11
Original Hymn 11
INTRODUCTORY NOTE 12
CENTENNIAL ADDRESS 13–52
Settlement of the town 13
Incorporation of the town, etc 14–21
Industrial history 21–36
Fire Department 36
Banks 37
Newspapers 38
Bridges over the Pawtucket 38–40
Education 40
Patriotic history 41–44
Moral history 44–50
First Sunday School 45
First Baptist Church 46
Second Baptist Church 46
St. Paul's Church 47
Methodist Church 47
Universalist Church 47
Pawtucket Congregational Church 48
Roman Catholic Church 48
Allendale Chapel 48
Church of the Immaculate Conception 48
Religious influences, and concluding remarks 49–52
Closing exercises at the church 52
DINNER SPEECHES 53–74
Remarks of Hon. C. S. Bradley 53
" " Rev. Dr. Sears 54–57
" " Justice Brayton 58–59
" " Moses Pierce, Esq 58–59
" " Hon. Thomas Davis 59–64
" " Rev. Mr. Goodrich 64–67
" " Rev. D. H. Ela 67–68
Letters from Gov. Smith and Mayor Doyle 68–
Remarks of Rev. Dr. Benedict 70–73
" " Mr. C. H. Spaulding 73–74
" " Mr. Daniel Wilkinson 74
Closing exercises 74
APPENDIX 74–84
Reminiscences of David Wilkinson 75–83
History of Pawtucket Bridges 83–84

HISTORICAL SKETCH

— OF THE —

TOWN OF RICHMOND,

— FROM —

1747 to 1876,

Comprising a Period of One Hundred and Twenty-nine Years.

— PREPARED BY —

JAMES R. IRISH, D. D.,

— AND —

DELIVERED JULY 4TH, 1876,

AT WOOD RIVER GROVE.

HOPE VALLEY, R. I.:
L. W. A. COLE, JOB PRINTER,
1877.

PREFATORY.

To the Honorable, the Town Council of Richmond.

SIRS: When your committee invited me to write a historical paper to be read to the citizens of Richmond, on the centennial anniversary day of the nation, the state of my health and prior public engagements, forbid my using more than a moiety of the few weeks intervening, in gathering and arranging the facts to be presented on that occasion. This was all the more difficult from my limited acquaintance with the persons and records whence the facts must be gathered.

Here, I wish to record my sense of obligation to the Town Clerk, and other members of the committee, for their timely aid in my work. Gratitude is due to the many citizens on whom I called, for the kindly manner in which they welcomed my inquiries, and for the cheerful way in which they unlocked, for my use, the stores of their memories and the libraries of their records.

The first paper was prepared in view of the *day* and the *occasion*, rather than with a view to its future use. I had become so impressed with the defects of its arrangement, and the limited scope of its included facts, that I thought it should be *re-written*, rather than copied for record. I so stated to the Town Clerk on the day of its delivery. Although the first paper had been accepted and approved by your committee, as a paper to be *read*, the re-writing was determined on. I am, however, impressed with a sense of the imperfection of my work, but, such as it is, I submit it to you, asking you to reject any portion you may disapprove, and I will willingly receive suggestions to alter any part where it may be improved.

I have written no history of your common schools, believing you have already a better history of them than I could write.

I am more than willing you should insert the document prepared by Mr. N. K. Church, if due credit be given him for his valuable production.

Yours respectfully,

J. R. IRISH.

ROCKVILLE, Dec. 4, 1876.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

— OF THE —

TOWN OF RICHMOND, R. I.

———o———

The history of this town, during its settlement, can be traced only in connection with the history of Westerly, as it was a part of its territory for sixty-nine years after its organization.

Still earlier, the entire area, from Narragansett bay to Pawcatuck river, and the bay at its mouth (early known as little Narragansett) was a subject of controversy, being claimed in turn by Connecticut and Massachusetts, in opposition to the claim of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations.

According to Wilson's history, Connecticut received, in 1660, a royal charter embracing the territory from Narragansett bay and the river, westward to the Pacific ocean. The following year, Rhode Island received from the same royal authority, a charter extending its limits westward to Narragansett river, which the King explained as identical with Pawcatuck river.

The authorities in each colony laid claim to the whole. This became a source of much uneasiness during the early years of its occupancy. The first settlements along the southern shore were made by adventurers from Rhode Island.

As our family traditions pass it down to us, the first of these was by heroic lovers, who, despite the opposition of forbidding parents, committed themselves to each other, and the providence of God, and tried the fortunes of the wilderness. Landing on the east side of Pawcatuck river, at the mouth of Massatuxet brook, they built themselves a wigwam. There they lived in friendly intercourse with the natives and reared their family.

This couple were John Babcock and Mary Lawton. Their first child, James Babcock, was the first male white child born in the Narragansett territory. From these, sprang the numerous family of Babcocks, in Westerly and vicinity. When their place of retreat was communicated, by the natives, to settlers at Newport, others came and settled around them. About the same time, 1642, a colony from Connecticut, and others from Massachusetts, settled at Wickford. As these colonies increased in numbers, jealousies ensued, and the rival claims of the authorities were pushed with a bitterness that threatened disastrous consequences. Artful diplomacies on either side, made the controversy only more complicated, till ruptures, arrests and bloodshed brought the crisis before the Crown. To settle the dispute, a *quo warranto* was issued by order of the king, in 1665. Both charters were dissolved and the government assumed by the King. By various fortunes, the settlements progressed, and

at length the disputed territory was accorded to the jurisdiction of Rhode Island. That portion bordering on the ocean between Narragansett bay and Pawcatuck river was denominated King's county or King's province.

The western part was originally called Misquamicut. While Connecticut held it, she called it Haversham.

In May, 1669, it was organized by the General Assembly of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, under the name of Westerly, as the fifth town in the colony. Westerly, as then organized, embraced what is now the four towns: Westerly, Charlestown, Richmond and Hopkinton.

On the fourth Tuesday of August, 1738, a town was set off, bearing the name: Charlestown.

The line of division commences where Wood River emerges from Exeter, and follows the course of this river to where it empties into the Pawcatuck. It then follows the course of the Pawcatuck two miles; thence it runs directly south to the open sea. Population increased quite rapidly for a time, and on the third Tuesday of August, (18th,) 1747, Richmond was by an Act of the General Assembly set off as a separate town.

The Act authorizing the separation reads as follows:

"Be it enacted by the General Assembly, and by the authority thereof, it is enacted: That the town of Charlestown, in the County of King's county, in the Province of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, be divided into two towns, by a river that runs across said town, by the name of Pawcatuck river.

"All the lands to the southward of said river, shall retain the name of Charlestown; and that, all the land to the northward of said river, be, and hereby is incorporated into a township, by the name of Richmond, and to have and enjoy the like privileges as the other towns in this colony."

The Act further made provision for calling a town meeting of the *freemen* of the town for the appointment of officers, and, generally, to put in running order the machinery of a living organization.

During the colonial period, and some time after the declaration of independence, the elective franchise was exercised only by those who had taken the *freeman's oath.*

This oath bound the several electors against

"BRIBERY AND CORRUPTION."

It was further required, that any man proposing to become a freeman, should have his name propounded at a town meeting previous to taking the oath, in order that if required, he might show proof of a clean record. The records of the colonial legislature show that he should also be propounded before the General Assembly.

Though the formula of this oath has passed away, it were well if the sons of these venerable fathers should, for a centennial vow, revive the *spirit* of that political standard, so that "bribery and corruption" shall henceforth rank in the public *conscience* with mendacity, perjury, treason, and other base and venal crimes.

Young men of Richmond, lend me your ears! As you value the institutions of a free republic, and as you would

transmit them unsullied to posterity, cherish and maintain the *purity of the ballot box*. When freemen carry their votes into the public mart, to be bought and sold as merchandise, they have sapped the very foundations of true liberty, and opened the flood gates of every villainous and corrupt practice. Scarce a greater insult could be offered to a virtuous patriot, than to proffer a *price for his vote*. Give to such panderers for political favor a wide berth and let them know that they shall have the reward that such servility deserves. We shall worthily hail the reminiscences that our Centennial affords, only as we cull from the deeds of our fathers such fruit as shall add to our own love of that which is excellent and praiseworthy. Let us so use the garnered virtues of the past, that, transplanted to the garden of the future, posterity may gather rich fruitage, made thirty, sixty or an hundred fold more grand and noble by the high vantage ground which a new century, with its increased facilities, may impart. To ascribe to them the meed that is their due, we must take a gauge of the impediments that they must needs surmount. Without the benefits of pioneer experience, they, with meager facilities, subdued a forest wilderness, in the face of a treacherous foe, whose rights they little understood. They found a climate more rigorous than that to which they were accustomed. They had almost no help from the skilled appliances of machinery. The doctrine of equal rights was so little understood, that untold losses sprang from the selfish greed that so often provoked retaliation on the part of those whose rights were encroached. Wars not only wasted their resources, but cut off the opportunities of resource.

With such hindrances to encounter, we wonder that they achieved so much. Upon our vantage ground it becomes us to raise higher the standard, and develop and exemplifiy a nobler patriotism, a more refined cultivation, a broader citizenship, a purer christianity, and a richer grace than has come down to us from the straits of the past.

The history of Richmond strictly begins with its incorporation as a town. There are, however, materials out of which that history is in part formed, that call us to recount some events that come from an earlier date.

As one of the moving impulses, and perhaps the *most* moving that prompted our fathers to leave the lands that gave them birth, to find an abode in the wilderness, was the hope of "freedom to worship God," we may, with propriety inquire, first, after the history of religion in this town.

THE CHURCHES.

How early societies, or churches, were formed in the town, no record shows. Sure it is, that the earliest records known, give account of churches, or societies, existing and acting as perennial organizations.

The first of these was the Wood River, or Six-Principle Baptist church, of Richmond. Its earliest known record dates A. D. 1723, when they called Daniel Averitt, of Providence, to be their minister. He accepted the call and soon moved among them, but was not ordained as *pastor* until May 25, 1732. In 1733, two deacons were appointed, and another in 1735.

From this date there is a break in the records till 1770, when John Pendleton was chosen pastor. Subsequently, this church enjoyed the pastoral labors of Elders Henry Joslin, from 1788 to 1806; Joseph James, from 1810 a number of years, when, through the infirmities of age, he was unable to serve them. For some years previous to 1833, Elders William Manchester, John Gardiner, Pardon Tillinghast and Thomas Tillinghast, were ministerial supplies, rather as evangelists than pastors. At the last date,

Elder Thomas Tillinghast was chosen pastor, who served them with great acceptance for twenty-nine years, when, in consequence of growing infirmities and age, he asked a release from the pastoral care, and his son, Gilbert Tillinghast, was chosen to that charge, in which he has served to the present time. This church has been blessed with a succession of faithful deacons, and many active members, by whom the hands of the pastors have been held up, and their joint labors have done much to mold the opinions and character of the men of the town. Their seasons of worship have been characterized as peculiarly social, as compared with the worship of many other congregations. They have retained more of the style and manner of past generations than most other churches. The old fashioned religion, and the old forms of expressing the emotional elements of religious experience, find favor with them, especially in their covenant meetings.

The first house of worship, built by this church, was probably erected on the lot now occupied by said church. The deed of said lot bears date and is recorded in the town records as follows: "In the year of our Sovereign Lord, George the Third," Nov. 13, 1769. For the sum of two pounds paid to the husband, and five shillings paid to the wife, William, and Hannah Kenyon his wife, deeded to Benjamin Barber, Stephen Wilcox, Thomas Kenyon, John Tefft, and William Tefft, of Richmond, Nathan Barber and Robert Kenyon, of Hopkinton, members of the Society of Baptists, in Richmond, holding the six principles mentioned in Hebrews, vi:1, one acre of land in trust for said society, and their successors, to erect such buildings thereon "as

they shall deem proper," etc. Additions to the lot have since been made for cemetery, etc.

The first house of worship built in town, is supposed to have been put up by the Quakers, on a lot containing one acre, deeded in the second month, 28th day, A. D. 1755, by John Knowles, to Solomon Hoxsie, Stephen Hoxsie, John Collins, Jr., Simeon Tucker, Jr., and John Knowles, Jr., in consideration of ten pounds, New England currency, old tenor, as a meeting house lot, and for a burying ground. The house of worship seems to have been begun before the deed was given, as we find by the record of the monthly meeting held the first of the seventh month, 1754. An addition was reported "to the subscription for the meeting house that is building in Richmond, of £51 5s. Friends appointed to carry on said building report, that they have laid out the money subscribed, and that there is yet wanting of the supposed cost £260, which we recommend to the notice of the next quarterly meeting." These monthly meetings included with Richmond, South Kingstown and Westerly; Hopkinton not having yet been set off from Westerly. How early meetings of worship were held by the Quakers in this town, is not known, but tradition says, long before the records in the monthly meeting.

The first monthly meeting recorded was held the third month and 30th day, 1743. From a portion of the record it is supposed the habit of keeping continuous records had not been previously adopted. That note reads as follows: "This meeting, deeming it needful to have books provided to keep the records for the recording of the minutes of this meeting, and also marriages, and deaths, and births, this

meeting do appoint Peter Davis to provide paper and put it in order. No further business at present. This meeting ended."

The first record of the women's preparative, or monthly meeting, bears even date with the above. Both records show a watchful and loving care of the members for each other, and a faithful and jealous care for the honor of religion, and the virtue and purity of the society. Their rebukes of delinquent members, while kind, were firm. Their witness against the wrongs of society, whether popular or unpopular, were such as to give great power to their influence on the public mind. The barberous persecutions which they received from professed religionists of other sects, may be an apology for the exclusiveness they practiced towards all outside worshippers. Removals and deaths seem to have thinned their numbers in the section around their house of worship in this town, and it was eventually given up as a place of worship. The last meeting held in it was a funeral sometime in August 1844; ninety years from the time of its erection. The guard thrown around the marriage institution by this denomination, is worthy of honorable mention, and if those principles were somehow interwoven in our statute regulations and carried out in the social relations of society, our land would be greatly benefited, and the future less reproach than the present generation by divorces.

A record of their order, in the preliminaries and rite of marriage, may be new and interesting to many of our citizens, and as this may be most intelligently shown by the details of an example, I take this method. The example I

select is the marriage of a pair of my ancestors, but it does not differ materially from others in the record.

"At the monthly meeting ye 25th of ye 3d month, 1753, Job Irish, son of Jedediah of Westerly, and Mary Weaver daughter of Thomas Weaver late of Westerly deceased, laid their intentions of taking each other in marriage before the meeting. This meeting desires them to wait at the next monthly meeting for their answer. This meeting appoints our friends Simeon Tucker and Thomas Wilbur to enquire into the conversation and clearness as to marriage, and make returns to the next monthly meeting.

"At the monthly meeting held the 30th of the 4th month, 1753, the friends that were appointed to inspect into the conversation and clearness of Job Irish concerning marriage, make return that they find nothing to hinder his proceeding therein. Job Irish and Mary Weaver appeared in this meeting and signified they were of the same mind they were at the last monthly meeting, and desire an answer. This meeting permits them to marry among us, they keeping to the good order of truth therein James Scriven and Peter Davis, Jr., are appointed to see their marriage consummated and make returns thereof to the next monthly meeting.

"At a monthly meeting, held at South Kingstown the 28th of the 5th mo., 1753, the friends that were appointed to see the marriage of Job Irish and Mary Weaver consummated, make return that it was quite orderly carried on."

The consummation of said marriage is recorded as follows:

"Whereas, Job Irish, son of Jedediah Irish and Mary his wife of Westerly in Kings County and Colony of Rhode Island, and Mary Weaver daughter of Thomas Weaver late deceased and Sarah his wife of the town above said. having declared their intention of taking each other in marriage, before several public meetings of the people called Quakers, in the Colony aforesaid, whose proceedings therein, after a deliberate consideration thereof, according to the righteous law of God, and example of his people, recorded in the Scriptures of truth in that case, they being clear of all others, and having consent of parents, and others concerned, were approved by the said meetings: Therefore. These may certify all whom it may concern, That they, the said Job Irish and Mary Weaver, appeared in a public meeting of the aforesaid people and others, met together for that purpose at one of their meeting houses. this third day of the fifth month called May, and in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and fifty three, He the sd. Job Irish, taking the sd. Mary Weaver by the hand, did openly declare as follows: Friends, I desire you to be my witnesses that I take this my friend Mary Weaver to be my wife, promising through the Lord's assistance to be unto her a loving and faithful husband until it shall please God by death to separate us. And she the said Mary Weaver did then in like manner openly declare: Friends I desire you to be my witness that I take this my friend Job Irish to be my husband, promising through the Lord's assistance to be unto him a faithful and loving wife until it shall please the Lord by death to separate us. And they the said Job Irish and Mary Weaver, for the full accomplishment of

their said marriage and subscription, have hereunto set their hands, she according to the custom, now Mary Irish, and we whose names are hereunto subscribed, being present with others at the solemnizing of this their said marriage, and subscription, have as witnesses also to these presents subscribed our names, the day and year above written.

JOB IRISH.
MARY IRISH.

MARTHA HOXSIE,	PETER DAVIS,
JEDEDIAH IRISH,	SARAH IRISH,
MAL. HOXSIE,	JAMES SCRIVEN,
ALICE WEAVER,	MARY WEAVER,
JOSEPH IRISH,	GEORGE IRISH."

and seventeen others, as witnesses.

In the southeast part of the town a church existed quite early, some of whose members resided in the adjoining towns. Near what has long been known as John Stanton's corners, they erected a house of worship on a lot of land containing half an acre, deeded December 13th, 1787, by Perry Watson and wife, for one pound and ten shillings, to Charles Boss, David Clark, Gideon Babcock, and others, for a meeting house lot. This house was known as the Boss meeting house. The name was derived from Elder Boss, whose name comes down to us as one who long and faithfully served God and the people there as a preacher of the gospel. The church continued to worship there till 1856, when they built a house at Clark's mills and removed there; the new house being on the Charlestown side of the river. This church is now and probably always was connected with the Association Baptist churches.

In the eastern part of the town, we learn from Denison's history, another church existed, many of its members

living in South Kingstown, to the watch-care of which Elder Benjamin Barber was ordained in 1793. From other sources we learn that Elder Phineas Palmer ministered to this body until the time of his death. They built no house of worship but held their meetings mostly in private houses, some of which were held at Silas Moore's, where David Moore now lives. After the death of Elder Palmer, the church ceased to maintain its organization, some of its members uniting with other churches.

At Woodville, a church was erected on a lot of land deeded December 9th, 1848, by Fones G. Wilbur for the good will he bore to the church and the cause of piety, to Jesse Wilbur, Jr., Treasurer of the Seventh Day Baptist church, of Richmond, and his successors in office. This church has, at times, been affected by changes in the manufacturing interest in Woodville, but, of late, has enjoyed renewed prosperity, and seems to be an active force in the religious interests of the community. Its present pastor is the Rev. Horace Stillman; its first was Rev. John Green. In Arcadia, November 24th, 1872, a hall erected by D. L. Aldrich & Co. over their store, was dedicated to public worship and social improvement. Religious services, and a Sunday school, have been maintained there most of the time since, on Sunday, and at such other times as the interest of the people seemed to demand. No church has been organized there. Churches existing on the borders of the town, have had their part in molding the religious and social character of the town, and ministers residing in adjacent towns have from time to time labored effectively to build up

religious interests, and establish in the minds and lives of the people, principles of loyalty to God and truth.

At Clarke's Mills, an Advent society or church was organized about 1855, with members from the adjacent towns as well as Richmond. Its meetings, which were, at first, held in this town, have been transferred to a hall on the Charlestown side of the stream. Simeon P. Clarke, the proprietor of the mills, is an honored member of the society. To it, with the other churches along the borders, must be attributed a share in the responsibilities of guiding the minds of the young in their search for the knowledge of God and eternal life.

As religion has furnished in these several organizations centers of attractions and fountains of refined emotional pleasures, so through them it has wrought a more or less healthful influence on the social life of the generations that have passed on the stage of action since the first settlements were made in the "waste, howling wilderness." Among the churches whose places of worship were in the adjoining towns, and whose influence has reached into this town, may be mentioned a church in South Kingstown, near Usquepang, a Free Baptist church at Carolina, the Seventh Day Baptist churches in Hopkinton, the Association Baptist and the Methodist and Advent churches at Locustville, on the Hopkinton side of the river opposite to Wyoming.

EDUCATION.

THE report of your Superintendent, N. K. Church, made the year ending April 30th last, is a better history of schools for this town, since its settlement, than I could compile, and I should be pleased if the committee would incorporate that report with what I submit. The only item I will attempt to add is the fact of my own experience as a teacher in this town. That experience was in the winter of 1828 and '29, and was my first attempt at teaching. The school was held in a part of an old house still standing on the estate then owned by Samuel Clarke, Esq. Dyer Smith lived in the same house at the time. Reminiscences of the school are still pleasant. I have since taught more than fifty terms, in schools of different grades, very few of which bring back fewer regrets, and more pleasures, than come on the wings of memory from that three months.

Among the pupils whose names, and countenances, come up from that far past are: Abiel and Elijah Kenyon and their sisters, Perry Clarke, Jr., Charles and Simeon P. Clarke, Mary Clarke now Lawrence, Daniel Marchant, Harriet Staunton, John S. Clarke and his sister, now the

widow of Charles Clarke, and Mrs. Irish and her sister Mrs. H. P. Clarke.

Twenty-four days then constituted a month's service, and the teacher boarded around. The contract bound the patrons to pay me $8.50 per month. At the close of the school, they assembled and by a unanimous vote directed me to make out the rate bill for $9.00 per month. To this new order I yielded with as much condescension as I well could.

Besides the regular day schools, evening spelling schools were a part of the programme. These were attended by teachers and pupils from schools in Charlestown. Their courtesy was reciprocated by a like attendance at their schools.

The system of "boarding around," now so generally condemned, had peculiar advantages for acquaintance with the patrons, and winning their sympathy and moral support of the school. It also gave additional opportunity of aiding the pupils in their lessons, and finding out and relieving their difficulty with some of the abstruse parts of their studies.

Though the State had taken incipient steps for free schools, the act had not yet come into working order.

Your town records will show you sad evidence of how much need there was of a public school system. A very large share of the deeds and other conveyances recorded in the early books are subscribed by the mark of the individuals instead of their written names. This especially was true of the females who signed, or witnessed those convey-

ances. Even now, with all our school facilities, many, alas! too many, are embarrassed with the same lack of knowledge. Scores of children are growing up in ignorance of the first principles of education. Town Councils and school officers should look this matter in the face, and see that the cupidity of parents and mill owners is not depriving children of those privileges furnished by State munificence for their present and future good, and the safety of the State. The intelligence and virtue of the individual is the bulwark of future safety for the republic.

In the colonial period, disadvantages by reason of a lack of education, went further than the embarrassments to which we have referred. Parents who had not themselves learned to read and write, could do very little to aid their children in acquiring even the first rudiments of knowledge. This was the more unfortunate from the fact that the few schools that existed were often, on account of the sparseness of the population, practically impossible to be enjoyed by many who lived miles away from the school. My father spent his boyhood in Richmond, from seven years of age to fifteen, and his only opportunity for school during that time, if my memory is correct, was less than three months, and then by threading his way through bye-paths for more than two miles. If such were their meager facilities in the last quarter of the past century, what were they in the second and third quarters of that century?

Thus stinted in their facilities for learning to read and write and compute numbers, they could poorly appreciate the benefits to be derived from periodicals and books, even

if they had possessed them. These could not even be obtained by those capable of reading, for books were few, and costly, and the newspaper was as yet unborn in the State. Social life, undoubtedly, was enjoyed in its spirit, but it must have lacked much of its legitimate power toward elevating the mind and aims of the people, and refining their habits of life. As might be expected, as the outgrowth of minds thus fettered, their implements of husbandry, and methods of farming, were rude and primitive, adding much to the labor of production.

AGRICULTURE, ETC.

Oxen were chiefly their team of draft and all work, the horse being less serviceable from the fact that wagons were almost unknown. Men now living can remember when the "Lockshire" was the only plow for principal work, but that was the successor to others still more rude, awkward and defective. The Lockshire was followed by the Dutch plow. This in turn gave place to the cast iron plow which began to be introduced about 1820 and for a long time was used only by a few. Whether now, polished steel plows have been introduced into Richmond, I am not informed. They are the *sine qua non* of the west, and Richmond will not be long without them.

Locomotive conveyances for persons and produce, in those early times, were quite primitive. The lover and his lass, when out for a pleasure ride, must needs have separate horses, the latter upon her side-saddle, or placed on a pillion upon the same horse with her beau, supported in place with one arm partly encircling the body, and her left hand rest-on the iron hoop of the pillion. The first one horse wagon introduced into the town, is said to have been imported from

Connecticut by Mr. George Perry, the grandfather of Hon. H. P. Clarke. The exact form of this one I am not able to give, but probably it was much the same as those in use at my early recollection, being a frame body with high sides attached to the forward axle by a jointed snipe-bill for a king-bolt. These, for the most part, had no springs either under the body or the seat. The latter was at first a box with an elevated back; the box sometimes elevated at the bottom and resting on the floor of the body, sometimes with a long wooden spring extending the entire length of the body, resting on slats at the end-board; seats resting on braces, with more or less spring, bolted to sills detached from the body but resting on its floor. These were known as grasshopper seats.

Elliptical steel springs were a later invention, having been preceded by the chaise with leathern thorough-brace springs. Before the introduction of one horse wagons, marketing was done by carrying light burdens on horseback, in bags or baskets. Sometimes a sort of dray was extemporized, consisting of two poles placed as thills to the rings of the harness, and extending back and resting on the ground. These were kept at a proper distance from each other, by cross boards, pinned or bolted upon the top, and on which the burden was laid and held in place by cords or wythes. In this way, Hon. Gardner Nichols informed me, that his father transported two Lockshire plows from eight miles beyond Wickford.

The venerable Simon Lillibridge, upwards of ninety years old, informed me that one of his father's neighbors contracted to deliver a dressed hog at Wickford, which

weighed about three hundred pounds. He did not wish to drive his oxen so far, and as there was not a one horse wagon within eight or ten miles, he loaded his hog upon the back of his horse, and walked by his side to the market, some fourteen miles.

Country stores were not then in the habit of receiving farm produce in exchange for merchandise, and each man marketed his own. If not wanted near home, it was carried usually to Newport or to Wickford. Mr. Lillibridge says the first wagon he ever saw was at Plainfield at a schoolbreak. The first he ever owned was made by Rowse Clarke. This Rowse Clarke had a wagon shop a little west of Shannock hill, near where Remington Clarke had a trip-hammer, blacksmith shop on Tony brook, a small stream a little west of Richard Chappell's. I have been thus minute both to give a proper idea of the facts as then existing, and also that those enjoying the facilities of the present day may more fully realize the great advantages they possess, and the consequent increase of obligation.

Men of such limited means of culture might be expected to suffer in other departments of social relations than those we have noted, and such we find to have been the fact in the early parts of Richmond's history. Rights, inherent in the nature of man, seem to have been imperfectly understood, and poorly carried out, except upon the narrow view of onesided self.

Views of the rights of others were so imperfectly developed as scarcely to reach the low level of toleration for free thought in the economy of society. Any innovation on existing forms of thought and standards of action, often was

met, not by the question: What is right? but: What has been the practice? People who could leave the cherished associations of home and kindred, and plow the billows of the Atlantic, and face the hardships of a wilderness, and all the privations of pioneer life, for freedom, and to shake off the yoke of oppression, were slow to learn the doctrine that "*your rights are as sacred as mine*," or that *you* have the same right to *differ* from *me* that *I* have from *you*. Low views of duty in regard to personal example were often entertained. Revivals of religion occurred at long intervals for the most part, and in those intervals coarse manners and vulgar habits supervened. Mr. Lillibridge says that in his early days profane swearing was very common, but religious influence revived, and the vicious habit gave way before the radience of Divine light.

With some, it is a matter of wonder how the people of this section subsisted, while as yet they had little or no income from manufactures and commerce. In attempting to solve the question, it must be remembered that while they were reducing a rugged wilderness to cultivation, they had a virgin soil from which to gather their crops. The forests that had stood for ages had been shaking down, year by year, their foilage to fertilize the soil. Insects seldom made depredation upon their vegetation. The seed sown had in the soil just the material on which to feed and mature with an abundant harvest. Surrounded by sheltering woodlands, their plantations suffered less from the tossings of chilling winds. What was of still greater importance, the habits of men, both as regards labor and expenses, were vastly different. Men, women and children were mostly accustomed

to rise with the dawn, and continue their toil till twilight. Though they reared large families, they were early trained to toil. They lived plainly on food of their own production. Their clothing, too, was of the cheapest and most durable texture. Their fields of flax, and the fleeces of their flocks, furnished the fiber, and the mothers and daughters spun and wove it. Play and pleasure were entirely secondary to the necessities of life. Parsimony was more popular than prodigality. All were restrained in their indulgences by provision for their wants.

Here it may be asked, if Richmond was once so productive: First, Why did it not continue thus to produce? and: Second, Is it possible for its barren plains ever to recover the fertility that tradition gives them the credit of once possessing?

To the first of these questions we reply that the history of the past will discover a combination of causes lending aid to the result. Among these we may mention that the farmers of those early days poorly understood, or unwisely disregarded, the fact that every crop carried from the field, carries a definite proportion of its material, essential for the production of a crop of that kind, and hence continued cropping of any field will eventually remove its entire capacity to produce successful crops, unless from some source similar material be returned to the soil of that field.

CHARACTERISTICS.

It has already been noticed that Richmond was made a town in 1747. The first Town Meeting was held August 28th, ten days after the act of incorporation.

"Captain Richard Bailey was chosen Moderator.

"James Adams and Stephen Richmond were chosen to receive the votes put in at this town meeting.

"John Webster was chosen Town Clerk for the remainder of the year, and engaged.

"Voted, That John Webster, Capt. Richard Bailey, Joseph Hoxsie, James Adams, William Potter and Joseph Clarke are chosen the six Town Councilmen for the remainder of the year, and engaged.

"Voted, That Joseph Enos be chosen Treasurer for the remainder of the year."

The minor officers for the town were elected much in the same order as at the present day.

Capt. Richard Bailey and John Webster were chosen Deputies to attend the General Assembly to be held in King's county on the last Wednesday in October.

Whether the Town Council were disposed to make their office unnecessarily burdensome to the town, or whether a penurious jealousy sprang up among the freemen, it is difficult now to say. The action of a town meeting, only a few years after organization, shows that political servants were disposed to be fed at the public crib more than the people were willing to ratify. The following was passed as an act of the Town Meeting:

"Whereas, The Town Council of this town has been a considerable charge to the town for their meeting together on the business of said town, for a remedy whereof for the future:

"Be it enacted by said town, That from and after the first Tuesday in June next ensuing, That said Town Council bear their own expenses for the future."

The French and Indian war soon followed. The manner in which the town met the exigency will appear from their action in Town Meeting, held on the 3d day of November, 1756, as follows:

"Be it enacted in the Town of Richmond, by the freemen and freeholders thereof, That if any man or men be pressed as above said, and is unwilling to go in His Majesty's service, That then the inhabitants of the town shall forthwith hire some-able bodied man, or men, to go in his or their room, or rooms, or pay the ransom for the impressed man, or men; and the ransom or hired man or men shall be paid by a public town rate to be assessed on the inhabitants of this town of Richmond in proportion according to their ratable estates now stated by the colony aforesaid, except the pole money.

"And be it further enacted by the freemen and freeholders of this town of Richmond, that all the money raised and promised to pay the volunteers, and those pressed, or drawn, or raised in this town of Richmond by a special act of the General Assembly of the colony aforesaid, to be raised on the 21st day of October last past, the said money shall be repaid unto every man, or men, that has paid or lent money unto the above said soldiers as a bounty or encouragement to enlist.

"And be it further enacted, That the aforesaid money shall be repaid by a public town rate to be assessed on the inhabitants of this town of Richmond, in proportion according to their ratable estates now stated by an act of the colony.

"And be it further enacted by the freemen and freeholders of the town of Richmond, That all the officers that are or shall be elected as ratemakers, or assessors, or collectors, treasurers or other officers, in executing any part, or parts, of the aforesaid act, or acts, shall have no fee or pay for their labor or trouble, but shall do it for nothing.

"And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, That every person that shall be rated for the charge aforesaid, shall bring in his proportion of said rate to the Town Treasurer of said Richmond, at, or before the 7th day of December next. And if any person, or persons, shall neglect to bring in his or their rate, as above said, That the Town Treasurer of said Richmond grant forth his warrant to distrain so much of his, or their, goods and chattels as will pay their respective rates."

The patriotism thus displayed in relation to the French and Indian war, was but a prelude to a readier and more self-sacrificing consecration in the war of the revolution, as will be seen by the record.

At the last Town Meeting under colonial authority, held June 4th, 1776, one month previous to the declaration of independence, we find the first record of warlike measures made by this town toward the war of the revolution. That record says:

"Joseph Woodmancy, Jonathan Maxson, John Clarke, Samuel Clarke, Samuel Stannton, William Kenyon, Thos. Lillibride, Richard Bailey, Jr., Joseph Woodmancy, Jr., and Nicholas Mosher, have agreed to give one day each towards making the town's lead and powder into cartouches."

Again:

"Voted, That Caleb Barber have an order to the Treasurer for three shillings, it being for a box of cartouches."

The next Town Meeting was held August 27th, 1775, when the town enrolled itself as Richmond in King's county,

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND,

thus indorsing the Declaration of Independence made July 4th, previous.

This meeting ordered that their "old schedules made before the revisal of the late laws, be used to the making of cartouches." It was also

"Voted, That Capt. Joseph Tefft, Jr., and Capt. David Potter be a committee to receive of the State the town's proportion of salt, and bring it into town."

At a Town Meeting held September 16th, 1776, it was

"Voted, That the soldiers ordered to be raised in this town, by the committee appointed to act during the recess of the General Assembly, have their wages advanced to three shillings per day, including what is paid them by the government, which shall enlist into the service.

"Voted, That captains of the companies in this town be, and are hereby directed to call their respective companies together according to the alarm list, at one or more places on the 19th instant, in order to raise the above mentioned troops.

"Voted, On the 20th of September, That Major Richard Bailey and Samuel Clarke be appointed a committee to receive of Wm. Tefft, Esq., twenty-one guns, bayonets and cartouch boxes, and deliver them to the soldiers raised in this town, and that the same be branded with the letter R before delivery.

"And that they also be directed to receive of the said William Tefft the remainder of the guns, &c., when finished, giving their receipts for the same, * * * and that said committee furnish the ensign and each soldier with a blanket and 'snapsack'; * * * and that every soldier furnishing himself with a blanket and 'snapsack' shall be allowed six shillings therefor.

"Voted, That if there is not a sufficient sum of money in the treasury to procure the above blankets, &c., the treasurer be authorized to hire a sufficient sum for that purpose.

"Voted, That Captain Maxson be allowed one shilling per day for three months if not discharged sooner."

At a Town Meeting held November 29th, 1776, it was

"Voted, That this town give each soldier, now to be raised, one shilling per day over and above the State's pay, as an encouragement for their enlistment, during the time they are in service.

"That William Tefft, Esq., be a committee to act in conjunction with the Committee of Safety in the equipping of the soldiers now to be raised."

December 3d, 1776, Town Meeting

"Voted, That the Treasurer be directed to hire sixty-three pounds to pay the soldiers now at Rhode Island the town's advance money to them by their return.

"Voted, That Richard Bailey have an order of seven pounds, four shillings, it being for blankets for the soldiers."

While the freemen and freeholders showed their readiness to tax themselves to meet the demands of their country in the hour of its trial, the young men, and the patriots of middle life, entered the ranks of the militia, as minute men, to answer any call that a new phase of danger might demand; or, with still greater sacrifice, thrust themselves away from home and its endearments, to endure the fatigue and sufferings of camp life in the field forces of the revolution. Camp life then was no holiday sport, as pictured by the historians of these days. They endured long and fatiguing marches with scanty food, and still more scant clothing; sometimes marching over the snow and frozen ground, which they trod with the blood trickling from their chilled and wounded feet. This they endured while the

wages were low, and often uncertain, from which to forward supplies to their needy families. Nor were our mothers and their daughters wanting of faith, and the true spirit of consecration, in those times. They gave their sons, brothers, and lovers, words of blessing and words of cheer as they sent them forth to stand in the gap of their country's peril. They stood not in passive idleness to await the result, or to depend on the strong arm of their sons and brothers for support. In the eloquent language of Rev. F. Denison:

"While the men were in camp and in battle, the women managed the home affairs. They not only turned their earnest hands to the distaff, and loom, and needle. They rose up to do all home duties. They conducted the dairy, they managed the horses, cattle and flocks. They even grasped the plow and the sickle."

The foregoing extracts from the records give a clear-cut view of the spirit with which our progenitors met the exigencies of the war of the revolution. More such might be made, but these are sufficient for the purpose for which they are made, viz: by the examples of the past, to prompt us to noble endeavors in the present, that shall live to cheer and quicken their, and our, successors in the interests of the future.

The war having, after years of toil and hardship, been brought to a successful issue, and our independence having been acknowledged, a delicate and difficult task was committed to our sages and patriots: the duty of giving to the people a constitution that should bind the people of the States in a union, wise, safe, permanent and successful.

After four months of earnest deliberation, the convention adopted a constitution which they had framed, and submitted it to the people of the States for their approval, through their conventions.

A more determined opposition to this constitution was manifested in Rhode Island than in the other States, so that this State was the last to accept it as the law of the land, and to enter into the Union. But as in duty bound, by an Act of the Legislature, this constitution was submitted to the action of the freemen of the several towns, in Town Meeting. The vote of this town, after much discussion, was taken March 24, 1787.

The vote taken shows the conservative tendencies that then prevailed, and the slowness of the people to adopt new and untried principles in important public matters.

There were at the time:

Legal voters in the town.....77
Present and voted.....69
Voted *against* adopting the constitution.....68
Voted *for* its adoption..... 1

As these votes were taken yea and nay, the names of the voters remain on the record. The name of the man who could dare to stand alone was:

JONATHAN MAXSON.

EARLY SETTLERS.

The following are the names of heads of families in the town of Richmond in 1774, two years previous to the declaration of independence.

They are arranged alphabetically, and the number of members in each family is given. Some have the representatives of their names in town at the present time, and who have furnished me the lineage of those families, which I shall submit at the close of the history of the town.

A.

Adams, Mary 2.
Adams, Stephen 5.
Austin, Joseph 10.

B.

Brown, James 9.
Babcock, Elisha, Jr. 4.
Barber, Ezekiel 8.
Barber, Caleb 10.
Barber, Nicholas 8.
Baker, Benjamin, Jr. 2.
Burdick, Edmund 5.
Bailey, Clark 5.
Babcock, Elisha 13.
Barber, Thomas 14.
Barber, Samuel 6.
Barber, Benjamin 11.
Baker, Benjamin 11.
Baker, Solomon 5.
Bailey, Samuel 4.
Bailey, Richard 11.

Bentley, John 9.
Bentley, William 10.
Bentley, Ezekiel 5.
Baggs, John 9.
Brownell, Eunice 4.
Boss, Jeremiah 7.
Boss, Jonathan 4.
Boss, Peter 9.
Boss, Joseph 3.

C.

Colgrove, Oliver 11.
Colgrove, Jeremiah 6.
Clarke, Arnold 3.
Clarke, John 8.
Clarke, Joshua 8.
Clarke, Oliver 4.
Clarke, Walter 7.
Clarke, William 7.
Clarke, Joshua 7.
Clarke, James 9.
Clarke, Isaac 8.
Clarke, Joseph 10.
Clarke, Thomas 4.
Clarke, Simeon 11.
Clarke, Wm., Jr. 6.
Clarke, Samuel 5.
Collins, Jedediah 7.
Card, Benjamin 7.
Cory, John 2.
Cory, Samuel 6.

D.

Dake, Hannah 4.
Dyer, Elizabeth 2.
Dyer, Daniel 6.
Dyer, John 7.

E.

Enos, John 4.
Enos, Benjamin 11.
Ellsworth, Joseph 4.

F.

Frazer, John 6.
Foster, John 3.

G.

Griffin, Joshua 2.
Griffin, John 4.
Griffin, James 5.
Griffin, Philip 5.

H.

Hall, Ruth 6.
Hall, Ebenezer 6.
Hall, Elisha 11.
Holloway, Nicholas 1.

Holloway, George 6.
Holloway, Samuel 7.
Hernington, Paul 8.
Hernington, William 4.
Hoxsie, Stephen 9.
Hoxsie, Barnabas 8.
Hoxsie, Solomon 7.
Hoxsie, Job 5.
Hoxsie, Joseph 12.
Hoxsie, Joseph, Jr. 11.

I.

Irish, Sarah 4.

J.

James, Joseph 3.
James, James 16.
James, Jonathan 5.
James, Patience 7.
James, Benjamin 7.
James, Thomas 3.
James, Jonathan, Jr. 7.
Johnson, Ezekiel 12.

K.

Knowles, Elisabeth 6.
Knowles, Robert 8.
Kinyon, Mary 2.
Kinyon, John 7.
Kinyon, William 10.
Kinyon, Nathan 10.
Kinyon, Benedict 9.
Kinyon, Thomas 6.
Kinyon, Thomas, Jr. 6.
Kinyon, Thomas (T. D.) 11
Kinyon, Sylvester 5.
Kinyon, Sylvester, Jr. 7.
Kinyon, John 7.

L.

Larkin, Nicholas 5.
Larkin, Edward 7.
Larkin, Elisha 2.
Larkin, Stephen 4.
Larkin, David 2.
Lewis, Isaac 3.
Lewis, George 8.
Lewis, Nathan 9.
Lillibridge, Thomas 13.
Lillibridge, Edward 9.
Larkum, Lasonlet 9.

M.

Moon, John 3.
Moon, Job 7.
Moore, Robert 8.
Moore, David 8.

Maxson, Jonathan 8.
Mosher, Nicholas 15.
Mosher, Gideon 7.

N.

Niles, George 5.
Ney, George 6.
Nicholas, David 5.
Nicholas, Andrew 3.

P.

Pettis, Robert 1.
Potter, Jonathan 13.
Potter, Thomas 9.
Potter, Smitern 6.
Potter, William 3.
Potter, William, Jr. 6.
Potter, William 3d 7.
Potter, Robert 4.
Potter, David 8.
Potter, Incomb 3.
Pierce, Aomnor 3.
Peterson, Ichabod 8.
Philips, Jane 4.
Philips, Bartholomew 8.
Pullman, Nathaniel 3.
Perry, Edward 12.
Pendleton, John 6.

R.

Reynolds, William 6.
Reynolds, William, Jr., 3.
Reynolds, James 4.
Roger, Robert 3.
Remington, David 5.
Rogers, Samuel 6.
Rogers, Weight 1.
Rogers, Thomas 7.
Rogers, Thomas Jr. 10.

S.

Sheldon, William 4.
Sisson, Rodman 7.
Staunton, Samuel 5.
Stanton, Robert 10.

T.

Tifft, Joseph 12.
Tifft, Joseph Jr. 10.
Tifft, Benjamin 8.
Tifft, Samuel 9.
Tifft, Samuel Jr. 4.
Tifft, Jeremiah 6.
Tifft, Ezekiel 8.
Tifft, William 12.

Tanner, George 9. Thomas, Peleg 9.

Tindon, Jonathan 9

V.

Vallitt, Jeremiah 9.

W.

Wording, Samuel 4. Wording, John 4.
Weaver, Thomas 5. Wright, John 6.
Webster, James 10. Webster, John 9.
Webster, John Jr. 11. Woodmansie, Joseph 7
Woodmansie, John 5. Woodmansie, Joseph Jr. 4.
Woodmansie, James 3. Wilcox, Edward 7.
Wilcox, Sheffield 3. Wilcox, Stephen 7.
Wilcox, Stephen Jr. 6. Wilcox, Robert 3.
Wilbour, John 8. Wilbour, Samuel 2.
Wilbour, Samuel Jr. 7. Wilbour, Peter 7.
Watson, William 4. Webb, George 10.
Webb, John 5. Williams, Maccoon 9.

The whole number of families in town at date as above ..... 185.

Highest number in one family, (James James,) 16.

There were three, numbering one only, each a male.

The whole number of persons in town at date... 1234.

Whole number of legal voters four years later.. 77.

One Indian family of nine persons; parent, Jonathan Tindon. Besides these there were twelve Indians and fourteen blacks living with, and numbered above, in the families of whites.

The United States census for 1870, gives the town population as ..... 2064.

The State census of 1875, enrolls only 1739, a loss not readily accounted for.

The census of 1774, gave for the State 54,715. That of 1875, gave for the State, 258,239; a gain in one hundred and one years of 203,524.

In the year 1800, the number of dwellings in town were one hundred and thirty-six. In seventy years there was a gain of three hundred and twelve, making a total of four hundred and forty-eight.

DISPOSITION OF LANDS.

THE colonial records show that for many years the lands in Richmond were quite slowly purchased by settlers. To hasten their sale, the General Assembly appointed a committee to dispose of vacant lands held by authority of the colony. This committee sold a large tract June 28th, 1709, known in the records as the "Shannock Purchase." This tract extended from Exeter line, on the north, to Pawcatuck river on the south. On the east, it was bounded by Beaver river; and on the west, by a meridian passing at the east end of the cemetery, at the Wood river church. The purchasers of this tract were twenty-seven in number. Among whom were:

James Adams,
Daniel Wilcox,
Peter Parker,
Daniel Tennant,
Samuel Lewis,
Nicholas Utter, Jr.,
William Gibson,
William Clarke,
John Tefft,
Thomas Utter,
Eber Crandall,
William Utter,
John Eanos,
Daniel Brown,
Weston Clarke,
George Babcock,

George Foster, Samuel Perry,
Joseph Brown, John Witter,
Nicholas Utter, Francis Colgrove,
Jeremiah Crandall.

How many of these purchasers became actual settlers on these lands, is not now known, but many of the family names appear in the subsequent history of the town.

Nicholas Holley is reported as one of the earliest settlers in town. He had his estate near Glen Rock. Richard Chappell is one of his descendants. Joshua Clarke was quite early a resident on the east side of Beaver river.

Benjamin Perry bought, in 1747, the farm where Hon. H. P. Clarke now lives. Part of the house now standing there was then on the place. This was afterwards the home of his son Edward, and after him his grandson George Perry, the grandfather of the present owner.

MILLS AND MILL PROPERTY.

GRIST AND SAW MILLS were a necessity to the early settlers, and happy for them the power to operate them was found in the streams that formed a part of their domain. How early, and where the first mills in town we built, no known record shows. The small streams were larger and nearer perennial when the hills were covered with forests than now.

Probably, their first mills were built along these, as dams were more cheaply constructed than on the larger streams. In the memory of some now living, many of the streams now not occupied as mill forces had there saw mills, grist mills and forgingsmith shops. For similar purposes, the stream passing south of Rev. G. Tillinghast's, was used just east on the Caleb Barber property, where also, early in the present century, Archibald Barber and Gardner Nichols had a wagon shop, doing much of their work by water power. White brook long ago carried a trip-hammer for the manufacture of axes, hoes, etc.

At Arcadia, just on the line between Exeter and Richmond, there was a saw mill. The evidences are still manifest there.

At Wyoming, mills were early built, and on the Hopkinton side were located the famous Brand's iron works.

At Hope Valley, where the cotton factory now stands, there was a grist mill, having for one side of the flume, a perpendicular rock.

Where now is the village of Clarke's Mills, on December 1st, 1759, Jeffrey Wilcox gave by will to his son, Abraham Wilcox, one acre of land. This was deeded by said Wilcox to Jeremiah Browning, March 8th, 1762, with a saw mill and grist mill in good running order.

No mention is made of the saw mill in any subsequent transfer. The price paid by Browning for these mills, and privilege, was £3,000 current money of New England. We should judge that New England money must have had a *current* value that had run to a low ebb. This property was deeded by several transfers till on January 16, 1771, it was deeded to Joshua Clarke, in the line of whose family it is still owned, and where a grist mill still runs for the mutual benefit of the proprietor and the community.

As early as 1772, a saw mill and an iron manufactory existed where Kenyon's mills are now located. The establishment was then deeded by Samuel Stuart to Christopher Clarke.

Mills existed at Usquepang, early known as Mumford's Mills, but I believe these were always situated on the east side of the stream in South Kingstown.

Some more than one hundred and twenty years ago, Wm. Sweet owned a saw mill near where David Moore now lives. A mill still exists on the site.

At Tug Hollow, and Bellville, there early existed saw and grist mills.

Other similar mills may have existed elsewhere, but we omit any further details of them and turn to notice the progress in the manufacture of woolen and cotton yarn and cloths.

MANUFACTURES.

During the early years of Richmond's history, manufactories for wool and cotton were unknown in the country. As we have already said, the clothing of the inhabitants was manufactured by hand. Every farmer devoted a plat of ground to the raising of flax, and in his pastures grazed the sheep whose fleeces furnished material for the garments that were to protect their persons from the piercing blasts of wintry winds. The flax was broken and swingled by the swain himself, or some neighbor more skilled in the art. The mother hatcheled the flax, and early taught her daughters to card and spin the coarser parts known as tow. The finer parts, she wound on the distaff and spun it on a wheel propelled by the foot. This part formed the warp, and the tow the woof which the mother, or older girls, wove for the work-day wear of summer pants. In process of time cotton was introduced as a supplement to the tow and and linen, or to take the place of the pure linen for those who could afford to keep a separate suit for Sabbath day wear.

Cotton was not so generally manufactured in every house as was the flax. Before the introduction of machinery for its manufacture, a commendable enterprise was displayed by several families in Richmond. Of these, I am able, at present, to mention only those of Reynolds Hoxsie and Caleb Barber. I have been shown a specimen of that produced in the former family. It is preserved as an exhibit of the past, in the family of Deacon J. T. Sheldon. The raw cotton was carded, spun, woven and bleached by their own manipulation. Linen cloth was often manufactured and bleached for fine apparel, here, in those early days. Extra exploits are reported of the enterprising daughters of Richmond. Among these, Susannah Barber, sister of Caleb, is supposed to have excelled all other maidens of her time, if not of all times. She spun between sunrise and sunset, on a wheel of single thread fliers, one hundred and fifty full knots of fine even thread. Such is the tradition, well authenticated in the family. Spinning bees, or socials, were sometimes enjoyed by the young ladies, when they would carry with them their wheels and rolls to enjoy their visits without slacking their industry. Whether the admiring beaux were expected to assist in seeing the wheels home, with the lassies, is not reported.

Besides the preparation of wool by hand cards, some of the more skilful were wont to use the worsted long-tooth combs in preparing the hurl of the long wool fleeces, to be laid side by side in the more durable, and glossy material, known as worsted wear. This, and the woolen rolls, were spun on the high wheels, the operatives walking backwards, turning the wheel with the right hand, while the left skill-

fully drew out the even twine which was wound on the spindle as they regained the point from which they had retreated. A little later, a hatter's shop was successfully operated by John Knowles, between Usquepang and the Boss meeting house.

The factories first built in Richmond were built for carding wool into rolls, to be spun by hand. Connected with these was usually a fulling mill and cloth-dressing apparatus.

A man by the name of Mallard is supposed to have built a factory of this kind which was subsequently known as Holburton's mills. In 1807, Holburton advertised for an experienced clothier. In 1820, Lewis Kenyon purchased the estate of Thomas Holburton and continued the business until his death.

The first cotton factory in town was built on the site of the old grist mill at Hope Valley. The articles of agreement between the partners was dated May 9th, 1810. The persons signing this agreement were: Joseph Arnold, Godfrey Arnold, John Godfrey, Joseph Tefft, Gorton W. Arnold, Weeden Clarke, Jr. and Slocum Godfrey. June 10, 1811, George Perry, Benjamin Perry and John Manchester became subscribers to the agreement. Gardner Barber also became a subscriber December 12th, 1812. This mill was run for the purpose only of making yarn. It was built two stories high and was thirty-four feet wide and forty-eight feet long. It has changed owners several times and has been enlarged. It is now three stories high, fifty-two feet wide and one hundred and sixty-three feet long. At first it run four hundred dead spindles and made about

three hundred pounds of yarn per week. It now runs over four thousand spindles and turns off ten thousand pounds per week. Its dam is regarded as a model dam, curving up towards the pond in the center, and is based on a rock which receives the falling water. Nichols & Langworthy are joint proprietors of this water power, using their part of the water for their machine shop, grist mill, etc., on the Hopkinton side of the river.

Another company was organized June 1st, 1814, for the purpose of erecting a factory at Wyoming, then known as Brand's Iron Works. Their organic name was: "The Brothers' Cotton Manufacturing Company." The partners in the company were: Ezekiel Tefft, Samuel Tefft, Nathan Lillibridge, Stephen Tefft and Nathan Tefft.

Previous to the formation of this company, there had been a small wool carding machine near the turnpike bridge. Also, a grist mill between the bridges; and on the Hopkinton side, an iron manufactory, built by Samuel Brand, who resided in the old house first west of W. F. Segar's store, and gave name to the place.

Mr. Brand, besides the iron works, owned a large farm, including the lands now occupied by the villiage of Wyoming. Francis Brown, his son-in-law, is supposed to have built the first tavern, where is now the hotel of A. J. Dawley. That building was subsequently burned and the present building erected in its place. Mr. Brown also kept a jewelry shop and manufactured shoe and knee buckles, employing several men, among them Tertius Bailey as foreman. This Mr Bailey was the father of Rev. S. B. Bailey, so well known in this section. When the fashion

changed, Mr. Brown is supposed to have lost heavily and closed his business. This was near the close of the last century. The factory erected by the Brothers' Manufacturing Company was burned about 1862. It was then owned by Pardon Olney and Lewis C. Kenyon. The fire caught from the whipper. The factory had a capacity for, and was running, thirty-six looms. Mr. Olney also had a factory on the other side of the stream, which was burned December 10th, 1875.

The first factory erected where Sheldon's factory now is was built by John and Pardon Olney in 1837. This was run for a time by the brothers. Pardon, however, sold his interest to his brother John, who owned and occupied it till about 1844, when it was burned. This is supposed to have been set on fire by a boy who was dissatisfied that he was compelled to work in the mill. He is supposed to have perished in the mill, as he was not heard of afterwards. This mill runs sixty-four looms, spinning warp and woof.

A second mill was soon after built by John Olney. This is now owned by J. T. Sheldon, who has renovated it, making some additions, and replaced the old machinery by that which is of the most approved modern structure. It runs five thousand spindles employing about forty operatives and produces from seven thousand to ten thousand pounds of yarn per week.

In 1802, Joseph Nichols built a grist mill near the present location of Carolina Mills. His dam was a wooden structure, utilizing only a portion of the head and fall of the stream as at present obtained. There was then only one house in the vicinity. In 1834, this, with near three

hundred acres of land, was sold to Aaron and Sands Kenyon, who, again, in 1836, sold to G. H. P. Wilcox. He built the present dam in 1837, in contemplation of building a machine shop and factory. During the financial pressure of 1837, or in consequence of it, the work was suspended.

In 1841, this was purchased by Rowland G. Hazzard, who built most of the present buildings and operated them in the manufacture of cotton cloth, running one hundred looms. In September, 1863, Hazzard sold to the Peacedale Manufacturing Company. December 1st, 1863, they sold to Theophilus Hyde. His right was sold by virtue of a mortgage, September 5th, 1868, to R. G. Hazzard, who, in turn, deeded the same to Messrs. Tinkham, Metcalf & Co., February 1st, 1869. These deeded the same to the Carolina Mills Company, January 1st, 1872, by whom it is now operated as a woolen mill, manufacturing cassimeres.

A store was opened here about the time Wilcox began to build, but Mr. Wilcox says that rum became a staple article in trade about 1863, at first on the sly. About such matters he should be a judge, as he was in the business, in "the long ago," at Brand's Iron Works.

Shannock.—At an early date, Jesse Babcock had a grist mill in one part of his dwelling. How long this had run before 1828, I know not. It then had the appearance of one gray with age. John T. Knowles purchased the site and built a small woolen mill, mostly for custom work. This was subsequently enlarged and run by George Weeden. It is now owned by Alexander Carmichael & Co., and is operated in the manufacture of mixed goods.

WOODVILLE.—In the early times, there was a dam and grist mill higher up stream than where the dam now is. This was owned by Capt. Nicholas Larkin. He joined with Simeon Perry and built a dam where the Woodville dam now is. He built a grist mill on the Richmond side and Perry commenced the manufacture of iron on the Hopkinton side. From this circumstance, the embryo village was called Perry's Iron Works. Black sand was obtained from Point Judith beach, and mixed with scrap and cast iron in the manufacture of wrought iron, which was esteemed a good article. When then this power began to be used for factory purposes, the village took the name of Woodville. Berry & Stanton use the power on the Hopkinton side.

On the Richmond side, a stone factory, erected some sixteen years since by J. F. Harris, is now run by the Rhode Island Hosiery Company. C. Larned is the Superintendent, and employs twenty-five hands. They send out about seventy dozen pairs of socks per day. The mill runs five jacks, with one thousand spindles. The socks manufactured here are not disfigured with those unpleasant seams so annoying in socks manufactured in many mills. They make socks of all wool, all cotton, or a mixture of the two, to suit the exigencies of the trade.

HILLSDALE.—Mr. David Moore informs me that in his early boyhood, or more than seventy years ago, there was an old grist mill at Hillsdale, said to have been built by Jonathan Potter. This was sold to George James. December 10th, 1827, Wm. Jencks purchased this of George James, and March 20th, 1828, deeded three-sixteenths of this to

Ebenezer Carpenter. They, together, erected a factory and carded wool for customers, as report has it.

Between 1830 and 1836, Whitman Kenyon and Wanton Lillibridge engaged at this place in the manufacture of coarse mixed cloth, popularly known as "negro cloth." His sons continue to carry on a similar business at this place. In this vicinity there is now a single mill on the site of the old grist mill.

Tug Hollow.—There was a factory built at this place by Robert Reynolds, a goldsmith, about the year 1811. This was primarily built as a woolen mill, doing a custom work of carding only. This was subsequently enlarged and used for spinning and weaving cotton. This line of manufacture was carried on till about 1836, when the property came into the possession of Sheldon & Hoxsie, who changed off to the manufacture of warps for satinettes. They run five hundred spindles, making twelve hundred pounds of yarn per week, employing eight hands.

There was another factory built by Wells Reynolds, on the site of an old grist mill near Tug Hollow. This factory was subsequently burned and has not been rebuilt.

Holburton.—At Holburton's mills, now Kenyon's, Abiel Kenyon, in 1844, built on the site owned by his father at his death, a stone mill for the purpose of manufacturing woolen and cotton goods. In 1862, Elijah Kenyon, having purchased of his brother his interest in the estate, built the stone store. In 1864, he built three houses as homes for the employes, and in 1866 built the other factory. During the present season a superior steam power has been put in, and other valuable improvements have been per-

fected. These mills now run four sets of woolen machinery and a thousand spindles. Forty-eight looms weave woolen or mixed goods.

CLARKE'S MILLS.—The cotton factory, now owned and operated by Simeon P. Clarke, was begun by his brother, Charles Clarke, and himself, in 1848. In 1850, it was set in operation by a Mr. Green, making yarn thread. While the senior brother was in failing health, he sold out his interest to his brother, to save complications in the event of his death, which then was imminent. The factory now runs, including twisters, two thousand, nine hundred and twenty spindles.

PLAINVILLE.—The factory and village of Plainville were built by D. L. Aldrich. The land was previously owned by N. Sheffield Wilbur, who was the owner of quite an extensive landed property there at that time. He made Mr. Aldrich the offer of the mill privilege and the right of flowage, so far as his land was concerned, with four acres of ground for village purposes, as a free donation, on condition that Mr. Aldrich should erect a factory there. This was about the year 1862. To use the words of Mr. Aldrich himself: this induced him to make a fool of himself. Whether he meant that the enterprise, by its excessive profitableness, so aroused his love of gain that he lost the balance of his reason, or whether flattering prospect became a bait to an unprofitable speculation, deponent saith not.

The mill contains eight sets of woolen machinery, gotten up in the most approved style of modern improvements. It turns out superior cassimeres of the latest popular styles; Mr. Edward Milner being Superintendent.

There are now thirty-two tenements and a store connected with the estate, and something over one hundred and fifty acres of land, with barns and other auxiliary buildings.

ARCADIA.—The water privilege, in this place, was long ago used to run a saw mill which stood near, or exactly on, the line between Richmond and Exeter. This was deeded May 23d, 1836, by Samuel Barber to Amasa Sprague, Benoni Harris and James T. Harris. On the site where the upper mill now stands, they erected a factory and commenced running their works with the firm name of "Arcadia Manufacturing Company." In 1842, the mill was struck with lightning and burned. It was soon rebuilt on the walls of the first building.

The lower mill was erected in 1847 and set to running in 1848. Its dimensions were at first about one hundred feet by thirty-eight, and one story high, to which an addition was made in 1860, of sixty-eight feet in length. In 1865, the property was purchased by D. L. Aldrich & Co. In 1867, the lower mill was raised another story in height. Near the same time, the upper mill was lengthened, and a wing attached to the rear of this, in which are the dresser frames and a repair shop. The brick picker and lapper house was erected about the year 1869.

A valuable reservoir has been constructed two miles up the stream. The pond has been raised and the water brought to the upper wheel by a new route, with a covered conduit. Thus the power has been augmented and the flow of the stream made more constant. Several new tenement houses have been erected and a store built with a hall in the second story. The building is about twenty-eight by

fifty-six feet. The hall is furnished with settees and chandeliers, and has a nice small library room over the stairs. The stairs are made so broad that the hall could be speedily emptied in case of fire. If rightly appreciated, this hall may be a blessing to the community, providing a pleasant place for social and literary gatherings; and as intended in its conception, well adapted for religious worship and Sunday schools. It is truly an honor to the heads and hearts of those who conceived the plan and carried their purpose into execution.

The mills run over six thousand spindles, and one hundred and twenty-two looms, turning out about twenty-five thousand yards of cloth per week.

Usquepaug—On the east border of the town, has had factory power in operation, but the mills have been burned. These, I believe, were all on the east side of Queen's river, which, from near this point, is the boundary line southward between Richmond and South Kingstown. A store and public house and wagon shop still exist there, with some other mechanical interests.

OTHER ENTERPRISES.

MERCHANDISE has had its devotees in the various villages that have sprung up in different parts of the town. These stores have been a convenience to the inhabitants of the several neighborhoods, furnishing them facilities at hand to procure the necessary articles of use in the arts of life, often proving a public benefit, furnishing market facilities for the minor products of the farm, and the garden and the outcomes of skill and industry.

The rearing of poultry of various kinds has been an enterprise of profit to many. The sales of eggs, and the flesh and feathers, annually amount to a large sum. Fowls of various kinds do a wonderful work in lessening the damages wrought by worms and insects on the fruits, grains and other vegetable productions. They furnish also a manure scarcely less valuable than guano. Farmers and gardeners will find it for their interest to study more systematically and scientifically this department of home industry.

Cranberry culture has been made a specialty, by Sam'l K. Browning, near the center of the town, and by others near the eastern and southern borders, yielding often large incomes for the number of acres devoted to this culture.

The forests of the town have, in the years past, furnished material of commerce in the form of building material, hoop poles, wood and coal. Of the latter, large quantities were made and sold while the iron works were in blast. This was often delivered at the works for four dollars per hundred bushels, when the legal bushel contained forty quarts. Ship timber was also cut and drawn to Westerly, and perhaps to other places.

The manufacture of leather, by the aid of oak bark, was early carried on in some parts of the town. Simeon Babcock owned and carried on a tannery, currier shop, and boot and shoe shop, on the west side of Shannock Hill. The tannery was built some sixty years ago. He finally added a grocery store and sold alcoholic liquors. This used up his tannery and became a snare to himself and others.

C. T. Jackson, State geologist, found along the flats of Queen's river, extensive beds of peat and muck, which he considered valuable as a basis of composting manures needed on the farms in the vicinity.

There are several ponds and bogs in town, hitherto but little utilized, which, in the opening century, may become of increased revenue to the inhabitants, as by increased knowledge they shall realize their value and learn how to appropriate it.

Other enterprises of limited extent have been carried on by the inhabitants of the town during the century brought to a period by this festal day, but the brief space of time allotted for collecting the materials for this paper, and the fear of wearying by their recital, will forbid tracing them in

detail now, though of themselves interesting as matters of history and instructive as way marks for the future.

I must not, however, pass over the dairy without a few remarks. The sustenance of many families of the early settlers was largely drawn from their herds. The flesh of the animals gave additional strength to the brawny arms of the toiling farmer, and he shared with his wife and children the milk, the butter and the cheese of the dairy.

THE RAILROADS.

THE Stonington and Providence railroad, which was built about 1837, enters this town near the southwest corner and passes out of it east of the junction, to re-enter near Shannock Mills.

Wood River Branch road was completed, and commenced running cars, in July 1874. It enters this town a little above Woodville, thus giving about one third its length and a depot in Richmond, besides the depot at the junction.

These roads add not a little to the wealth of the town, and are a great convenience to the inhabitants, bringing them into easy connection with the great public marts of the country both for travel and mercantile facilities.

WARS,--ETC.

We have, on earlier pages, spoken of the war of the revolution and of the part which the citizens of Richmond took in the great struggle for independence. But another war arose in relation to which all records in regard to Richmond's part in the conflict seem, so far as we have been able to learn, to be entirely wanting. The war known as the war of 1812, was declared against Great Britain on the 19th of June in that year. The New England States, as a general thing, did not hastily enter into this war. Sympathy with this feeling may be a reason why we find no reference to this war in the records either of the Town Meetings of Richmond or of the doings of the Town Councils. Another cause may be found in the fact that certain portions of the town records are wanting for a period embracing the time of the first part of the war. By some means not satisfactorily explained, the records were partially consumed by fire.

The memory of some old men gives us this fact: A draft was made for two men from the military companies of the town, and, previous to the drawing, it was agreed that whoever was drawn and went into the service, should receive

a dollar from every man not thus drawn. The men drawn were both named Hoxsie but though they held themselves in readiness, they were never called into the field.

Another war occurred in Rhode Island in the year 1842. This was not a war with foreign powers, nor was it a war of bloody battles. It was rather a war of angry passions, called the Dorr war.

In August following the outbreak, delegates were chosen, a convention held, a constitution laid before the people for ratification, which won in Richmond seventy-nine yeas and ten nays. There was a separate clause proposing the question whether the word *white* should be inserted as a condition of freedom to vote. Four only voted to insert.

The war of the rebellion broke out into open hostilities in 1861. Richmond as a town was not wanting in the hour of decision. Seeing the government stripped of its resources, by those entrusted with its treasures, navy and forts, they aroused to the rescue. The sturdy yeomanry of the town sprang to arms, and bared their bosoms to the fight, and the men of wealth laid open their treasures to furnish the pay, and rations, and munitions of the forces.

The number of enlistments credited to the town, for all departments of the service, is one hundred and four. The disbursements by authority of the town were $20,547.-20. Of this sum, the State government assumed $2,700, leaving a balance to be met by the town of $17,847.20. All this has long since been paid by the town. There was also paid for the support of soldiers families, $200; and paid for the enlisting of soldiers, $462. Contributions were forwarded by friends for the sick and wounded, amounting

to $13,000. Making a total of **$21,509.20** raised for war interests by Richmond.

The following is a list of the names of persons who volunteered in the war of the rebellion from the town of Richmond:

A.

Joshua Allen, James H. Arnold.

B.

William Burton, Patrick Burk,
Charles W. Barber, Thomas B. Briggs,
William Bentley, John F. Bitgood,
George Henry Brown, Samuel Bennit,
John S. Babcock, George H. Brayman,
Matthew S. Barber, William Bane,
Gideon M. Barber, James W. Bedford,
Charles E. Bagley.

C.

Oliver H. Congdon, Moses Cherry,
William Cherry, John B. Clarke,
Stephen A. Clarke, John H. Clarke,
William O. Clarke, John R. Clarke,
GeorgeL. Clarke, Loren R. Chase,
George S. Church, Amos C. Corey,
Alvin L. Card, George W. Crandall,
Phillip Corr.

D.

George P. Dyer, William C. Durfee,
Albert C. Durfee, John Duffy,
John Dervin, James Dodds.

E.

Nathan P. Edwards, Samuel England.

F.

William H. Fletcher.

G.

Harris R. Green, Joseph A Green.

H.

Daniel Hoxsie, William A. Hall,
Chandler N. Handell.

J.

David W. James, Gershon P. Johnson,

K.

Stukley Kenney, David R. Kenyon,
Daniel C. Kenyon, George W. Kenyon.

L.

H. H. Larkin, Edward Larkin,
Reubin T. Larkin, Amos A. Lillibridge,
Silas Lillibridge, R. J. Lillibridge,
James G. Lewis, Jacob Lewis,
Benoni Lewis, Charles Larkham.

M.

Charles H. Main, Joseph M. Marshal,
William W. Maxon, James McDonald.

N.

Nathaniel Niles, James A. Nye,
Charles P. Nye, James H. Northup.

O.

William W. Ormsbee.

P.

Hazard Partlow, William H. H. Palmer.

Reynolds C. Phillips, Albert P. Perry,
Joseph B. Perry, George H. Potter,
Almon K. Parker, Allen G. Peck,
William H. Pierce, Harvey Pierce.

R.

George C. Rathbun, John T. Reynolds.

S.

Horace Slocum, Charles E. Slocum,
John H. Slocum, Sheffield L. Sherman,
James A. Sherman, Charles E. Sulivan,
Albert G. Sheldon, David A. Segar.

T.

Edward S. Tabor, William O. Tabor,
Thomas H. Tillinghast, William C. Tillinghast,
Brightman Tucker.

W.

Pardon T. Wright, Charles H. Worden,
Thomas A. Worden, Leander L. Weaver,
James A. Woodmansee, Sylvester Woodmansee,
John B. F. Wilbur, Nehemiah Watson,
Henry B. Willcox.

An honorable record attaches to the most of those who enlisted. There were exceptions, however. One was drummed out of camp before leaving the State, as unworthy a place in the army of the republic. Four deserted. Two were discharged as worthless. Two are marked as missing. As to four or five others, the Adjutant General furnishes no account whether discharged or lost. The last record is their enlistment.

THE POOR.

A PRACTICE of doubtful compassion prevailed even at a late period. The unfortunate poor were subjected to the mercenary greed of any speculator in human service. They were let in open meeting, individually, with the understanding that the price was a balance beyond what the bidder could realize from the service he could exact from the person, or persons, struck off to him. Thus, on August 31st, 1819, eight persons were bid off at prices varying from thirteen cents to one dollar per week; the total paid for the board of the eight persons, by the town, being $1.61 per week. This was regarded as a financial improvement over the practice which had hitherto prevailed of leaving to the Town Council the care of providing homes for them.

A plan of this kind may be economical, in a financial point of view, but is so likely to be a bait to men more mercenary than merciful, that a humane spirit would be likely to distrust the operation.

We now ask special attention to a subject of importance to the poor. A practice, inaugurated by the first Town Council as their first act, a practice which has been pursued

and acted upon from time to time, but which, though hoary with age, and claimed to be "*right according to law*," we wish to declare as abhorrent to the finer feelings of our instincts and we believe it to be opposed to the express directions of Jehovah to his people when he led them to the land of their promised inheritance, and a violation of the Golden Rule. That Town Council passed the following as their first act:

"Voted, That the Town Clerk grant out a warrant forthwith to transport out of this town into the town of Westerly, one Ebenezer Kinyon and his wife and family, in order that they may return to the town where of right they belong according to law."

MISCELLANEOUS ITEMS.

In the year 1800, the amount of tax assessed in town on all estates, real and personal, was $183.52.25-100.

On dwellings separate from other estates, $55.57.6-100.

On lands, $426.94.65-100.

On two slaves, at fifty cents each, $1.00.

There were two hundred and nineteen taxpayers.

The largest tax was assessed to Simeon Clarke: $9.06.6-100.

The smallest, on land of Joseph Knowles, of South Kingstown, $0.02.

George James was Collector.

On the 16th of September, 1796, the tax list footed up, on the real and personal estate, $158,459.

In 1875, after a period of seventy-nine years, it footed up $1,264,200.

In 1865, there were in town seven hundred and thirty-five acres of plowed land, thirty-five hundred and twenty-four acres of mowing land, eighty-three hundred and seventy-eight acres of pasture land, and of unimproved lands, ninety-two hundred and eleven acres.

At Usquepang, there was formerly a tavern standing directly on the line between Richmond and South Kingstown, so that the seller of liquor stood in Richmond while the drinker was in the other town.

Richmond has not been without men of inventive genius. Among these we number Horace B. Knowles, who invented a mowing machine driven and operated by hand, a self-operating railroad switch, a tape machine, and a machine for putting tin tips upon boot lacings. The screw propeller is also claimed as his invention. For developing some of these, and bringing them into use, he left his native town and located in Providence.

The following accounts are taken from a book whose car list date is 1761, but, on the first page, reads:

"May ye 24th, 1763, then come from the Fish Keels.'

It appears to have been the property of Joseph Philips. It is introduced to show the difference of style and expression in recording business acts and the change that has taken place in the manner of spelling. One of the extracts will show to what an extent colonial currency had depreciated in value.

One memorandum is as follows:

"October ye 22, 1765. Thos. Potter Promased to Keep Petter Boss Indemnified from any cost or damage on Joseph Sanderlin's going out of Jale."

An account, commenced June 24, 1764, is kept on one page in colonial currency, and another in lawful English money value. The spelling is as in the account but the amount is carried out in two columns as on the separate pages.

"John Lewis Dr

	£	s	d	£	s	d
To Ritting one Deed & note	1	5	"...."		1	2
To the use of my mair one day.....	1	"	"...."		1	"
To caring Bag of hay seed..	"	10	"...."		"	6
To pastering a mair 2 weeks 5 days.....	4	15	"...."		4	2
To keeping 3 cattle 3 weeks	18	"	"...."		15	9
To keeping 3 cattle 2 days..	2	"	"...."		1	9
To keeping a calf 7 weeks..	2	2	"...."		1	10

The credits are in lawful money.

By the use of 2 oxen & cart to go to Teffts & fetch a loome.....	"	1	"
July By 5 peacks of corne	"	5	"
Jannary 1765 By one bushel corne	"	4	"
" By 1 bushel corne....	"	4	"
Febuary By 1 bushel corne	"	4	"

March 8—1765 Credit in full by me received of Lewis

Joseph Philips."

Another account on debtor side is as follows:

"May ye 9th 1763

	£	s	d
To my going to Providence myself and hors	12	0	0
To my dinner going down.....	1	5	0
To 2 quarts of oats.....	0	10	0
To 1 dram.....	0	8	0
To my supper and lodging.....	1	15	0
To my hors keeping 1 nite.....	2	15	0
To my breakfast.....	1	5	0
To 2 quarts of oats.....	0	10	0
To 1 dram.....	0	8	0
	£21	19	0

The following is the list of the names of Town Clerks since the organization of the town in 1747 to the present date, with the length of time each served in that office:

John Webster, seven years.

William Clarke, one year.

Simeon Perry, three years and two months, when he moved from the town, and

Stephen Hoxsie was elected for the remainder of the year, ten months.

John Tefft, Jr., seven years.

Thomas Lillibridge, sixteen years.

Thomas Tefft, thirty years.

Reynolds Hoxsie, forty years.

Halsey P. Clarke, the present incumbent, was elected in June, 1852, and has held the office continuously since; a little over twenty-four years.

In 1809, June 30th, a destructive gale passed over the town, doing much damage to forests. And some buildings were also destroyed. Its track was narrower, and the damage far less, than that which swept over New England September 23d, 1815.

December 25th, 1811, a snow storm of great severity passed over a wide range of territory. The severity of this storm was felt more from the sudden change from a season of remarkable warmth that preceded it. The day previous was so warm that many attended Christmas meetings, and festivals, in thin dresses adapted rather to summer than winter wear. The storm came from the northeast. It is said the first point where it was known to reach the ground

was in the western part of North Carolina, a short time before midnight. Its contact with the ground was in a direction in opposition to the course of the wind. It did not develop here till near four o'clock in the morning. Doors were blown open by the violence of the wind. The cold was so piercing that children were frozen in their beds, and cattle, hogs and poultry perished in great numbers. The snow also fell in great depth, burying flocks of sheep and other animals under the piling drifts. There were then few vessels on the Sound but what were out suffered intensely, the spray freezing on the sails, and on the hulls of the vessels, so as to render them unmanageable. Seamen, and passengers, froze their limbs in their efforts to keep the vessels above water.

LIQUOR SELLING, ETC.

THE sale of intoxicating liquors probably was carried on in what is now Richmond, before it was incorporated as a town. As before noticed, the town was incorporated August 18, 1747. On the 28th of the same month an election was held, and the Town Council organized September 1st. Their first act we have noticed. Their second and third acts were to grant licenses "to sell all kinds of strong liquors." These were granted John Webb and Nathaniel Potter. The former paid five pounds; and the latter two pounds, ten shillings. The second year, these licenses were renewed, and two more were granted, to Joseph Woodmansie, Jr., and Nicholas Larkin. Webb's place of business was at what has been called the "Punch Bowl." Larkin's stood near where the meeting house at Woodville now stands. The third year, no man could get a license without giving bonds in the sum of one hundred pounds for their "true and faithful performance of keeping good order during the time of license." The evils of the traffic seem thus early to crop out, and demand greater safeguards for the public peace and virtue. Webb, this year, is charged twelve pounds for a

license. Larkin, "for sundry reasons," is at first refused a license to sell liquors of any kind, or to keep a public house. At the end of two months, Larkin succeeds in overcoming the scruples of the Council, and he is licensed for the remainder of the year and, Joseph Enos, Stephen Wilcox, Robert Moore and John Stanton are licensed; but no license is allowed to run further than to the election and re-organization of the Town Councils, please mark this.

It would seem that a sense of propriety might dictate a similar course for all succeeding Councils. The traffic seems to have grown with the growth of the town; and wherever there was a store, or a tavern, intoxicating liquors were a part of the stock in trade. As the places of sale multiplied, the habit of drinking became general. Not the sensuous alone drank, but good men drank. It was little or no disparagement to a man to share the social glass. Even fifty years ago, men high in esteem—magistrates, deacons, and even ministers of the gospel—drank. It was furnished at funerals, and at weddings. In short, it was not deemed indecorous to be introduced any and everywhere. Politicians made it a tool with which to bias the mind and shake the purpose of men entrusted with the ballot. It was no uncommon occurrence on election days to find the candidates for office giving free breakfasts to all.

Fifty-three years ago, a scene of this kind, here in Richmond, made such indelible impressions upon the mind of a young man, that he vowed, deep down in his heart, never to taste the dangerous chalice. He has, thus far, kept his pledge. And well he might. His father and his uncle, accustomed to be sober, exemplary men, finding liquor tables

arranged on either side of the voting hall, drank to please each of the candidates, and drank so often and so freely, that the live-long night was too short for them, with the faithful help of the young man, to reach their home before aurora had pioneered the sun to his place in the eastern horizon. Thus mortified, humbled and warned, he guarded his own heart and life-practice by entering his vow on the tablet of indelible promises. With such practices so early begun, and persistently pursued, by the devotees of rum, what but widespread ruin could be the result. Drunkards were multiplied, fortunes were wasted, enterprise was paralized and morals were corrupted.

While the patrons of the grogshop were thus beguiled, and their earnings and possessions squandered, no corresponding profit accrued to the retailer. Though large sales were made, they were not all ultimately successful. Alas! the history of the traffic is a history of failures. Success is the exception. Each part of the town had its retailer. If memory could go back and be true to itself, how many sad wrecks would it find. Those who continued longest, and were most successful, are most vividly remembered, whilst the long train of failures pass into obscurity and are forgotten.

I am unwilling to re-open wounds in the hearts of living friends of those who made shipwreck, but who is there that has lived in Richmond for fifty, thirty, or even twenty years, but can recall instances where retailers have been customers at their own counters, or whose sons have not all escaped the snaky demon. Imperfect as has been my own knowledge of Richmond, I can point to more than one case where

the father and his first born son have become victims of the glass, and more than one retailer's daughter who has had a drunken husband. Their misfortunes are not unlike others. In my native town, the old tavern keeper, long before his time to die, could keep sober only by allowing his wife to carry the keys of the *bar* on her apron-strings. Of his six sons, four became intemperate. His three daughters married, and the husbands of two of them became inebriates, one dying of *delirium tremens* while he was comparatively a young man. Thus does this terrible business verify the Scripture, that: "He visits the iniquities of the fathers upon the children."

Mr. Dawley, of Wyoming, was the first man to whom I went, book in hand, to gather materials for this paper. With gentlemanly frankness, he gave me the facts of his house as far back as he knew its history. Men of the present generation need not be told where his house is located, but should my grandson find this manuscript, he should know it to be in Wyoming, formerly Brand's Iron Works. Since the opening of the New London and Providence turnpike, this house has been better known than any other public house in town. Mr. Dawley's knowledge of the house went back only to the time when Joseph Irish owned and occupied it. He died in 1818. His life was a moral failure. He gave the tavern to Matthew G. Wilbur, but before he came into possession of it, a Mrs. Fields occupied it, but did not succeed. Mr. Wilbur then occupied it for ten or fifteen years, and sold with no capital beyond what was given to him, and is thought to have remained temperate. Silas R. Kenyon next carried on the tavern for about ten

years, and when he left, owed almost everybody and was unable to pay ten per cent. of his indebtedness.

Mr. Dawley has occupied the stand for nearly thirty years. A part of the time he has made it pay; at others, not. He said nothing of the victims of his traffic, but said of himself that "he gets drunk when he takes a notion and when he chooses he lets it alone." I am but little acquainted with Mr. Dawley, but think, if he were to take his notion of abstinence oftener, and make it last longer, it would be an improvement. He is an exception among tavern keepers. He uses no tobacco. He did smoke occasionally, till a Connecticut Yankee sold him cigars that he dare not continue to smoke. He seemed to wish me to understand he was a man who had fixedness of will for self-government.

Mr. Jordan, of the same village, has not been so long in the trade. While he pursues it with the hope of profit, he admits that "the business has a bad side to it." He should bear in mind that while a few retailers have added to their fortunes, the great majority have made financial failures. Each man, however, has assured himself on the start, that he would be an honorable exception. A more lamentable loss has usually been a loss of susceptibility of the moral sense; a loss of regard for right and the calls of conscience toward God and man. The very nature of the business involves this. Scarce a retailer can be found but that, when at his best, will own, as did Mr. Jordan, "the business has a bad side to it." Feeling that the money prospect is the only apology he has for the ruin he is perpetrating, the retailer must loathe himself as measured by his work. He feels the inward corrosion on his soul, though he may seek to hide it

from his eyes. If he thinks of God, he trembles for the account to be rendered at the final assize. To pursue a business fraught with such misgivings, is to suppress all sacred regards for law. He comes to obey law only when it favors his plans, but evades it just as readily when he can do it with impunity. With or without license he knows no restraint but interest. Hence, he flees to any, and every technicality that favors the traffic. A saloon keeper will sell his crackers at a price that will allow a wide margin of profits, and adds whiskey enough to wet them. A druggist will fill for the eleventh time a bottle once labeled with a doctor's prescription. Such evasions help to prepare a man to be untrue everywhere, a sham and a hypocrite. Licensed venders, habitually, violate their licenses, and unlicensed ones, with an air of sanctity, favor their patronizing friends with a sly bottle or dram, and both will claim and proclaim their innocence, or shelter themselves behind the hypocrisy of some blatant pretender of temperance.

We have mentioned a few of the early retailers and two of those now engaged in the sale. G. N. Ennis has a license at the junction; William H. Bray, at Carolina; Perry E. Browning and A. J. Dawley, Jr., at Wyoming; and undoubtedly there are some secret violators, both within the town and out of it, in border towns, where no license is claimed to prevail.

During the century under our republican government, a long array of dealers in liquid death have filed in, filling up the ranks as their predecessors have gone up to their reward, or downward to an impecunious retreat. Some have seen

their error, abandoned the nefarious traffic and lent a helping hand on the side of sobriety and virtue.

Silas Moore, Perry Clarke and George Perry were among those of the last generation that engaged in the traffic. They left some property, but their foot prints were along the precincts of danger to themselves, their families, and the community.

While this long line of dealers were seeking to hoard their gains, who shall tell the tale of woe that was the outgrowth of their business? During the one hundred and twenty-nine years since the first license was granted in Richmond, what family connection has passed unscatched by the poisonous blast from this deadly upas! Young men, the pride of their fathers, and the pet of doting mothers and fond sisters, have fallen before the fatal enchantment. Men that once bid fair to be an honor and a blessing to the town that reared them, have gone down to graves of infamy, less a grief and shame there than while living. For the few paltry *dollars* that have been *paid into* the treasury for licenses, *golden eagles* have been *paid out* for the support of paupers, and the expenses of courts and jails, required to restrain the criminals that have been crazed, or ruined, by the rum sold under those licenses.

Professed christians have dishonored their profession by yielding to the cravings of an appetite whetted by licensed indulgence, and the precious name of Christ is dishonored by their unhallowed example. Rum has cost the town large sums in the way of lawsuits, gotten up in consequence of mishaps that have occurred from inebriation. In a thousand ways, rum opens leak holes for the wealth and honor of the

town. Hangers on around grog shops create an air of filth and vulgarity, that poisons the heart and corrupts the manners of unwary boys and youths. They train an army of recruits for a downward march to the gutter, the prison and the gallows. Oh! what heart aches have preyed upon the finer feelings of the child of the drunkard, as he has found himself neglected by his schoolmates, or as he has been coldly shut out of society because his father was a drunkard! Wives and daughters have hung their heads in shame as they have seen those dear to them as life, playing the fool, or made the jibe of the vulgar, by reason of the enchanting bowl! While this long line of woes has been swelling like the surges of a sea of death, has nothing been done to turn away the tide of this engulfing horror? I have been more difficulted to find reliable facts touching this, than any other department of my research. Up to the time of reading the outline manuscript of this historic memorial on our Nation's natal day, I found no reliable witness of any temperance organization that ever existed within the town. Since that date a few facts come from memory, but I find no records of any such united action. The substance of that which comes well sustained is this: First, it is generally conceded that in this town, as in Hopkinton in the early days of the temperance agitation, the most popular minister in town for some cause did not favor the organization of temperance societies. He regarded the Church as the Divinely appointed organization for carrying forward reforms and benevolent enterprises and that other organizations for such purposes would detract from the honor that properly belonged to the church. To reform in the church,

and through the church reaching those outside, would be the pattern of his ideal. This view of the matter has so much of consistency and conservatism in it, that whatever fallacy may appear in the conclusions they draw, it ought to shelter the venerable men who held such sentiments from those severe censures that some were disposed to heap upon them, especially as their long and very useful lives were in harmony with these sentiments. They loved their churches, and were unwilling that any other compact should rob them of their honors. In this they were right, but the inferences they drew in relation to the temperance movement was not necessary; and the inferences that others drew from their position on the one hand, wronged these venerable men, and on the other, the inferences that others drew, wronged the temperance cause and perpetuated the evils of rum, and gave shelter to the devotees of drink. Outside of these influences, arose in their might men who saw and felt that something must be done more effective than was being done to arrest the tide of ruin setting in upon the public weal. Somewhere between the year 1828 and 1833, a society was organized in the vicinity of Tug Hollow, having for its pledge abstinence from spiritous liquors. This only included the idea of distilled liquors. This was then a long step in the right direction. In fact, it was as far in that direction, as the public mind was prepared for, in most other towns around. In this movement, such men as Gideon Hoxsie, Wells Reynolds, and Thomas Reynolds and his brother Robert were prominent among the men who lent a helping hand to the cause. This society flourished for some time and included many business men in that portion of the

town. Whether the total abstinence pledge was ever adopted by it, I have not learned. In the period of the Washingtonian movement, a society of that kind was organized near Shannock hill, at the Boss meeting house, under the labors of Rev. John Baker. This society seemed to accomplish a good work, and, I suppose, flourished during the life of Elder Baker. Its influence may still dwell in the hearts and lives of many in that section of this and the adjoining towns.

The question of license, or no license, became one that was brought forward for discussion. Isaac Collins, Chairman of our Town Council for the present year, thinks he was the first Councilman who opposed the granting of any license. This was in 1834. Licenses, however, were granted over his protest.

Still later, there was a struggle on the license question. V. R. Stephens took an active part as a lecturer. Some, or all the men above named, continued to be a power in town. To that list may be added, as prominent in the struggle, the names of John Olney, Deacon B. J. T. Reynolds, John Philips, Maxson T. Kenyon, Thomas Ennis, Welcome Prosser, Deacon John T. Sheldon, and others. Later still, others have continued the struggle with manly perseverance, adapting themselves to the changes of law, and the phases of the traffic.

In Town Meeting, June 5, 1849, the question of granting licenses was voted upon, and the result gave a majority against the granting of licenses. There were one hundred and eleven votes cast; forty-one for license and seventy

against license, giving a majority of twenty-nine against the traffic.

Again, in 1850, the vote was retaken, and resulted, as before, in a majority condemning the traffic. Every year, when the vote was taken separately, the result was always for prohibition. Space forbids following this history in detail. Suffice it to say, that the contest has been waged with alternations from side to side, giving occasion for the supposition that other motives have at times superseded high moral and political principle, in casting of the ballot of freemen in this town, so that the purity of the elective franchise has become a secondary consideration. In fact, it is currently reported that enough men can be found in town to give the balance of power, who will as readily put their vote in the market as they would their horse or their dog. "Free rum," of course, has a weighty influence over men of so venal a ballot. Arouse the public conscience, make the ballot sacred, and patriotism a pure flame, and the orgies of the vile traffic would be hushed and bacchanalian revels would be succeeded by the hum of industry and the songs of peace.

May I not here appeal to the latent patriotism of the men engaged in the traffic? Have you not long enough followed a business which virtually barters the bodies and souls of your neighbors for a mess of miserable pottage, less worthy than that for which Esau sold his birthright? The motive to transmit to your children the fruit of your toil is a worthy one; but, to heap up treasures by the blood of the victims of your traffic, will entail a mildew on treasures thus acquired. If you sow to the wind, your children

and children's children may reap the whirlwind. On this centennial year, let the love of country, the love of humanity, rise above the love of gain. Emulate the example of the men who pledged their lives, their fortunes, and their sacred honors, in their country's cause. Strike out for an example worthy of yourselves, and transmit to your posterity a name that will be dearer to children's children than houses and lands, and treasures of gold, in a town blighted by the perpetual curse of rum.

License to sell intoxicating liquors as a beverage is a crime against human society, and a sin against God. No man has a right to grant, or accept such a license. Far less would be the evil to grant license for petty larceny. *This* would make *property* insecure; but *that* robs humanity of its heaven-born treasures; yea, it robs man of himself, and every sacred treasure. With this fact before them, as the known and legitimate result of licenses, how could the appointed guardians of the public interest, our late Town Council, grant five such licenses as a sort of finishing act in their public career? They not only granted licenses, but leaped over the accustomed order, and forestalled the public will, to please the devotees of rum. They granted licenses for the year over which their successors should have had the prerogative, and for which they should have been responsible. But the Council are not alone responsible. The record of the Town Clerk shows that the legal notice was given after the petitioners applied for license, and no one appeared to protest against the granting of said licenses. This does not relieve the Council, for they were the chosen guardians of the public interest. The Town Clerk, and all citizens

having a knowledge of the application, share in the responsibility as truly as the Council. In vain can any one think to excuse himself with the response of Cain: "Am I my brother's keeper?"

Though hand join in hand, God has said: the wicked shall not go unpunished. To Him, then, we must commit the cause where its issues are beyond our reach.

Thus partially forestalled, the friends of temperance are admonished to greater vigilence and to an unceasing toil till their work is crowned with a victory complete and perpetual.

The traffic has fought long and hard, and its throes betoken its coming death struggles. The history of the last fifty years is full of promise to the men of faith. Every apparent defeat has been the prelude to a more exalted victory. Dark clouds have lowered only to be followed by brighter sunshine. Let none falter, but, let all raise their Ebenezer on the Rock of Truth. Yea, let all the men of might say: "Hitherto hath the Lord helped us." Let the banner of Hope cheer the struggling Coharts, and long ere the bicentennial of our favored land shall be ushered in, Rum and its minions will be vanquished foes.

SUPPLEMENT.

GENEALOGICAL.

THE following genealogies of families, some of whose branches have resided in Richmond, may be of interest to the present and future generations. They are the result of careful research and are believed to be correct:

BABCOCK.

The first definite history at hand, of the branch of this family that settled in Richmond, was in the person of George Babcock, who, in 1709, was one of the recipients of the Shannock purchase. His portion took the south end of Shannock Hill; and, on the west side, extended to the Paweatuck river. He died May 1st, 1756, in his eighty-third year. His wife, Elizabeth, died May 1st, 1762, aged ninety years.

Elisha Babcock, son of the above, was born May 18, 1718. Simeon, his son, was born May 31, 1745, and died September 21, 1806. Mary Babcock, his widow, died in Richmond, July 20, 1847, aged ninety-seven years. Simeon, his son, lived on the west side of Shannock hill, where he built and operated a tannery, etc. He was drowned at the Charlestown breach. Members of his family still reside in the vicinity.

Joseph H. Babcock, of Carolina, and Edmund S. Babcock, of Wakefield, belong to branches of the same family.

BARBER.

Samuel Barber came from England and settled in what is now Richmond, in about 1714. His son, Caleb Barber, was ten years old at that time. He lived where Deacon J. C. Baker now lives, and died in 1816, aged ninety-two years.

Elder Benjamin Barber, son of Samuel, lived near the school-house on Tifft hill.

Moses Barber, another son, lived on Bald hill.

Alanson Barber, of Arcadia, was grandson, and Archibald Barber, of Carolina, a son of Caleb Barber.

CLARKE.

The lineage of this family, now so very numerous in Richmond and vicinity, can be traced back to 1559, as follows:

William Clarke, one of the first settlers in what is now Richmond, was the son of Joseph Clarke, who died at Westerly, January 11th, 1726, aged eighty-three years. This Joseph was the son of Joseph Clarke, who was born December 9th, 1618, and died June 1st, 1694. He was

named an assistant in the charter of 1663, and was brother to Dr. John Clarke, of Newport, who procured the charter from the Crown. Dr. Clarke was a man of wealth and renowned for integrity and patriotism.

The last named, Joseph Clarke, was the son of Thomas Clarke, who was born on All Saints' Day, November, 1570. He died July 27, 1627. His father, John Clarke, was born February, 1514, and was buried April 7, 1598. He was the son of John Clarke, of whom all that is known is, that he was buried March 3d, A. D. 1559.

We will now return to the record of William Clarke. He was born in Newport in 1670, and died in Richmond February 28, 1767, aged ninety-seven years. He had four brothers, Samuel, Thomas, Joseph and John. His son William was born at Newport, in 1702, and died at Richmond, March 28, 1786. He had five other sons: Thomas, Jonathan, Caleb, Robert and Elisha. The sons of the last named, William, were: James, William, Gideon, Joshua, Peter and Weeden. Gideon was the grandfather of John G. Clarke, of South Kingstown. Jonathan was the grandfather of Halsey P. Clarke. Weeden lived and died at Shannock hill, in Richmond, leaving four sons: Weeden, Peleg, (Dr.) Pardon and William.

The children of Jonathan Clarke above named, were: Jonathan, Abraham, Josiah, Nathaniel, Tabitha, Sarah, Benjamin, Hannah and David. David was born October 14, 1756, and married Mary Cross. Their children were: Sarah, Ann and David. This David Clarke married Susannah, daughter of George Perry, and their only living child is Halsey P. Clarke.

LILLIBRIDGE.

Thomas Lillibridge came from England and was admitted a freeman in Newport, May 6, 1701. He purchased land in Westerly, now Richmond, in 1711, and moved there in 1720. His estate included the farm now owned by Wanton Lillibridge, one of his descendents; also the farm owned by N. K. Church, and, perhaps, more besides. He died August 29, 1827, leaving a widow and eleven children. His widow, Sarah, died January, 1761. The children were: Thomas, Robert, Elizabeth, Catharine, Sarah, Mary, Esther, Benjamin, Edward, John and Patience.

Thomas, Jr., died February 8, 1757, in his fifty-fifth year, intestate. His children were: Thomas, Edward and Elizabeth.

Thomas, under the English laws, inherited the estate. Robert had the farm now owned by Wanton Lillibridge, which he sold to Edward, brother of Thomas 3d, in whose line it is now held. Branches of this family settled in Newport, South Kingstown and Exeter.

COLLINS.

Henry Collins embarked in the ship Abigail, on the 30th of the 6th month, 1635. In 1639, he was a member of the Salem Court. He was a starch manufacturer on Essex street, in Lynn, Mass. He had a grant of eighty acres of land. His four children, Henry, John, Mary and Joseph, were born in England; the last, the year they embarked for America. This John, and his wife, dwelt in Lynn, where they had eighteen children. The oldest was named John, who, with his father, was drowned. After this, his mother called the youngest John, who had been

named William. This John married Susannah Dagget. This Susannah Dagget, when a small girl, wandered into the woods and lost her way. Near night she was found by the wife of an Indian chief, who took her to her wigwam and promised to restore her to her home in the morning. She made her a bed of bear skins. At a late hour, the chief came home and told his wife that a council of war had been held, and a plan was arranged to exterminate the pale faces. The wife hushed him, saying there was a little pale-face in the wigwam. The chief then said she must die. But the squaw said she had pledged her faith, and the child must be spared. To this the chief assented, provided it appeared that the little pale-face proved to be asleep. So, taking a firebrand, he passed it over her head, and finding she did not wink, spared her. In the morning, she was conducted to her home, She gave the alarm, and when the Indians came to execute their plan, they found the colonists prepared, and their purpose was foiled. The little pale-face had done it!

John and Susannah had ten children. Their son John was born in the town, then called Westerly, the 21st of the twelfth month, 1716, old style. He was married to Mehitabel Brown. They had nine children. Amos, their third child, was born in 1749, and in 1767 married Thankful Clarke. Their children were: Timothy, Abel, Isaac, Amos, Susan, Ruth, Hannah and John. This Abel was the father of Amos, the "Rural Bard," recently deceased, and of Abel, now residing in North Stonington, Conn., Isaac married Mary Collins, his second cousin, daughter of Joseph Collins. Their children were: William, Nancy,

Thankful, Amos, Mary, Isaac, Catharine, Joseph, Ephraim C. Bathsheba, John W., Charles W., and Thomas J. Isaac, senior, lived in North Stonington till after the birth of his son Isaac. He then moved into Richmond and lived eighteen years, when he moved into Hopkinton, where he died. Isaac, Jr., is now the President of the Town Council of Richmond, living at Usquepaug.

MOORE.

John Moore came from England and settled in the east part of Richmond. His sons were: David, John and George. This David was the father of Silas Moore, deceased. David, the son of Silas, now lives where his father lived and died. His wife was the granddaughter of Joseph James, who came from England in company with John Moore.

INDEX.

Adventists.....19
Agriculture.....24
Arcadia.....57–58
Barberous persecution of Quakers—cause of exclusiveness..14
Boss meeting house.....17
Brand's iron works, etc.....51
Bribery and corruption..... 8– 9
Brothers' Cotton Manufacturing Company.....51–52
Chaise with leathern thorough-brace springs.....25
Charlestown..... 7
Characteristics.....29
Churches, or societies, as perennial organizations.....11
Church at Woodville.....18
Churches, influence of those on the borders of the town.....18–19
Clarke's Mills.....56
Colony at Wickford..... 6
Constitution—submitted to the people of the States—Jonathan Maxson.....36
Country stores.....26
Declaration of Independence, indorsing.....32
Deed W. R. B. church property.....12–13
Destructive gales—1809—1815.....73
Disposition of Lands—"Shannock Purchase".43–44
Doctrine of equal rights..... 9
Drays, extemporized—carrying light burdens on horseback.25
Dressed hog on horseback—three hundred pounds.....25–26

Early Settlers—names of heads of families.....37–41
Education.....20
Education, disadvantages by reason of a lack of.....22–23
Elliptical steel springs.....25
Enrolled itself as Richmond in King's county, State of R. I.32
Farming in the early days—remarks.....28
First cotton factory.....50–51
First one-horse wagon.....24–25
First Town Meeting.....29
First wagon,—what Mr. Lillibridge says.....26
First house of worship built in town.....13
First tavern.....51
Freedom to worship God.....10
Freeman's oath..... 8
Gardner Nichols's father and the two Lockshire plows.....25
Grasshopper seats.....25
Habits—restraints.....27–28
Heroic lovers—John Babcock and Mary Lawton..... 6
Hillsdale.....54–55
Holburton.....55–56
How history of the town can be traced..... 5
Intelligence and virtue of the individual.....22
Joseph Nichols's grist mill.....52–53
King's county (or province)..... 7
Letter to the Town Council..... 3– 4
Liquor Selling—drinking—effects—remarks.....75–87
Lockshire plow.....24
Lover and his lass—pillion.....24
Manufactures.....48–58
Marriage—Job Irish and Mary Weaver.....15–17
Mills and Mill Property.....45–47
Miscellaneous—Old accounts, etc.....70–72
Misquamicut..... 7
Name propounded to become a freeman..... 8
Olneys' factory—J. T. Sheldon.....52
Other Enterprises — poultry—cranberries — leather—peat and muck—ponds—bogs—dairy.....59–61
Pastors W. R. B. church.....11–12
Peacedale Manufacturing Company—Carolina Mills Co.....53
Plainville.....56–57

Poor.....68-69
Profanity.....27
Quakers.....13
Quo warranto in 1665..... 6
Railroads.....62
Religious meetings in private houses.....17-18
Records, church.....13
Rights inherent in the nature of man, etc.....26-27
Richmond set off as a separate town..... 7- 8
Royal charter..... 5
Rowse Clarke's wagon shop.....26
Rum.....53
School Superintendent's report.....20
Schools—"My own experience as a teacher".....20-21
Schools, free.....21
Shannock.....53
Statistics—1774, etc.....41-42
Susannah Barber.....49
Teriffic snow storm—1811.....73-74
The Churches.....11
Their [x] mark.....21-22
Town Council—must bear their own expenses.....30
Town Clerks, names of.....73
Tug Hollow.....55
Usquepaug.....58
Virgin soil.....27
Wars, earliest..... 9-10
War, French and Indian—Manner in which town acted....30-31
War of the Revolution.....32-35
Wars—1812—Dorr—Rebellion.....63-64
War, Rebellion, names of volunteers.....65-67
War of Rebellion, town expenditures.....64-65
Westerly, fifth town in the colony—Richmond, etc..... 7
Wood River or Six-Principle Baptist church.....11
Woodville.....54
Women's preparative.....14

SUPPLEMENT.

Genealogical—Babcock—Barber—Clarke—Lillibridge—Collins—Moore.....88-93

AN

HISTORICAL SKETCH

— OF THE —

TOWN OF RICHMOND,

— FROM —

1747 to 1876,

[illegible] Pub[illegible] Town Hall [illegible] [illegible]

— PREPARED BY —

JAMES R. IRISH, D. D.,

— AND —

DELIVERED JULY 4TH, 1876.

AT [illegible] HALL.

[illegible]
[illegible]

HISTORICAL SKETCH

— OF THE —

TOWN OF RICHMOND,

— FROM —

1747 to 1876,

Comprising a Period of One Hundred and Twenty-nine Years.

— PREPARED BY —

JAMES R. IRISH, D. D.,

— AND —

DELIVERED JULY 4TH, 1876,

AT WOOD RIVER GROVE.

HOPE VALLEY, R. I.:
L. W. A. COLE, JOB PRINTER,
1877.

PREFATORY.

To the Honorable, the Town Council of Richmond.

SIRS: When your committee invited me to write a historical paper to be read to the citizens of Richmond, on the centennial anniversary day of the nation, the state of my health and prior public engagements, forbid my using more than a moiety of the few weeks intervening, in gathering and arranging the facts to be presented on that occasion. This was all the more difficult from my limited acquaintance with the persons and records whence the facts must be gathered.

Here, I wish to record my sense of obligation to the Town Clerk, and other members of the committee, for their timely aid in my work. Gratitude is due to the many citizens on whom I called, for the kindly manner in which they welcomed my inquiries, and for the cheerful way in which they unlocked, for my use, the stores of their memories and the libraries of their records.

The first paper was prepared in view of the *day* and the *occasion*, rather than with a view to its future use. I had become so impressed with the defects of its arrangement, and the limited scope of its included facts, that I thought it should be *re-written*, rather than copied for record. I so stated to the Town Clerk on the day of its delivery. Although the first paper had been accepted and approved by your committee, as a paper to be *read*, the re-writing was determined on. I am, however, impressed with a sense of the imperfection of my work, but, such as it is, I submit it to you, asking you to reject any portion you may disapprove, and I will willingly receive suggestions to alter any part where it may be improved.

I have written no history of your common schools, believing you have already a better history of them than I could write.

I am more than willing you should insert the document prepared by Mr. N. K. Church, if due credit be given him for his valuable production.

Yours respectfully,

J. R. IRISH.

ROCKVILLE, Dec. 4, 1876.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

—— OF THE ——

TOWN OF RICHMOND, R. I.

———o———

The history of this town, during its settlement, can be traced only in connection with the history of Westerly, as it was a part of its territory for sixty-nine years after its organization.

Still earlier, the entire area, from Narragansett bay to Pawcatuck river, and the bay at its mouth (early known as little Narragansett) was a subject of controversy, being claimed in turn by Connecticut and Massachusetts, in opposition to the claim of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations.

According to Wilson's history, Connecticut received, in 1660, a royal charter embracing the territory from Narragansett bay and the river, westward to the Pacific ocean. The following year, Rhode Island received from the same royal authority, a charter extending its limits westward to Narragansett river, which the King explained as identical with Paweatuck river.

The authorities in each colony laid claim to the whole. This became a source of much uneasiness during the early years of its occupancy. The first settlements along the southern shore were made by adventurers from Rhode Island.

As our family traditions pass it down to us, the first of these was by heroic lovers, who, despite the opposition of forbidding parents, committed themselves to each other, and the providence of God, and tried the fortunes of the wilderness. Landing on the east side of Pawcatuck river, at the mouth of Massatuxet brook, they built themselves a wigwam. There they lived in friendly intercourse with the natives and reared their family.

This couple were John Babcock and Mary Lawton. Their first child, James Babcock, was the first male white child born in the Narragansett territory. From these, sprang the numerous family of Babcocks, in Westerly and vicinity. When their place of retreat was communicated, by the natives, to settlers at Newport, others came and settled around them. About the same time, 1642, a colony from Connecticut, and others from Massachusetts, settled at Wickford. As these colonies increased in numbers, jealousies ensued, and the rival claims of the authorities were pushed with a bitterness that threatened disastrous consequences. Artful diplomacies on either side, made the controversy only more complicated, till ruptures, arrests and bloodshed brought the crisis before the Crown. To settle the dispute, a *quo warranto* was issued by order of the king, in 1665. Both charters were dissolved and the government assumed by the King. By various fortunes, the settlements progressed, and

at length the disputed territory was accorded to the jurisdiction of Rhode Island. That portion bordering on the ocean between Narragansett bay and Pawcatuck river was denominated King's county or King's province.

The western part was originally called Misquamicut. While Connecticut held it, she called it Haversham.

In May, 1669, it was organized by the General Assembly of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, under the name of Westerly, as the fifth town in the colony. Westerly, as then organized, embraced what is now the four towns: Westerly, Charlestown, Richmond and Hopkinton.

On the fourth Tuesday of August, 1738, a town was set off, bearing the name: Charlestown.

The line of division commences where Wood River emerges from Exeter, and follows the course of this river to where it empties into the Pawcatuck. It then follows the course of the Pawcatuck two miles; thence it runs directly south to the open sea. Population increased quite rapidly for a time, and on the third Tuesday of August, (18th,) 1747, Richmond was by an Act of the General Assembly set off as a separate town.

The Act authorizing the separation reads as follows:

"Be it enacted by the General Assembly, and by the authority thereof, it is enacted: That the town of Charlestown, in the County of King's county, in the Province of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, be divided into two towns, by a river that runs across said town, by the name of Pawcatuck river.

"All the lands to the southward of said river, shall retain the name of Charlestown; and that, all the land to the northward of said river, be, and hereby is incorporated into a township, by the name of Richmond, and to have and enjoy the like privileges as the other towns in this colony."

The Act further made provision for calling a town meeting of the *freemen* of the town for the appointment of officers, and, generally, to put in running order the machinery of a living organization.

During the colonial period, and some time after the declaration of independence, the elective franchise was exercised only by those who had taken the *freeman's oath.*

This oath bound the several electors against

"BRIBERY AND CORRUPTION."

It was further required, that any man proposing to become a freeman, should have his name propounded at a town meeting previous to taking the oath, in order that if required, he might show proof of a clean record. The records of the colonial legislature show that he should also be propounded before the General Assembly.

Though the formula of this oath has passed away, it were well if the sons of these venerable fathers should, for a centennial vow, revive the *spirit* of that political standard, so that "bribery and corruption" shall henceforth rank in the public *conscience* with mendacity, perjury, treason, and other base and venal crimes.

Young men of Richmond, lend me your ears! As you value the institutions of a free republic, and as you would

transmit them unsullied to posterity, cherish and maintain the *purity of the ballot box.* When freemen carry their votes into the public mart, to be bought and sold as merchandise, they have sapped the very foundations of true liberty, and opened the flood gates of every villainous and corrupt practice. Scarce a greater insult could be offered to a virtuous patriot, than to proffer a *price for his vote.* Give to such panderers for political favor a wide berth and let them know that they shall have the reward that such servility deserves. We shall worthily hail the reminiscences that our Centennial affords, only as we cull from the deeds of our fathers such fruit as shall add to our own love of that which is excellent and praiseworthy. Let us so use the garnered virtues of the past, that, transplanted to the garden of the future, posterity may gather rich fruitage, made thirty, sixty or an hundred fold more grand and noble by the high vantage ground which a new century, with its increased facilities, may impart. To ascribe to them the meed that is their due, we must take a gauge of the impediments that they must needs surmount. Without the benefits of pioneer experience, they, with meager facilities, subdued a forest wilderness, in the face of a treacherous foe, whose rights they little understood. They found a climate more rigorous than that to which they were accustomed. They had almost no help from the skilled appliances of machinery. The doctrine of equal rights was so little understood, that untold losses sprang from the selfish greed that so often provoked retaliation on the part of those whose rights were encroached. Wars not only wasted their resources, but cut off the opportunities of resource.

With such hindrances to encounter, we wonder that they achieved so much. Upon our vantage ground it becomes us to raise higher the standard, and develop and exemplifiy a nobler patriotism, a more refined cultivation, a broader citizenship, a purer christianity, and a richer grace than has come down to us from the straits of the past.

The history of Richmond strictly begins with its incorporation as a town. There are, however, materials out of which that history is in part formed, that call us to recount some events that come from an earlier date.

As one of the moving impulses, and perhaps the *most* moving that prompted our fathers to leave the lands that gave them birth, to find an abode in the wilderness, was the hope of "freedom to worship God," we may, with propriety inquire, first, after the history of religion in this town.

THE CHURCHES.

How early societies, or churches, were formed in the town, no record shows. Sure it is, that the earliest records known, give account of churches, or societies, existing and acting as perennial organizations.

The first of these was the Wood River, or Six-Principle Baptist church, of Richmond. Its earliest known record dates A. D. 1723, when they called Daniel Averitt, of Providence, to be their minister. He accepted the call and soon moved among them, but was not ordained as *pastor* until May 25, 1732. In 1733, two deacons were appointed, and another in 1735.

From this date there is a break in the records till 1770, when John Pendleton was chosen pastor. Subsequently, this church enjoyed the pastoral labors of Elders Henry Joslin, from 1788 to 1806; Joseph James, from 1810 a number of years, when, through the infirmities of age, he was unable to serve them. For some years previous to 1833, Elders William Manchester, John Gardiner, Pardon Tillinghast and Thomas Tillinghast, were ministerial supplies, rather as evangelists than pastors. At the last date,

Elder Thomas Tillinghast was chosen pastor, who served them with great acceptance for twenty-nine years, when, in consequence of growing infirmities and age, he asked a release from the pastoral care, and his son, Gilbert Tillinghast, was chosen to that charge, in which he has served to the present time. This church has been blessed with a succession of faithful deacons, and many active members, by whom the hands of the pastors have been held up, and their joint labors have done much to mold the opinions and character of the men of the town. Their seasons of worship have been characterized as peculiarly social, as compared with the worship of many other congregations. They have retained more of the style and manner of past generations than most other churches. The old fashioned religion and the old forms of expressing the emotional elements of religious experience, find favor with them, especially in their covenant meetings.

The first house of worship, built by this church, was probably erected on the lot now occupied by said church. The deed of said lot bears date and is recorded in the town records as follows: "In the year of our Sovereign Lord George the Third," Nov. 13, 1769. For the sum of [illegible] pounds paid to the husband, and five shillings paid to the wife, William, and Hannah Kenyon his wife, deeded to Benjamin Barber, Stephen Wilcox, Thomas Kenyon, John Tefft, and William Tefft, of Richmond, Nathan Barber and Robert Kenyon, of Hopkinton, members of the Society of Baptists, in Richmond, holding the six principles mentioned in Hebrews, vi:1, one acre of land in trust for said society and their successors, to erect such buildings thereon

they shall deem proper," etc. Additions to the lot have since been made for cemetery, etc.

The first house of worship built in town, is supposed to have been put up by the Quakers, on a lot containing one acre, deeded in the second month, 28th day, A. D. 1755, by John Knowles, to Solomon Hoxsie, Stephen Hoxsie, John Collins, Jr., Simeon Tucker, Jr., and John Knowles, Jr., in consideration of ten pounds, New England currency, old tenor, as a meeting house lot, and for a burying ground. The house of worship seems to have been begun before the deed was given, as we find by the record of the monthly-meeting held the first of the seventh month, 1754. An addition was reported "to the subscription for the meeting house that is building in Richmond, of £51 5s. Friends appointed to carry on said building report, that they have laid out the money subscribed, and that there is yet wanting of the supposed cost £260, which we recommend to the notice of the next quarterly meeting." These monthly meetings included with Richmond, South Kingstown and Westerly; Hopkinton not having yet been set off from Westerly. How early meetings of worship were held by the Quakers in this town, is not known, but tradition says, long before the records in the monthly meeting.

The first monthly meeting recorded was held the third month and 30th day, 1743. From a portion of the record it is supposed the habit of keeping continuous records had not been previously adopted. That note reads as follows: "This meeting, deeming it needful to have books provided to keep the records for the recording of the minutes of this meeting, and also marriages, and deaths, and births, this

meeting do appoint Peter Davis to provide paper and put it in order. No further business at present. This meeting ended."

The first record of the women's preparative, or monthly meeting, bears even date with the above. Both records show a watchful and loving care of the members for each other, and a faithful and jealous care for the honor of religion, and the virtue and purity of the society. Their rebukes of delinquent members, while kind, were firm. Their witness against the wrongs of society, whether popular or unpopular, were such as to give great power to their influence on the public mind. The barberous persecutions which they received from professed religionists of other sects, may be an apology for the exclusiveness they practiced towards all outside worshippers. Removals and deaths seem to have thinned their numbers in the section around their house of worship in this town, and it was eventually given up as a place of worship. The last meeting held in it was a funeral sometime in August 1844; ninety years from the time of its erection. The guard thrown around the marriage institution by this denomination, is worthy of honorable mention, and if those principles were somehow interwoven in our statute regulations and carried out in the social relations of society, our land would be greatly benefited, and the future less reproach than the present generation by divorces.

A record of their order, in the preliminaries and rite of marriage, may be new and interesting to many of our citizens, and as this may be most intelligently shown by the details of an example, I take this method. The example

select is the marriage of a pair of my ancestors, but it does not differ materially from others in the record.

"At the monthly meeting ye 25th of ye 3d month, 1753, Job Irish, son of Jedediah of Westerly, and Mary Weaver daughter of Thomas Weaver late of Westerly deceased, laid their intentions of taking each other in marriage before the meeting. This meeting desires them to wait at the next monthly meeting for their answer. This meeting appoints our friends Simeon Tucker and Thomas Wilbur to enquire into the conversation and clearness as to marriage, and make returns to the next monthly meeting.

"At the monthly meeting held the 30th of the 4th month, 1753, the friends that were appointed to inspect into the conversation and clearness of Job Irish concerning marriage, make return that they find nothing to hinder his proceeding therein. Job Irish and Mary Weaver appeared in this meeting and signified they were of the same mind they were at the last monthly meeting, and desire an answer. This meeting permits them to marry among us, they keeping to the good order of truth therein James Scriven and Peter Davis, Jr., are appointed to see their marriage consummated and make returns thereof to the next monthly meeting.

"At a monthly meeting, held at South Kingstown the 28th of the 5th mo., 1753, the friends that were appointed to see the marriage of Job Irish and Mary Weaver consummated, make return that it was quite orderly carried on."

The consummation of said marriage is recorded as follows:

"Whereas, Job Irish, son of Jedediah Irish and Mary his wife of Westerly in Kings County and Colony of Rhode Island, and Mary Weaver daughter of Thomas Weaver late deceased and Sarah his wife of the town above said, having declared their intention of taking each other in marriage, before several public meetings of the people called Quakers, in the Colony aforesaid, whose proceedings therein, after a deliberate consideration thereof, according to the righteous law of God, and example of his people, recorded in the Scriptures of truth in that case, they being clear of all others, and having consent of parents, and others concerned, were approved by the said meetings: Therefore, These may certify all whom it may concern, That they, the said Job Irish and Mary Weaver, appeared in a public meeting of the aforesaid people and others, met together for that purpose at one of their meeting houses, this third day of the fifth month called May, and in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and fifty three, He the sd. Job Irish, taking the sd. Mary Weaver by the hand, did openly declare as follows: Friends, I desire you to be my witnesses that I take this my friend Mary Weaver to be my wife, promising through the Lord's assistance to be unto her a loving and faithful husband until it shall please God by death to separate us. And she the said Mary Weaver did then in like manner openly declare: Friends I desire you to be my witness that I take this my friend Job Irish to be my husband, promising through the Lord's assistance to be unto him a faithful and loving wife until it shall please the Lord by death to separate us. And they the said Job Irish and Mary Weaver, for the full accomplishment

[illegible]

[illegible] Neck. Here lives Bishop Clark of Rhode Island. Prof. B. F. Clark of Brown University owns a [illegible] cottage here. Down toward the light-house are the handsome residences of Governor Hoppin, Royal Tyler, George Nightingale and Gov. Howard, at Lower as lives Mr. John Holden one of the oldest residents of the town. This most genial of men can give you the history of old Warwick from a very early period, and "not to know him argues yourself unknown." On the highest point of the ridge which forms a part of the Neck is the summer house of Col. William H. Reynolds, who in company with Professor Bell of Boston, so successfully introduced the telephone into England, and here on the piazza of this hospitable mansion we sit at night and watch the splendid New York steamers, the Massachusetts and Rhode Island, sail majestically down the bay, the various hotels and boat houses illuminating the shore sending up rockets or burning red or green lights to attract their attention, the boats answering with three shrieks of the steam whistles as a response.

The scene here by day is no less delightful as you swing lazily in a hammock and watch the yachts and boats as they fly by with their "woven wings," while steamboats are continually arriving and departing at Rocky Point, of which we have a grand view, our house being equal in hight to the top of the tower at that place.

Yesterday we left the quiet of the Neck for a day at the Brighton of America, Newport. The sail down was delightful, although the wind and the somewhat unusual roughness of Old Neptune compelled some to "seek the seclusion that a cabin grants." I should have to pay a fine of five cents here for that—the penalty for everybody who makes a Pun[illegible] the [illegible]

Newport, which I had not seen for some time, is the same delightful un-American looking place. I mean, of course, the summer part. Yet, here is the beautiful yacht squadron in the harbor and the finest beach in the country is alive with people and carriages, and the ladies come out of the bathing-houses looking like anything but angels, and the surf-bathers shout and jump and there is one courageous woman swimming all alone away out beyond the breakers, and the pavilion which has been lately built on the beach and has rows of seats one above the other commanding a view of the bathers is filled with a motley crowd of spectators from the lady of fashion elegantly dressed in some diaphanous robe of white who has just alighted from her carriage holding a pug dog whose nose is dreadfully retroussé, to the regular excursionist who is eating her lunch out of a lard pail, while the crowd derive nourishment from the famous ginger-snaps which are peddled on the shore and which are to Newport beach what the crisp dry fried potato is to Saratoga.

The glory of Newport is her villas and elegant country seats. It would be difficult to find anywhere in the country residences that can compare with those of Marquand, Mrs. Paran Stevens, the one built by Charlotte Cushman, or the Matthews, Wetmore and Belmont estates.

It looked very gay and pleasant at the Ocean House, with the band playing, the carriages coming and going and the handsomely dressed people on the piazza.

We were sorry to see that the old stone mill had lost its clinging drapery of vines, a change which detracts from its former beautiful and picturesque appearance.

The great event of the day at Newport is the five o'clock after-dinner drive up and down Bellevue avenue. This is the time to see all sorts of "stunning" turnouts, consisting of drags, dog-carts, landaus and phaetons. Within are ladies with their feet on velvet cushions, wearing the most exquisite toilettes and carrying gigantic parasols which have borrowed all the hues of the rainbow; some of these daughters of luxury, by the way, looking bored to death, notwithstanding their elegant surroundings.

Bellevue avenue is certainly a lovely place, the gardens on each side being most fair to see, for they are gorgeous as the tropics in color, being filled with masses of scarlet geraniums and pink and blue hydrangeas, which seem to be the desirable thing in the horticultural line, while nearly every lawn, with its net-work fence, shows that the game of tennis is the order of the day for amusement.

Marquand's elegant grounds were hung with lanterns, tables and chairs were [illegible] on the lawn, showing that a fête champêtre was the evening's entertainment, which must have been sadly interfered with by the warring of the elements and the terrific thunder and lightning which visited us after sunset.

As we turned our backs on beautiful Newport, after a mental comparison, we decided that [illegible] most "palatial [illegible]" [illegible] remembered.

the [illegible] us view of [illegible] seen or [illegible]

ORT AS A WATERING-PLACE.

[Correspondence of Philadelphia Times.]

It is impossible to understand the ascendancy which Newport has achieved and maintains, unless you understand its really unequalled climate. To say that Newport is fashionable or aristocratic, or cosmopolitan, or all, and that this is the secret of its success, is only putting the effect for the cause. There is really no seaside watering-place, either in this country or in Europe, where the climate, take it all in all, is so perfect as it is at Newport. Perhaps Torquay, in Devonshire, comes nearest in this respect. But a Newport day at its best—what old visitors call "real Newport weather"—is quite out of the common, is something that can be matched nowhere else on earth. It is the climate of the Isle of Wight filtered through sunshine. It is Torquay glorified. It is the Mediterranean without the latter's sirocco and torrid heats. Nowhere else in America, nowhere at all in England, nowhere in France except in the vicinity of Nice, do you see that wonderful ultra-marine blue of the ocean about which travellers at Naples rave, and which is seen here, when the sky is clear, week after week in the halcyon days of June, July and August. Said a gentleman to us, the owner of one of the finest places here, "If ever I get poor, and have to sell my present house, I will buy a smaller one; and if ever I get so poor that I can't buy and I will come to Newport as a tramp." It is this "climate of Paradise" that has made Newport fashionable, aristocratic and cosmopolitan. Without this climate, all the wealth, and culture, and social preëminence that gathers here would fail to make Newport more than any other ordinary seaside resort.

The idea is very general that Newport is a place for fashionable people only. No mistake can be greater. It is true that you will see at a reception at Newport more Worth dresses than anywhere else in America, except in New York during the height of the winter season. It is true that the equipages to be met on the avenue rival those of Hyde Park, not indeed in number, but in style. The horses, carriages and harness are simply perfection. Half a dozen four-in-hands are often seen in half an hour's time. In fact, Newport in summer is but New York transferred to the seaside. For instance, about three hundred New Yorkers own or hire cottages at Newport, while there are but forty or fifty Bostonians, not quite a dozen Philadelphians, two or three Baltimoreans, and only one family each, we think, from Cincinnati, Chicago and St. Louis. Hence New York gives the tone to everything, socially, in Newport. Now New Yorkers are, in the sense in which the word is generally used, the most fashionable people in America. They dress more extravagantly, spend more money in proportion to their incomes, and live—not to speak offensively—more for display than either Philadelphians, Bostonians or Baltimoreans. But then the type of New Yorker that comes here is the best that New York turns out—more cultivated and cosmopolitan, less "loud," and less Mammon-worshipping than the New Yorkers generally. To call society here "fashionable" in all respects would be, therefore, a misnomer. It is better than that. It is, on the whole, more or less æsthetic. Most of its members have travelled largely in Europe; many of them have been educated there; and the result is that they are less provincial than the ordinary run of fashionable people, and very much better bred. Neither, on the other hand, are they "snobs," a word we dislike to use, but it is the only one possible here. We do not mean to say that there are no purse-proud persons at Newport, nor that none are "flunkeys" in the presence of the English noblemen that come here so often; but the majority certainly are free from these faults. So that when we admit that Newport is fashionable, we qualify the word and use it in its best sense.

ROCKY POINT AND NEWPORT.

CORRESPONDENCE OF THE BOSTON JOURNAL.

ROCKY POINT, R. I., Aug. 15, 1879.

This well-known summer resort is situated about twelve miles below Providence on Narragansett Bay, and in order to reach it one can enjoy a most delightful sail, passing Fields Point, Silver Spring, Ocean Cottage, Squantum and many other pleasant places in this far-famed land of clams and shore dinners.

Rocky Point itself, as its name implies, is a picturesque projection of land, greatly diversified by nature, and is a part of the town of Warwick, one of the most venerable townships of Rhode Island. This place, besides being admirably adapted by nature for a summer resort, is also greatly indebted to art for some of its beauties, having been delightfully laid out in walks and drives through groves, dells and rocks. Here is a large, commodious hotel overlooking the bay, from whose convenient windows one can indulge in the amusement of fishing if he chooses. And here is also a pleasant boarding house, a large, two-story building, devoted to clam dinners, and capable of accommodating 2000 people; a high tower commanding a fine view of the bay and its shores, swings, inclined railways, and various shows, including a large summer theatre called the Coliseum, which will seat a great number of people. This week one may witness here the wonderful performances of Humpty Dumpty, while the children may be treated to a sight of the inevitable Mr. Punch in his cruel career; and here daily flock thousands of excursionists, attracted by the delightful sail, the beauties of the place and the shore dinner served every day in the mammoth clam house.

It is a novelty indeed to sit on the hotel piazza and watch the incoming tide of people from the morning boats. There are Alfredians and Caledonians, militia companies and temperance societies, well-dressed Sunday school children and the army of the great unwashed, who to-day are treated to a sail, a dinner and a view of Humpty Dumpty, and a sight of whose happy faces makes one call down blessings on the man who first inaugurated poor children's excursions, and delightful is the music they bring, from the splendid American Band of Providence, with D. W. Reeves as leader, to the clanger of instruments from some rural district, which seem determined "to crack the voice of melody and break the legs of time."

The scene at the clam-house during an excursion day baffles description. Imagine the babel occasioned by the devouring of 1500 bushels of this succulent bivalve and other refreshments suitable for the entertainment of 2000 people.

[illegible] newspaper articles written on this subject derriding the Massachusetts schoolma'am in her efforts to "keep up with the procession" [illegible] Rhode Island clam-bake, insinuating that you can always pick out [illegible] from the crowd by her awkwardness in a hand-to-hand wrestle with a clam, but I [illegible] one of this much-maligned class next to me at table elbow-deep in shells, decapitating the bivalves as deftly as the average Rhode Islander, and to all appearances "to the manner born." They have not taken lessons at Nantasket and Melville Garden to be outdone by inhabitants of a State that a grasshopper can measure at one jump, although I must confess that as regards the clams themselves Rhode Island certainly has a "better hand" than Massachusetts.

The best clam dinners on the bay, however, are to be had at Silver Spring. Here the clams would tempt a Sunday, the corn and chowder are perfect, and the lobsters never underdone.

Another famous feature of Little Rhody is her johnny cakes. Making a geographical computation, Warwick lies in regard to the "line of perpetual johnny cake" [illegible] the johnny cake belt of New England, of course, as [illegible] Mass., [illegible] and [illegible] until [illegible] Pennsylvania, where they are to be found [illegible] brown and hot at every well-bred breakfast table, [illegible] for an adult being [illegible] to [illegible] indeed be called the [illegible] in this connection.

Newport gets better and better, moreover, socially, every year. We remember a *fête* given here some twenty-five years ago by one of its most prominent summer residents, a sort of "lawn party" as it would now be called,—where the ladies appeared in low-necked dresses and the gentlemen in swallow-tail coats. That sort of thing would be impossible in this year of grace 1877. Dinners are, perhaps, the favorite mode of entertaining at present. Balls are fewer and fewer every year. Even so recently as ten years ago it was the custom toward the close of the season to wind up with a subscription ball at the Ocean House. But this has long been "a thing of the past." Society grows more exclusive, in one sense, with every succeeding summer. The cottagers, in other words, live more within themselves. Hence the fact that there is so little hotel life in Newport that even the Ocean House, excellent as it is, has rather a struggle to keep alive. In most other watering-places, Saratoga noticeably, hotel life is the life of the place. Here, cottage life is the life. Yet it is a misnomer to call some of the Newport places cottages. Many of them are almost princely in size and surroundings. Several have from six to twelve acres of lawn around them,—and grass grows as luxuriant here as in England, so that you do not know what a lawn is till you have seen Newport,—with land worth from ten thousand to fifteen thousand dollars an acre, and houses costing from thirty to sixty thousand dollars to build. It is not the purpose of this letter to give names, or we desire, above all things else, to be impersonal; but certainly there is no watering-place in America, perhaps none in the world, where so much positive wealth is locked up in mansions and grounds. People sometimes say that Newport will yet lose its popularity. But even apart from its climate, there is too much money invested here for that, and too much social influence in consequence interested in keeping it up.

But there exists in Newport another social strata, large distinct from the fashionable one, which may be called the intellectual. It numbers among its members some of the highest literary reputations in the United States. This portion of Newport society, as a rule, shuns display, partly because it cannot afford it, and partly because it thinks the "game not worth the candle." It intermingles, however, with the fashionable set, more or less, as two circles sometimes overlap each other. In the Town and Country club this division of Newport society culminates. A dispassionate critic would, perhaps, say that the fashionable set had the more charming manners, and that the literary set had the most brains; but that the very best people here, the real *crème de la crème*, in the highest sense, were the few in whom social and intellectual culture were united. We might count the members of this fortunate class on our fingers, everybody knows them, but it would be impertinent to name them.

The mixed commission are still at the Derby cottage, next to the Ocean House, but will leave shortly. The other day Mr. Thomas Winans, one of the Baltimore millionaires, gave a fishing party to the ladies at the Derby cottage; and just at this time fishing parties seem to be the order of the day. And so, of course, pretty gay costumes are gotten up specially for these occasions. In these costumes, as might be supposed, the navy-blue predominates. Graceful redingotes of yacht-flannel, sometimes trimmed, if the wearer is quite youthful, with white; and finished with plain black bands and oxidized silver buttons when the wearer is beyond the sweet-sixteen period. Broad hats, as marine as possible in effect, surmount these costumes, and at the waist, instead of the chatelaine bag, a pretty sportsman-looking basket hangs, containing all sorts of funny and finny little paraphanalia. The blondes come home with red noses, spite of their broad hats, but the brunettes brown beautifully on these excursions, and look like ripe peaches in complexion. It is very certain that these later enjoyments bring greater health than those of the summer pleasures, where hops and all the attendant follies of late hours were the rule. With the closing of the Ocean House, and with the flitting of the more transient visitors of a few weeks, this kind of gayety wears away at last into these simpler out-door junketings. Last week the Aquidneck fair, a few miles out of town, made another out-door junketing for not a few of the "summer people," and pretty girls rode merrily away with some handsome young attendant who would walk wisely garrulous, or more likely wisely silent, by her side, while she asked wild questions about the African geese and Rouen ducks, the Brahmas, the Cochins and the Cluners. In her own city these girls and their young cavaliers would not think of going to agricultural fairs. "But here," as one fair demoiselle expressed it for herself and others,—"here it is so different; there are no theatres and operas, and all those distractions, to take up one's time, and one must go *somewhere*, and out of doors is so heavenly here in Newport." And the pith of all this lies in the conclusion—a matter of climate after all.

And besides these fishing parties and [illegible] parties, the charm of climate has brought [illegible] something better and simpler still—walking p[illegible]ties. Over the cliffs and over the beaches to all the pretty nooks where a carriage a little while since was thought indispensable to carry one, at least to the nearest possible foot-path, these pedestrian groups now, stoutly shod, gayly saunter. These walks would not be possible in the height of summer to most of our country women; but in these autumn days in this peculiar clear and yet soft atmosphere they seem to be by their popularity the fashionable tonic of the season. The climate of Newport has been said by some to have a little of the English tone,—not the English tone of London, but the pure country air of England. Possibly this may be true, but whatever the cause it is certain that walking in Newport is a very different matter to the walking in those localities where the air is dry and chill, and where the east winds find you out at every corner. To see these pedestrian parties coming back with their fresh, bright faces is a pleasant suggestion of cause and effect, which proves more than a page of theorizing; and it is something more than suggestive to hear those who are considerably beyond "sweet sixteen," declare that "I can walk to the beach here without fatigue,"—this walk being a good two miles. And all this kind of out-of-dooring is far finer than the croquet parties, which a year or two ago took up most of the time. That Watteau kind of garden amusement has had its day. Mr. Lorillard's stately new game of Chivalry, it is said, has completely killed croquet, for which mercy let us whose ears were distracted from day to day, week in and week out, by the never wearying click-clack of wooden ball and mallet, give most grateful thanks. The stately game after its good work has departed for the season with its owner. There is a hint that next year this game will be duplicated on other lawns. In the meantime the walkers will get into such condition of health and consequent good looks that garden amusements will not suffice for them, however we may call it, chivalry or croquet.

And so, at the last, fashionable Ne[illegible]ort winds up its summer in the wisest of fashior[illegible] by going back to first principles and leaving [illegible] the end a charming record of simplicity.

N. P.

It would give but a one-sided idea of Newport if we were to omit all mention of the townspeople. The place was settled originally, to a large degree, by emigrants from the Isle of Wight, and no one familiar with that part of England, and also an *habitue* of Newport, can fail to see that even after two centuries and more there is a striking similarity between the two places. The city is named, to begin with, after the county town of the Isle of Wight. The climate of the islands is singularly alike, only the climate of this one is better,—with more sunshine, with even less fog. There are few towns, singular to say, left in New England that look as old as the older parts of Newport, for the Newport of the cottagers, the fashionable Newport, is principally on a hill east of the town proper, and is quite distinct from the other. In the latter you see today plenty of dwellings, many of them even stately mansions, which antedate the war of independence. In fact, after 1776, which ruined Newport as a seaport, and reduced its population one-half, hardly a house of any kind was built for more than fifty years. As Newport, from 1700 up to 1776, was one of the most thriving seaports in the colonies, however, and as many large fortudes were in consequence accumulated here during that period, the number of really stately mansions of the "old time" remaining within its boundaries is exceptionally large. These fine old edifices, some of them erected in the time of Queen Anne, and others built in every succeeding generation down to 1776 (the date of each easily to be recognized by its style), [illegible] to be found in Washington street, Thames [illegible]e, Spring street and others of the older thoroughfares. The Hunter mansion, the Channing mansion and the Vernon mansion are types of these houses, often described, and all of more or less interest to the antiquary.

We have said that there are few towns left in England that look as old as these older parts of Newport. The reason is this: Wherever there has been improvement, wherever towns have thriven, town-lots have become valuable, and as a consequence old houses have been torn down to make room for what is called "modern improvements." Hence it is that, except in the west of England, and in some parts of Essex, Suffolk and Norfolk, comparatively few houses are left in towns that are as old even as Queen Anne. We must go to Cheshire, Shropshire, etc., to find really antique town dwellings. Now the old part of Newport is like the half-decayed towns of Cheshire and Shropshire. It has never paid to tear down the old houses, and so they remain, quaint, picturesque and, we must say, exceedingly comfortable. A walk through old Newport is simply a revelation to a lover of the antique. We recall a half tumbled-down house in Thames street, not far from the gas works, with a shell doorway in the very best style of Queen Anne. We remember another house in the same street, nearer the heart of the town, with a wrought-iron balustrade over the portico, executed after a Greek pattern and in the very highest style of art; and yet hundreds of people pass it every day and no one knows what a treasure he beholds. But this quaint old city is full of such things. The state house is an excellent specimen of early Georgian architecture (A. D. 1728),—not indeed as good as Independence hall in your city, which was built about the same time, because defaced with the remnants of the Dutch taste that William of Orange brought into England, but still a very creditable piece of work, especially for that time and for so poor a colony as Newport was in the first quarter of the last century. Very proud are Newport people of their antiquated town. A [illegible] has said that the old people here believe Thames street existed "before the foundations of the world were laid." However, I must stop, or my enthusiasm for old things, and for old Newport especially, would carry me too far. Neither your patience, nor that of your readers, would stand it.

NEWPORT COTTAGES. A [illegible] Yeoman, U.S., has been [illegible] is his impression [illegible] summer resort:

"The city with its wonderful [illegible] in the country, its more wonderful [illegible] most wonderful 'summons' has been [illegible] scribed to need notice here, and as it was [illegible] of many of us, no wonder it was [illegible] of us, I fear, looked a little green [illegible] dant questions. We had heard much of [illegible] tages,' and wishing to be well posted, had [illegible] Webster's Unabridged, last edition, and committed to memory:

Cottage, n. A *small* habitation; a cot; a hut.

☞ The term was formerly limited to a poor or [illegible] habitation, but is now applied also to any *small* [illegible] and tasteful dwelling.

Seeing a grand building, lofty as to height, curious as to style of architecture, with stacks of chimneys conspicuous enough for a forge or furnace, and [illegible] dahs extensive enough for a rope-walk, we [illegible] young native, 'What grand building is that, [illegible] or an asylum, or an insurance building?' 'No,' [illegible] swered with a *very* careless air; 'no, that [illegible] but a cottage.' We retired crest-fallen [illegible] when our hackman grandly drove us through [illegible] sive granite gateway into a great court, with [illegible] walls and little windows all around. 'Whose [illegible] is this?' we asked demurely. 'This is Fort Wolcott, was the reply. One soldier and a band of musicians were all the defenders of our country we saw.'

A NEWPORT CURIOSITY. A Newport [illegible] the New York *World* contains the [illegible] "A curious discovery has been made in [illegible] Vernon House on Clarke street, which was formerly the headquarters of Washington, Lafayette and Rochambeau. It is now being prepared for the offices of the United States Geological Bureau. A day or so ago it became necessary to remove a large broad mantel from over the fireplace in one of the up-stairs rooms. Behind the panel was discovered an old fresco painting on plaster and measuring some three [illegible] The subject appears to be a West Indian [illegible] In one corner are the figures of three [illegible] females, one being dressed in red, with long hair flowing beneath a hat decorated with plumes. In her hands she holds a [illegible] This group stands at the gate of a [illegible] which may be seen a cluster of houses with tiled roofs. Opposite is a [illegible] ing two snow-white horses somewhat harnessed. In the background is a group of Indians with long lances. The picture is bordered above by a strip of yellow, [illegible] frieze of passion flowers and [illegible] curious work of art, and has puzzled our local connoisseurs. It has been presented to the Redwood library."

NEWPORT IN ITS AUTUMN GLORY.

THE LATE STAYERS—THE AVENUE AND THAMES STREET—AUTUMN COSTUMES—THE WATER WAR AND ITS FUTURE EFFECT—FISHING PARTIES, AND THE COSTUMES THEREOF—THE AQUIDNECK FAIR—PEDESTRIAN PARTIES.

[FROM OUR SPECIAL CORRESPONDENT.]

NEWPORT, Sept. 20, 1873.

Everybody with any watering-place experience allows that Newport has the longest hold upon the transient resident's favor of any of the resorts. The summer hotels close, the bath houses are removed, and the papers announce in their "items" that the "season" is over; which is quite true so far as these transient things are concerned. But a greater portion of the "cottage life" continues on and on, far into October, and often until its last day. When we take into consideration the now well-established fact that the cottage life is *the* life of Newport, that the hotels year by year seem to have a briefer and more transient patronage we shall perceive that the Newport season to the transient bird of passage and to the "cottager" may mean very differently. The cottager has discovered what gain as well as convenience it is to him to stay on late into the autumn months, making but one change from late summer to winter quarters in the metropolis; for those who have had experience know that the climate during these autumn months has a blandness which can be found in no other spot upon the New England coast, Maury's idea that the inward trend of the gulf-stream suddenly diverging westward, brings into this island these blessed benefits of blandness, has been strenuously disputed, but no one can dispute the fact that the blandness of climate *does* exist, and that invalids, victims of rheumatics, and even lung complaints in some form, find a haven here late into October and in many cases through the winter months. Flowers bloom later and lawns keep their fresh bright green long after the gardens of less favored regions a few hours' sail away have lost their glory. But driving upon the avenue now in the afternoon the visitor of a day would think that Newport was quite deserted. The transient birds of passage having departed, the long monotonous drive is for the most part given up. But go out in the morning, say from ten till two, on the upper portion of the avenue, where the gay little shops are, and down on Thames street, that dear and dingy little thoroughfare, narrower than any of Boston's celebrated crookednesses, and behold, landau, brougham, and phaeton, will appear and reappear, and Thames street you will find still offers a fair field for the coachmen's trial of skill and temper in unlocking of wheels and other Jehu feats of patience and prowess in that cramped passage. And out of the various vehicles you will see the unmistakable fair "cottager" alight in a sort of autumn glory of watering-place costume not admissable elsewhere. If the sun shines, though the air blows cool, white cambrics are still the order with a gag wrap or a navy blue English walking jacket. And the hats have a bright plumage of feather and bizarre arrangement of color wherever it can be artistically managed. In parlors bright with sea-coal grate fires, these pretty white dresses of thick cambric or white pique, cambric ruffl with perhaps a gay little house jacket embroidered in brilliant Persian colors, can be constantly seen. And so everywhere the summer seems to keep its suggestion and to bloom late in all manner of fair and flowery ways.

The water question, or as we might say now, the water war, has more to do this season in scaring people home than anything else. It is a subject of conversation in every parlor. The season residents, quoting Dr. Sims's letter, with its statement of facts against the conservative Newport tax-payers' argument, grow indignant and suggest. There is no doubt that Newport has been injured by this excitement, and that the tax-payers who have carried the day against the introduction of water will next year, in the inevitable decline of property rates, see that they have lost instead of gain by their economy; for there is no doubt that good many people have been a good deal frightened, and old stories of the effects of the water long ago, when the season was *not* a dry one, come up and add to the tumult, and will probably deter fresh occupancy of many houses another year. But it is also true that in some of the localities there has been no trouble whatever with the water, and uninterrupted health has been enjoyed by the resident families. But how soon these regions might become tainted through other imperfect arrangements of drainage on or about the premises, cannot be prophesied. But while through this war of words a good many no doubt have been scared away, a good many remain, and form pleasant and select little circles, out of which grow pleasant and select little parties.

THE OCCASION.

The great republic of the world celebrates its first century to-day! It has invited all nations to participate in the occasion by an exhibition of the products and workmanship of their respective countries, in the city where the assembled Congress framed, adopted, and sent forth, July Fourth, 1776, their Declaration of Independence. It has selected an orator and poet, and other exercises appropriate to the event to take place in the same city. Our own State has requested, through its legislature, that every town in our borders should have a local celebration; and Congress and the President have sent a similar appeal to every town in the Union.

The extraordinary growth of the country in the last century, the very high position it occupies to-day, the success on so large a scale, and for so long a period, of a free government, would seem to demand an uncommon manifestation of the nation, on the happy event of completing our first one hundred years; and that to-day our Union is perfect and complete, with not a single star blotted out from our banner, and many more added to the original thirteen, standing to-day stronger and more immovable than ever.

It was with fear and trembling, one hundred years ago, that the delegates from the colonies assembled in a small hall in Philadelphia, put forth their immortal Declaration, July 4, 1776. They were wise and prudent men—some of them, as was our own Hopkins, advanced in years; a few, like Hancock, were rich. They all had much at stake, having families, high character, the ablest men chosen from Virginia, Massachusetts, Rhode Island and the other

colonies: they exposed themselves, in case of defeat, to confiscation of property, banishment, imprisonment, loss of reputation, and death by being hung as traitors, but they drew not back, there was no faltering while they cut the tie which bound them to the mother country, and launched their bark upon the tempestuous ocean of conflict with a mighty nation that had the resources of a standing army, vessels of war, wealth, and all the munitions ready for instantaneous and deadly war. To oppose all this strength of warlike array, there were a few regiments of militia, no ship of war, and guns, cannon balls and powder; and other requisites of military warfare were few indeed, and neither money nor credit but in a very limited degree.

The infant Congress staggered not at the impending and deadly struggle looming up at the future, and boldly appealed to the arbitration of the sword, and the decision of the impartial nations of the world:

"When," they said, commencing their declaration, "in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bonds which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the laws of nature and of nature's God entitle them, a decent respect for the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation."

Many and dear were the ties which bound them to the mother country! It was beyond other great nations, a free country; and the men of the revolution often expressed themselves as demanding nothing more than the rights of a British subject enjoyed at home. England was dear to them, as the source whence their supplies and protection proceeded; they had an interest in her glory as a nation; as the country from whose bosom the colonies came as from a mother. Their literature, religion, language and customs had been brought over to America—the graves of ancestry made the burial places of Britain dear to Americans. Ties of interest, affection and consanguinity were sundered with regret.

But Great Britain, her rulers, and her people looked upon the colonies to be sources of pecuniary profit; they were jealous of all manufactures and commerce which interfered with their own; and by custom-house taxes and vexatious laws to prevent the Americans from trading with any people but England and her colonies, they turned the love of the people into hatred. The people were treated in some respects as a conquered or dependent race, and not to be ranked in privilege and honor with subjects at home. All these reasons, and more, are stated in the declaration; then comes the solemn determination that they will bear the injustice and oppression no longer, but set up for themselves. In well considered words they take their final farewell:

"We, therefore, the representatives of the United States of America, in General Congress assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the name and by the authority of the good people of these colonies, solemnly publish and declare, that these united colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent states; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown, and that all political connection between them and the state of Great Britain, is, and ought to be totally dissolved: and that as free and independent states they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and to do all other acts and things which independent states may of right do. And for the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes and our sacred honor."

The fighting at Concord and Lexington had already taken place, and two months afterwards the battle of Bunker Hill sent its echo round the world. Boston had been evacuated by the British forces March 17, 1776, and now, July 4, 1776, the rebellion had taken shape in an official act of the newly organized government, casting off all allegiance to Great Britain, and asserting its entire independence and determination to maintain it by all the force they could command.

We meet to-day without distinction of party or religious denomination; and though we come together as town's people of Scituate, we hold fellowship with all the towns of our State, and passing out of the bounds of Rhode Island we stand up to-day with every state, city and town in the Union in a GRAND NATIONAL JUBILEE! on the occasion of our completing our *first hundred years.* We go farther, and extend a call to every other nation to rejoice with us in our remarkable history; in the unexampled prosperity we have enjoyed, in the success which has attended the experiment of a people self-governed. We may be pardoned for some little self-exultation while we recognize the guiding hand of our God in our preservation and blessing.

In the city of Philadelphia, where our delegates in Congress assembled a hundred years ago, and framed and adopted a Declaration of Independence there will be an extraordinary gathering of our fellow citizens from all parts of our country, and many distinguished visitors from foreign lands will be convened to witness a national festival, commemorative of what transpired in that city a hundred years ago, and what great results have come out of it.

We have dared to invite an International Exhibition of Art and Manufactures, Inventions and Discoveries, Literature and Science, and other matters relating to man's progress in society, and to put side by side, our own skill and taste, not for vain show, but in order to bring the world into fellowship and useful and honorable competition.

We may not be able to grasp in our vision the spectacle which our still youthful nation presents to the world to-day. *Our* place is in the New World discovered by Christopher Columbus four hundred years ago. The vast extent of territory that maps out our heritage lying between two great oceans; its natural features of mountains, valleys and plains, and lakes and rivers, indented coasts by inlets, bays and harbors where proud navies ride and prosperous cities lift their spires is but imperfectly realized. A view of the manufacturing and mechanical establishments, a sight of the farms cultivated with all the help of newly invented agricultural imple-

ments, a perception of the warehouses where are stored the productions and workmanship of every clime, the schools and colleges filled with pupils of both sexes, the churches whose bells ring cheerfully on the Sabbath morn, the printing presses worked by steam power, scattering leaves of knowledge over the whole land, the railroads running in every direction, bearing immense freights and conveying passengers in multitude, the telegraph with its wires beneath the ocean and stretched out over the whole land, and the activity of the people, and the enterprise visible, and the arrivals of emigrants daily from the four quarters of the globe, with the general intelligence, comfort and happiness of the people, the steady march of population over the deserts, or uncultivated places, and the returning march from the West to meet midway the East; this is the picture too great and wonderful to be fully realized, as the orators of our centennary year vainly strive with uplifted voice and choice expression to describe to-day in the assemblies convened all over the land.

Praise and thanksgiving may well go up from the nation so highly favored of God! who has not so blessed every other nation under the broad heavens—no other nation has a history like ours. Behold what God has wrought for us! May thanks go up from the shores of both oceans, and from the banks of every river and lake, from every hill and valley, and all places where man has set his foot on the soil of these United States and sheltered himself from oppression and wrong beneath the folds of our star spangled banner.

Berkeley, the English philosopher, who made for a while his home in Newport, in 1730, filled as it were with superhuman foresight of the coming glory of America, wrote the well-known prophetic lines:

"Westward the course of empire takes its way;
The first four acts already past,
A fifth shall close the drama with the day—
Time's noblest offspring is the last!"

SCITUATE IN EARLY DAYS.

The arriving of a centennial year naturally turns our thoughts the past. We revert to the beginning and progress of men and

things, and love to connect old things with new. It is a duty which we owe to those who have gone before us to consider their wrongs and enquire for their principles! We cannot go back like China, Japan and India, to a very remote past, for our country is very new; but we may turn to ancient and discolored manuscripts, antiquated house furniture, old houses, by-gone burial places, deeds of valor, primitive and frugal ways, times of poverty and need, of honesty and patriotism, to the period of forest and self-denying and perilous lives, to the simple faith and child-like trust in God of the early days.

Wealth and luxury, numbers and power, things that are new and wonderful we can see every day and year, but we must make special exertion and set apart a time to explore the past and ruminate in the quiet shades of by-gone generations. We have before us to-day a *town history:* one that is eventful, that called out human strength and fortitude in an extraordinary degree, and developed what is good and noble in man and in communities.

It will be expected of me, on the present occasion, to present some outlines of the history of Scituate. Like other parts of Rhode Island, it was first inhabited by Indians, and the territory remained in a state of nature, for the red men were hunters and fishers, cultivating only little patches of ground, of corn, tobacco, beans, etc. Little collections of huts or wigwams formed their towns—of which there may have been a dozen in many miles travel.

The settlement of Roger Williams at Providence in 1636 is the commencement of our history. He dedicated himself to the spread of the gospel among the Indians, and traveled among the different tribes who were at war with each other, to pacify them and satisfy them that he and his associates had honest intentions to live peaceably with them. God gave him with Canonicus, the great and powerful Indian chief, favor so that he obtained as a gift large and valuable tracts of land. The deed of gift was dated March 24, 1637, in the second year of the Rhode Island plantation and reads —"in consideration of the many kindnesses and services he hath continually done for us." The land given was of the lands upon

Mooshansick and Woonasquatucket rivers. Soon after this grant, Mr. Williams, in an unselfish spirit, executed a deed giving an equal share with himself to twelve of his companions, and "such other as the major part of us shall admit into the same fellowship of vote with us." All of them, with others, fifty-four in all, had lots assigned them, in the first division of land, which took place soon after the initial deed was accepted.

The settlement increased, as from other colonies and from beyond the sea, emigrants continued to arrive, and numbers spread themselves over the wooded heights and vales of that part of Providence afterwards set off as Scituate.

It was formerly the practice—that is soon after the proprietors connected with Roger Williams had been increased to one hundred, that persons "took up lands," as the current phrase was, that they had them surveyed and marked off, and entered upon the records—some compensation may have been given to the proprietors. Deeds were however in early use; an old one was found not long ago, among the papers of Gideon Harris, bearing date 1661, of the size of half a sheet of letter paper, written on both sides, and with the curious orthography of the olden time.

The first settlers of Scituate drove no large herds and flocks before them, and there were no meadows for a supply of grass to feed them; at first, probably, men alone came to build a rough cabin and make a clearing, and afterwards, they brought their families. The soil was good, but it was rocky and covered with woods. Wild beasts and Indians roved over it. Stephen Hopkins, who was born in Scituate in 1710, and lived there till middle life, in a few pages of early Rhode Island history, wrote in poetic verse the pitiable condition of the first inhabitants:

"Nor house, nor hut, nor fruitful field,
Nor lowing herd, nor bleating flock,
Or garden that might comfort yield,
Nor cheerful, early crowing cock."

No orchard yielding pleasant fruit,
Or laboring ox or useful plow;
Nor neighing steed or browsing goat,
Or grunting swine or feedful cow.

No friend to help, no neighbor n'gh,
Nor healing medicine to relieve;
No mother's hand to close the eye,
Alone, forlorn, and most extremely poor."

A better class, and very enterprising and successful, came afterwards. In 1710 some emigrants arrived from Scituate, Mass. In 1730 Scituate was set off from Providence as a distinct township.

Tradition gives John Mathewson the credit of building the first white man's house—if it may be so called—in Scituate. It was a hovel or hut put up in the north-eastern part of the town, within a quarter of a mile of the Great Pond, Moswansicut, within a few rods of the boundaries of Scituate, Smithfield, Johnston and Glocester, almost on the line of junction of the four towns. The place lies about six rods from the road, and is indicated by a depression and raised banks. It was six or eight feet square, four or five feet deep, and raised above the ground by logs and branches of trees, some three or four feet. There was only one way of entrance, and holes were left in the upper part, through which a gun might be pushed to shoot bears, wolves, foxes, wildcats or other animals that might approach with design to enter the premises.

Tradition, handed down in the Mathewson families still resident in the neighborhood, further says: that Boston was at that time the nearest trading town, and thither, on foot, through Indian or other paths, John would make his occasional journeys, stopping at houses on the way. He made acquaintance with a Miss Malary at one of these houses where he stopped on his route, and offering marriage, was accepted. He built him a house a hundred yards or more from his cave, and cultivated a good farm. He died there, suddenly, aged about forty, leaving a widow and children. John, one of his sons, was the direct ancestor of the late Hon. Elisha Mathewson, senator in Congress.

Daniel, another son, when a boy of ten years, about the year 1700, was sent with a cart load of oak wood to Providence to sell. Two yokes of oxen and a horse were put in to draw the load over the rough and hilly road, and after driving all over the town to find

a customer, he sold the load for five shillings, the most he could get. There were three houses only at that time on the north side of Westminster street, between the pumps and the forks of the road, by the bridge.

Thomas Mathewson and others of this name came to settle round this pond, one of the most beautiful ponds in the State, and having good lands around it. Elder Samuel Winsor owned a tract a little farther east of the pond, and his lands were said to reach to Providence. John Waterman, Dean Kimball and others were neighbors.

Mr. Stephen Smith kept tavern at the Four Corners, North Scituate, and as there was a great deal of teaming past his house, going to and returning from the furnaces of Smithfield and Glocester, to get iron ore at Cranston, his half-way house was well patronized.

Daniel Mathewson, the boy already spoken of, lived to about 1776, when he died at an advanced age. Noah, the son of Daniel, died Sept. 17, 1824, aged 89 years, and was buried by the side of his parents on the family lot. His widow, Judith, deceased Jan. 28, 1827, aged 87 years. The house that Daniel built was occupied successively, after his death, by his son Noah and his grandson Daniel, who was living in 1856 in his 78th year, and gave me this information of his family. Its height was one story, with four rooms on the ground floor, and a cellar underneath. In the old stone fire-place were seen hanging from a piece of timber, placed horizontally, high up in the chimney, two very long iron hooks or trammels, five or six feet long, for hanging kettles and other vessels over the fire. These were hoisted or lowered by means of little holes in the upper piece. They had no barns in these old times when this house was built, but there were little shanties or hovels where they stored many things.

James Aldrich removed to Scituate from Smithfield in 1775, and purchased of the heirs the estate of Mr. Ishmael Wilkinson, deceased. This was in the north-west part of the town, and in the vicinity of Beacon Hill. When Mr. Aldrich came to Scituate

himself and family traveled on horseback, that being the usual mode of conveyance. Attempts were made to discourage him from leaving Smithfield by representing the lateness of spring, it being the middle of May, but as the land was good he declined to stop. Soon after his arrival he sent back to Smithfield to get a cheese tub made by a celebrated worker in wooden ware, Jesse Inches, who was known far and wide for his skill in manufacturing churns, pails and tubs. This cheese tub, made of cedar, held twenty pailfuls, which gives us some idea of the dairy of Mr. Aldrich, and of the cows about his premises. A stout man brought it on foot, and upon his back, all the way from Smithfield. It was sold at auction some seventy-five years after, on the breaking up of house-keeping by his son John, having been in the family three-quarters of a century.

The Smithfield people considered a journey to the adjoining town of Scituate, one hundred years ago, somewhat as we regarded a trip to Ohio some fifty years since; but quite a number of families and some very fine additions to the property, respectability and enterprise of Scituate, nevertheless, removed, and it may have been with a desire to keep them at home that the discomforts of Scituate were magnified. James Aldrich took the farm made vacant, as we have seen, by the unfortunate death of Mr. Wilkinson, and found the land pretty well prepared for culture—a comfortable house and barn, a good orchard, stone walls, good soil, and a very pleasant and healthful location.

Having a great taste for orcharding, which his son John imbibed, and his grandson Arthur inherited, who had the finest fruit in the town, he planted fruit trees for which the soil, climate and elevation of land were highly favorable, and became a successful farmer. He raised horses for sale, as was the custom then, and Scituate horses, for their fine qualities, were regarded at that time much as we regard those which are now brought from Vermont. He is said to have introduced the first cherry trees in the town.

Mr. James Aldrich was a great politician in those days, and belonged to the Republican or Democratic party, both names being

used at that time to designate the Jefferson party, in opposition to the federal party of Hamilton. He represented the town of Scituate in General Assembly for one series of nineteen consecutive years. Elisha Mathewson, John Harris and Col. Ephraim Bower were often at his house, and Governor Arthur Fenner. The Governor used to come out of Providence on horseback, with his gun and other equipments, to have a good hunt with his warm friend and brother democrat, James. Dr. Battey told me he had seen them hunting together when he was a boy, and a daughter of Mr. Aldrich, Mrs. Charles Harris, remembered that many a time she had seen the Governor ride away home from Scituate with foxes and squirrels that he had killed, strung over his saddle.

Arthur must have loved the fun, and there was no very awful state about a chief magistrate in those days to prevent his indulgence in a favorite sport. Political, as well as social and hunting propensities, doubtless mingled in these expeditions, for Mr. James Aldrich and his friend Elisha Mathewson were said to control the votes of Scituate, and the people loved to see a Governor among them in such a free and easy spirit and costume, and gladly gave him the favor of their votes.

Women generally rode on horseback in these days, and favorite daughters were privileged with some fine horses to ride. Two women were sometimes seen riding on one horse, each with a child in her arms, but more frequently the "good man" with his wife behind him, going to church or to shopping in the small but thriving village of Providence, which, in the first settlement, was indeed the village of Scituate, as well as Providence.

Gideon Harris is a very prominent man in the history of Scituate. He married Damaus Wescott, a noted maiden in her day. He died in 1777, at an advanced age, and was buried in the Quaker burying ground. For many years he filled the office of Town Clerk. It was a common saying that everybody who was poor, in distress, or wanted employment, resorted to Mr. Harris, on account of his property, influence and benevolent disposition. His house was in a place called the "Old Bank." It was enlarged and made

into two stories by his son, and pleasantly situated on ground rising from the road, with its stately and ancient button-wood and elm trees, makes an imposing appearance.

JOSEPH WILKINSON AND THE HOPKINS FAMILY.

About the year 1703, Mr. Joseph Wilkinson, a son of Capt. Samuel Wilkinson, Esq., of Providence, came to live in the northwest part of Scituate, known by its Indian name, Chapumishcook. He married Martha Pray, a grand-daughter of one of the first settlers in the town. There was a crooked road leading from Providence to this neighborhood at this time. The first barn built in what is now Scituate was erected by him. He also brought the first cow into the town, and a piece of meadow where he pastured his cow, a little north, running into Foster, where the first hay was cut, had been created, it is supposed, by a beaver dam in the vicinity, causing an overflow of water and rotting the trees so that they fell down and gave an opportunity for the grass to grow.

Mr. Wilkinson was a surveyor, and much employed in this work in the town. In a deed of 1738 the surveyor's return was made under his hand. His residence was on the estate improved afterward by his great grandson, John Harris, Esq., in the most northern turnpike, a pleasant spot and a valuable farm. At the raising of his barn men came from Smithfield and Glocester to assist the Scituate people in its raising. When they had raised it they all sat down upon a large log and drank metheglin, a beverage made of honey and water and fermented, often enriched with spices. Some eighty years ago an old man named Hopkins, nearly eighty years of age, who was at this raising, and had a fresh recollection of the event, came along, and related it to the family resident there, and stated his participation in it. The barn had been taken down a little while before he came.

The house now standing on this farm is quite a large one, as are also the barns. The house has been twice repaired and enlarged by additions, but no part of the old Wilkinson house is retained in it. Two magnificent chestnut trees are standing in a lot opposite the house, of apparent great age.

Some anecdotes connected with his wife, whose maiden name was Martha Pray, illustrate the perils and heroism of the early settlers. Her husband, being absent at work some two miles off, she discovered a bear upon a sweet apple tree, shaking off the fruit that he might devour it on the ground. As it was the only tree of the kind they had, and highly valued, Mrs. Wilkinson not a little regretted the absence of her husband, whose gun kept loaded for such emergencies, was in its place on the pegs at the side of the wall. The apples continued to fall and rattle on the ground, and there was no other help at hand but the gun, which Martha, in a fit of desperation, took into her hands and going out the door which stood open, she took aim and fired. Dropping the gun on the ground immediately after the discharge, alarmed and trembling at what she had done, she ran back into the house and shut the door, afraid to look back and see what she had done, or the effect of the shot. When Mr. Wilkinson returned home, and was informed by his wife of what she had done, he went out to the tree and found the bear dead on the ground, so that his faithful and resolute wife had not only saved the cherished apples, but had secured some good meat as a supply.

This young married couple had also to guard their sheep by night from bears and wolves by putting them in log enclosures near the house. On one occasion they were awakened by a bear rolling the logs away in order to get at the sheep, and had to get up and drive him away.

Another incident called for his wife's coolness, courage and wisdom. Roving Indians sometimes called at the houses of the first settlers—a large party called at Mr. Wilkinson's house when none but his wife was at home. From their appearance, as she could not understand their language, she guessed that they wanted food, and she gave them all the provision she had in meat and meal. They took it and withdrew into a field near, made a fire and cooked and ate what had been given them, with great relish. It was no small relief to Mrs. Wilkinson, though she manifested no alarm, when they took their departure.

They came back after a few days and brought some fine venison, which they left, apparently as a return for Mrs. Wilkinson's favors, and as an expression of their grateful sense of her kindness. In this way a friendship was created with the Indians, and they were often welcome and happy inmates of the Wilkinson household, and brought their baskets, moccasins and manufactures to barter off for food and other things which they wanted.

Mr. Wilkinson appears prominent in the first town meeting of Scituate after it was set off from Providence. He is called Lieut. Wilkinson, was elected a member of the Town Council and chosen Deputy.

Mr. William Hopkins, the only child of Major William Hopkins, of Providence, married Ruth Wilkinson, daughter of "Capt. Samuel Wilkinson, Esq.," as he was styled in public records, and immediately after his marriage removed to a farm in Scituate in the neighborhood of Lieut. Joseph Wilkinson, the brother of his wife. His house was small, but the land was good—probably, not much cleared for tillage—in 1765, or thereabouts, when he took the place.

He is not much spoken of in the town records, and probably did not seek office, but gave himself steadily to the work of his farm and the care of his family. His memory is chiefly connected with some of his children who became illustrious and reflected great honor on their parents, and on the state and nation. William was the first born. He went abroad, and was presented at the court in England, and so took the favor of the King from his fine manly appearance, that he was appointed Major by him. A part of the coat he wore at court has been preserved by his descendants, and I have seen it on exhibition at one of the late antiquarian exhibitions in Providence. His other children were Stephen, John, Eseck, Samuel, Hope, Abigail and Susanna.

Eseck, soon after the death of his father, in the summer of 1738, a stout, tall and handsome young man, then in the twentieth year of his age, bid adieu to the old homestead and journeyed to Providence and became a sailor, soon rising to the position of Cap-

tain. He married when he was twenty-five years of age, Miss Desire Burroughs, daughter of Mr. Ezekiel Burroughs, of Newport, and took up his residence there. His conspicious services in the war of the revolution, as the first commodore of the navy are well known. His fleet, consisting of the ships Alfred, Capt. Dudley Saltonstall, and the Columbus, Capt. Whipple, the brig Andrew Doria, Capt. Nicholas Biddle, and the Cabot, Capt. John B. Hopkins, son of Eseck, and the sloops Providence, Fly, Hornet and Wasp, put out to sea Feb. 17, 1776, with a smart north-east wind, and cruising among the Bahama Islands, captured the forts at New Providence, Nassau. This was a very fortunate affair, for the heavy ordinance and stores taken proved quite acceptable to the country. He captured two British armed vessels on his return.

The Commodore, or Admiral, as Washington addressed him, met with difficulties in creating an efficient navy, and his force was wholly inadequate to protect the long line of coast and meet the vessels of the English navy, and he soon resigned and engaged in private armed vessels, as did his lieutenant, the famous John Paul Jones. He was successful in capturing many British vessels. In the collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society is a French engraving of him, which has a splendid figure and a handsome open countenance. It was circulated in France and this country in the early part of the war. The Commodore's family clock has been presented to Brown University, by his grand-daughter, Miss Elizabeth Angell. He died in 1802, and was buried at North Providence.

Stephen Hopkins was still more distinguished than the Commodore. He was born March 7, 1707. But little is known of his boyhood, but he must, with the other sons of William, been early taught to labor on the farm. There were no schools in his day, but his mother was a woman of marked talents and character, and no doubt instructed him in many things. It has come down to us that he inherited his abilities from her. His uncle Wilkinson, the surveyor, probably instructed him in that art, for we find him, still a youth, engaged in surveying. A strong passion for reading characterized his mature life. I was permitted to examine his library, which

was large and valuable for the time. It would be interesting to know what books he read when a boy—procured at home, or obtained from connections and friends,—scarce, they probably were, and mostly of a religious character, but we may be sure he searched them thoroughly. Other means of culture were at hand. The conversation of parents, of visitors at his father's house, with visits to other families, added to his store of knowledge. Letters were arriving from England; men and boys were returning from voyages at sea. Rhode Island being quite a maritime place, a minister would occasionally arrive from abroad and preach at a private house. If the school master passed through the place he may have said something. What other means had the boy Stephen Hopkins of education? Nature spread before him a beautiful panorama. His father's house, built on high land, overlooking a wide extent of country, presenting a succession of wooded summits, rounded in the blue sky, the aspect of the heavens, radiant at night, and the seasons,

> "Whither the blossom blows, the summer ray
> Russets the plain, inspiring autumn gleams,
> Or winter rises in the blackening east,"

all teaching some important lesson, and moulding the character: thus grew up that youth, who became fond of poetry, and the author of some fine pieces, which have been preserved. I have stood upon the spot where the birth place of this signer of the Declaration of Independence drew out my thoughts to consider the localities of the place as sending their influences to act upon his childhood. The foot-worn paths to the well, to the barn, and to the road, on account of a change of houses, the old one being much smaller, and built a little on the one side of the present structure, are not discernible. The garden in front of the house, on the opposite side of the road, and the family burying place, just outside of the garden walls, reach back to ancient times. The graves of successive residents are there, but no lines are on the stones that mark the last resting place of William and Ruth Hopkins, the parents of Governor and Admiral Hopkins. Would it not be well

for the town of Scituate, on this centennial year, to put up in that ground a monument of honor and gratitude to the memory of those parents?

Stephen Hopkins married, June 27, 1726, Sarah, the youngest daughter of Major Silvanus Scott, of Providence. He married early, being only nineteen years of age—his wife was about the same age. To create a home and a support for the newly married ones, the father of Stephen made him a gift of seventy acres of land, and his grandfather, Thomas Hopkins, bestowed upon his "loving grandson," as the will reads, an additional grant of ninety acres. The grandfather of Sarah was Mr. Richard Scott, of Providence, "gentleman," the term used to show his quality.

Four years after this marriage, the portion, now Scituate, was set off from Providence, and Stephen Hopkins, then only twenty-three years of age, was the Moderator chosen. This fact is significant of the very high opinion entertained of him in his native town, as a man of business and competent to preside over public meetings. Joseph Brown was chosen Town Clerk for the first year, an office which included the registration of deeds, and Stephen Hopkins was elected the year after, and this office he held for ten successive years, and then resigned.

Mr. Hopkins removed to Providence in 1744, and purchased an estate on South Main street, at the corner of what is now Hopkins street, named after him, but formerly Bank lane, because the first bank in Rhode Island was located at the foot of it.

He engaged in commerce at Providence, but was soon called to fill important places in the State, as Chief Justice and Governor, —appointed to the Judgeship in 1739. No man was so often chosen as Moderator of Town Meetings in Providence. He assisted astronomers in making observations on the transit of Venus, at Providence, having a high mathematical reputation. His zeal for liberty led him in early life, and later, to write and publish papers on the "Rights of the Colonies," and to hold correspondence with distinguished patriots in various parts of the land. His memory was very retentive, and his capacity great. He died July 13, 1785.

Stephen Hopkins may stand forth as a representative of Rhode Island. Born and educated there amid hardships and perils, and believed in and honored by its people; his whole life, as it were, spent within its boundaries, and in its service, in the critical and forming period of its history, he represents its people.

Connected with the early settlers of this colony, on both the paternal and maternal sides; his birth reaching back to its simplest or rudest condition, and forward to the close of the American Revolution; his long, active, conspicuous life, spent among its people, moving and acting among them in constant and intimate contact with all classes and denominations, in domestic relations, business operations, and political and religious actions; assisting in framing, interpreting and executing their laws, and trusted by them with almost every office in their gift, we may consider him as a fair specimen of native growth, showing all the capabilities of soil and culture.

It is to the honor of Rhode Island that she produced Stephen Hopkins; that he was the son of immigrants who selected her territory for a home, and that he was cradled, nurtured, approbated, exalted, and kept in public service so long, with her full consent and honest pride. The existence of such a man under such circumstances may certify, as a volume of true history may declare, to the character of her settlers and the influence of her institutions. There were true men and women who sought an asylum and built their homes on the Narragansett Bay; and they were not wanting in mental power, moral principle and heroic devotion to duty.

If these settlers maturing in their own native soil, and from their own native seed, had produced no other evidence of their worthiness to take an honorable place with the other New England colonies, the production of Stephen Hopkins would of itself suffice. He was a working man, beginning early and continuing late, covering half a century with his record of diligence.

His farming and mercantile operations absorbed much of his time and thought and strength. The business of surveying in the

rough country in which he lived involved much hardship and labor, and he had much of it to perform. He was early engaged in attempts to develop the resources of the State in mining. His public life made him the servant of all; and he was a close and severe student, filling up all the spare hours of his life with reading. The town records of Scituate attest that he was familiar with drudgery, and his committee labors in Congress won for him the praise of John Adams, as a business man. He owed much to his fine natural gifts, to the reputation and assistance of his family connections, and to the open field which Rhode Island offered at the time to a man of talent, tact and ambition—all three of which he possessed. But he, nevertheless, was indebted to his close application, indefatigable labor, and resolute persistence in toil, for his advancement. He thought it not beneath him to perform well the humblest duty, to execute faithfully the smallest trust, to excel in little things, and he never dreamed of idleness as his portion, or conceived that he could float into public favor and maintain influence without exertion. He had a small and obscure position, like a rill on a wooded mountain side, but he worked himself out of it, despite of obstacles, and became like a river growing wider and wider as it proceeded from its source to the place where it passed into the sea.

He was one of the people at all periods of his history. He had long been placed over them in office, but he never outgrew his place among them, and never lost his sense of fellowship and sympathy with the toil, exposure and privations of the humblest citizen. His heart beat responsive to the hearts of men; he was ever fighting their battles, considering them as his own; therefore it was that he had such a weight of influence—such a power of directing movements, and dared to act with so much decision. As an illustration of his readiness to bear his part in all the burdens of the people we find his name, in 1757, heading a list of thirty-six men—his son George one of them—who were ready to march against the French and Indians, who had invaded the northern frontier, possessed themselves of Fort McHenry, and were carrying death and devastation on their way. The tidings of their retreat prevented the party from setting out.

In the taking of the Gaspee, in which his son, John B. Hopkins, took a leading part, Mr. Hopkins being Chief Justice he asked the advice of the Assembly what course he should pursue if the British government should demand the men who destroyed her. He was told to use his own discretion, to which he answerd,—"Then, for the transportation for trial, I will neither apprehend any person by my own order, nor suffer any executive officer in the colony to do it."

In the North Burial Ground, of Providence, is his grave; and there his State has erected a monument to his memory, on which, with other commendations, is inscribed these words: "His name is engraved on the immortal record of the Revolution, and can never die."

The children of Stephen Hopkins were Rufus, the first child, born Feb. 10, 1727; John, the second son, was born Nov. 11, 1728. Ruth, the eldest daughter, was born in 1729, and named after her grandmother Hopkins. She died in infancy in 1731, and was buried in Scituate. Lydia, the fourth child, was born in 1732, and probably died young. Silvanus, the third son, was born Oct. 16, 1734. Simon was born Aug. 25, 1736, and George, the seventh and youngest child, was born in 1739. All the sons except Simon, who died while a lad, were sailors, going to sea while boys, and all became masters of vessels but Silvanus, who became mate at eighteen, and would have been captain soon after, had he lived. Rufus was so far successful that he invested five hundred pounds in the Hope furnace, Scituate, 1766, and became its superintendent. This furnace cast cannon which were used in the army and navy during the revolutionary war. There were two cannon usually cast at one time, and they were afterwards bored.

While living at the furnace he received the appointment of Judge, which he held for several years. He was one of a committee appointed by Congress, Dec. 14, 1775, to superintend the building of vessels of war. He was concerned in the first cotton factory put up near the Hope furnace in 1807. Silvanus, one of his sons, was the first agent of the Hope Manufacturing Company. Rufus

Hopkins died in August, 1809, at the house of Mr. Andrew Ralph, and was buried in the North Burial Ground, Providence. He is said to have greatly resembled his father, and the likeness in the picture of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, purporting to be that of Gov. Hopkins, is his.

Capt. John Hopkins, the second son of Stephen, in 1753, sailed for Cadiz, Spain, and died there July 20th, with the small pox, aged twenty-four years. Silvanus, the third son of Stephen was killed by Indians after he was cast away on the Cape Breton shore. Of the remaining children, Simon died at Providence, at the age of seven years, and George, the youngest, who married Ruth Smith, was lost at sea in the year 1775, with the vessel he commanded.

JOHN HULET, GOV. WEST, AND HUNTING GRAND OLD FURNITURE.

As the land was being cleared, with here and there, at irregular places, a clearing made or commenced,

> "Where not a habitation stood before,
> Abodes of men irregularly massed."

One of these, whose chimney smokes were illuminated by the morning sun in the woods of Scitaate, in its early settlement, was John Hulet and Berenice, his wife, who, about 1740, resided in the north-western part of the town. His grave is pointed out in a pasture back of the house of John Harris, Esq., a short hillock, marked by two walnut trees, and lying on the westerly side of the most northern one. Two rough moss covered stones, one at each end of the grave, and without inscription, designate the last resting place of one who owned large tracts of land in the vicinity, but now sleeps unnoticed and unknown by the living generations about him. His transactions in deeds were numerous, and run from 1743 to 1763. In 1744 he bought one hundred and fifty acres of Stephen Hopkins for three hundred pounds, land commonly called "Oyster-shell Plain." We find him, among others, taking the oath against bribery, Aug. 15, 1747, an example which might be followed at the present day for the advantage of the country.

Benjamin Gorton, of Warwick, married John Hulet's daughter

Avis, July 18, 1762. His son Mason married, the year following, Oct. 23, 1763, Elizabeth Mathewson, of Johnston. Elder Reuben Hopkins performed the marriage service on both these interesting occasions. Mason Hulet removed to Vermont and settled at Wallingford, on the Otter Creek, and has left numerous descendants in that State. John Hulet, March 1761, sold to Col. Wm. West the farm of two hundred acres which he bought of Stephen Hopkins. He sold it for forty thousand pounds, a price not to be accounted for, except, we admit, the great depreciation of the currency. Mr. Hulet was appointed, with Thomas Angell, pound keeper, in 1747. He is called "Captain" in his appointment of fence viewer in 1750. He was undoubtedly a man of considerable property for those days, and quite a dealer in lands. He sold to Boylston Brayton, of Smithfield, May 28, 1763, two tracts of land,—one lying in Glocester, according to the deed, "the half of a farm whereon Ralph Wellman did formerly live, and bounded as in deed of William West to Eliphalet Eddy, Feb. 16, 1760, and also more particularly by the said Eddy to me, the said John Hulet, containing three hundred acres, more or less. The other tract is in Scituate, and is my homestead farm, and the same whereon I now dwell, and contains about two hundred and fifty acres, bounded northerly on land of James Wheeler, easterly on land of the same, and on land belonging to Capt. John Whipple, southerly on land of William West and westwardly on land of Charles Hopkins and Barnes Hall, and on land belonging to heirs of Joseph Wilkinson." This homestead farm would seem to have been very near to the place of his burial. We find him buying at the same time of Benj. Anthony, of Swanzea, for 1800 Spanish milled dollars, 229 1-2 acres of land, where Thomas Knowlton once dwelt in Scituate, in part bounded by territory of heirs of Joseph Wilkinson. Mr. Hulet must have died soon after these last transactions, as we find no further mention of him in the town records. He is said to have died of fever after a very short illness.

Lieut.-Gov. West, who purchased the old homestead which Gov. Hopkins sold to John Hulet, had for some time previous to

1761, been living in Scituate, and had resided a little west of said farm, where his son John afterwards lived. He removed from North Kingston to Scituate, and was chosen Deputy. He was also elected to represent the town in a General Convention held at East Greenwich, Sept. 26, 1786. In the appointment by the Governor in 1775, of Eseck Hopkins to be General of troops to be raised for the defence of the shores of the Narragansett, Col. West was placed second in command. We find him very active in town affairs during the Revolutionary war. In May, 1777, he was made chairman of a committee to ascertain the number of effective soldiers still wanting to complete the Continental battalion, then raising by the State. He was several times chosen as Moderator of the town, and was a man of intelligence and enterprise, infusing energy and courage in the people.

In 1775 he put up the largest and most showy house that had ever been erected in Scituate. Mr. Welcome Arnold, who died some twenty years ago, was at the raising of this house, and used often to speak of the great gathering and interest of the occasion. Liquors of all sorts were furnished, but while rum was very plentiful there was a choice kind of wine, of which the people were only permitted to take a *little*. This house is on the Providence and Hartford turnpike, three miles west of the village of North Scituate. It is a gambrel-roofed house of two stories as it fronts the road, and of four stories on the end opening to the east, including the basement and the attic story. The rooms in the house are very spacious, and the attic seems as large as many meeting houses, it being all in one room. It was quite a museum, with old fashioned looms, spinning wheels, chests of drawers, and other articles, when I saw it.

A very interesting historical place is this house, built by Lieut. Col. William West, coeval with our centennial year, and it is a very pleasant coincidence that one of our committee lives in the house with his brother-in-law, Mr. Richard A. Atwood. I rather think that not a few rebels were quartered there at times in the Revolution, and seditious conversation indulged in, and even rebel-

lion openly talked of, and schemes devised against the British troops and vessels. I don't see why that house, built on the premises where Gov. Stephen Hopkins and Commodore Eseck Hopkins were born, should not be placarded, these centennial days, with the noble and patriotic words of Rhode Island statesmen and heroes as is the case to-day with the Old South Church in Boston, and flags and streamers displayed upon it. The old house was raised and built by patriotic men who knew how to handle the musket and the sword, and doubtless did, most of them, serve in the American army and navy. If the old folks have gone to their reward in heaven they have left us a memorial of their day, in this edifice, and may it stand a century longer.

Gov. West was quite a farmer and kept a great many cows. He would often set off with a load of cheese to sell, valued at $1,500. He married Ellen Brown; his children were William, Charles, John, Samuel, Hiram, Elsie, Olive, Ellen, Sally and Hannah. Job Randall married two of his daughters—Ellen for his first wife, and Sally for his second. Jeremy Philips married Elsie West, and Hannah married Mr. Gideon Smith, father of Mr. Russel Smith, who resides in North Scituate village.

The going down in value of continental money ruined Gov. West financially, as it did many other patriots of the Revolution who trusted the government, and made his last years afflictive. This was one of the sacrifices our fathers made for us, that we might enjoy freedom and prosperity. Mr. West died about sixty years ago. Elder Westcott attended his funeral. He was a man rather above the middle height, a bony, sinewy man, long favored, with a prominent nose.

As an illustration of the spirit of the town of Scituate, in the Revolutionary war, and as evidence of confidence in their townsmen, are many votes on record. Here is one!—"At a Town Meeting held April 28, 1777, it was Voted that Col. William West be appointed to use the utmost of his endeavors and abilities, by giving directions to his under-officers, as well as using his influence other ways, to raise soldiers by enlisting the number of men assigned to

be raised in this town, by act of Assembly aforesaid." May 5, following, he was chosen chairman of a committee "to prepare and divide into classes the male inhabitants of the town, liable to bear arms." How ready the town was to bear its proportion of war expenses, see the following vote of September 23, 1779: "Voted that the town will raise their proportion of the $20,000,000 recommended by the Hon. Continental Congress, £5,359, 2s, 8d being said town's proportion. The collector of taxes is directed to pay the same, when collected, into the Loan Office in this State, taking Loan Office certificates of the same."

In this part of the town, where Col. West lived, are preserved some articles of furniture of great antiquity, heir-looms of families. Mrs. Farnham, who lives on the road to the West House—a little east—the only surviving child of the late Hon. Elisha Mathewson, has in her possession the veritable looking-glass brought to Scituate by her first ancestor, John Mathewson. It is small—the plate only seven inches by nine—of hard wood frame, stout, and of good repair, save that the quicksilver has come off in a good many small spots. The same lady has other centennial articles,—one is a solid mahogany table of an oval form, three feet in length, an old fashioned tea table. This table was brought from England, and it belonged to Mrs. Farnham's grandmother, the wife of Richard Smith, whose maiden name was Lydia Clarke, daughter of Judge Joseph Clarke, who was driven off in the Revolutionary war to Pawtuxet. Several ancient chairs are also the property of this venerable lady, who is still living. The backs are about four and a half feet high, with leather bottoms and backs, with brass nails and carved work on the top. These were brought from Newport, and came from the same family as the table, and were made in England. An old cane of her grandfather, Thomas Mathewson, with round top and brass ferrule and bottom, is also preserved by this lady. John Harris, Esq., had an oaken arm chair, rush-bottomed, made by his grandfather, John Aldrich, during a great snow storm and the time subsequent, in all three weeks, that the people were kept from traveling. This chair commemorates a fall of snow unpara-

lelled in Rhode Island history, and probably dates back to the remarkable snow storms of 1716 or 1738. A silver cup, holding about a pint, and reaching back to Jonathan Harris, great-grandfather of John, is in preservation to be handed in due course to Stephen Harris, son of John, now in California. This cup was originally left as a legacy to be thus transmitted from generation to generation.

Mr. George Brownell left several articles of antiquarian value. A table of curled maple, three feet across at the top, with slanting legs crossing each other, once the property of his grandfather, Samuel Aldrich, who came from England and settled in Smithfield. It came subsequently into the hands of his son John, and his grandson James who settled in Scituate. There is a pewter soup platter of the same hereditary origin, twenty inches across, very heavy, marked with the initials of three generations—J. for John Aldrich, S. for Samuel, E. for Elizabeth, wife of John, J. for Jane.

Simeon Arnold came from Smithfield, and purchased about two hundred acres of land, including the farm on which his grandson, Simeon C. Arnold, now lives; he died about ninety-six years ago, occupying the premises until his death. His son Dexter was born, lived and died on the same farm, living as did his father to the age of about eighty years. His son Simeon, now upwards of fifty years old, has known no other home. He and his wife are the sixth generation from Roger Williams.

Other families have more or less of tables; chests of drawers, and chairs of ancient patterns, many of them still in use. The quantity of pewter is considerable, and parts of antiquated China sets are found here and there. Looking-glasses, a few large and handsome ones, of great age, are to be found.

The spinning wheels, large and small, of former generations, are placed away in garrets, or stored in old and dilapidated outbuildings. Their busy hum is heard no longer, but silent, as those who once used them in commendable skill and industry, we may imagine them as wearing away life in indolent musings of the past, and perhaps wonder if the wheels of fashion will ever bring them

again into favor. How many pleasant hours are associated in the past with these now neglected wheels. The spinning by them of wool, cotton and flax was esteemed an honorable and indispensable avocation. The young daughters of a household soon learnt with pride to survey the skeins of yarn they had spun, and many a charming day-dream was born in the monotonous buzz of the spinning wheel, and many a sweet song was sung by youth and beauty:

> "Noise sweetens toil, however rude the sound,
> All at her work the village maiden sings,
> Nor while she turns the giddy wheel around,
> Revolves the sad vicissitude of things."

Every newly married couple must have a spinning wheel to commence life with, and the solitude of the new settlements was broken by the cheerful sound of the buzzing wheel. The old ladies solaced many a weary hour of the live-long summer day at this employment, the door thrown open, and the cooling breeze sporting with the rolls they were spinning into useful threads.

Considerable interest is attached to the table, platter and bureau, handed down from Samuel Aldrich, which have been mentioned, from the following anecdote, showing how they were saved from destruction: Mr. Aldrich, one of the first settlers of Smithfield, had an Indian servant in his family. Several strange Indians came along one day and had a talk with this servant in the Indian language, the purport of which he made known to his master after the strange Indians had gone away. He told Mr. Aldrich that King Philip had proclaimed war, and he advised him to remove immediately. Accordingly, they went to work, digging holes to bury their heaviest and most bulky articles; and the most light and portable they took with them, the whole family proceeding in all haste to Providence. They were not any too swift, for on arriving at Tracy's Hill, in Johnston, they saw their house in flames, kindled by the Indians. They passed some armed Indians in their flight, but Mr. Aldrich's Indian, pointing to his master, said: "That man is my master; you must not kill him." Mr. Samuel Aldrich was a Quaker preacher.

Not very long ago in Scituate, no house was painted, plastered

or papered, there were no carpets—the parlor floors were sanded, and hardly any furniture was in the house, and what was to be seen was simple and rude. A few ordinary chairs, rush-bottomed, or in the case of the better sort, stuffed with straw and covered with stout leather. Tables, stoutly made, but rude in construction, and bedsteads equally common and inelegant. Trenchers, or wooden plates, were in use in most families until the war of the Revolution, and to some extent afterwards. Pewter plates and earthen mugs, with a little China, appeared after tea drinking came in fashion, with cups and saucers very small. The Chinaware was considered so choice and genteel that it was placed in a little cupboard over the fire-place, and the glass door or window in it enabled all visitors to see the half-dozen or more ornamented cups. Old looms, now disused, remain to show how independent the farmer was in those ancient times, wearing his home-made clothes and demonstrating the capabilities of his wife, who often in church on Sundays eyed with just pride her husband's nicely spun and woven clothes, the product of her own hands, and often the cutting and making of them also.

Edwin and his brother John Howland, living on and owning extensive portions of land in the northerly section of Scituate, sold to Jeremiah Smith of Providence, in 1788, one hundred and seventy-five acres for $2,100, who put up on it a one-story gambrel roof house, and died in 1816, aged ninety-two years. Mr. Martin Smith, his great-grandson, occupied a large two-story house, built by his father in 1817.

Richard Brown, living in Providence, attracted by the fine situation of the land for hunting grounds, procured, so tradition says, at about the cost of laying out and registering, a large tract of land. Richard Brown, Jr., June 5th, 1765, gave to his son Jesse two hundred acres, saying: "it is the lot of land given to me by my grandfather, Richard Brown, April 28, 1744, and is on Mosquito Hawk Plain." Jesse settled on the spot, and also his brother Samuel. Mr. William Brownell, and after him Isaac S. Devereaux, of Providence, bought and lived there.

Richard Brown, the senior, lived to be an hundred years old. As his century birthday approached, his children and friends made great preparations to celebrate the day by a dance and a feast. As the old gentleman was still hearty and active, they got him out to dance, and enjoying the sport as well as any one, he exerted himself to comply with the general wish, making much merriment and acquitting himself well. He did not live long afterwards.

A hunting house, or lodge, was built nearly a century and three-quarters ago, for the convenience of sportsmen from Providence and other places, while hunting deer and other game in that then wild and unsettled region. These animals used to come to the hunting house brook to drink, and in the thick tangled wood and brush, and tall herbage, they found a covert, and tender grass and berries for food. Some of the gentlemen who resorted to this place for hunting were Joseph Smith, Richard Brown, Jeremiah Smith, Edward Howland, John Hulet, Joseph Wilkinson, William West, James Aldrich and Gov. Fenner.

A famous squirrel hunt took place about 1784, on a wager between the towns of Glocester and Scituate, as to which should kill the greatest number. They were to hunt for ten successive days and then bring in the spoils and make the award. Judges were mutually appointed, consisting of a committee of fifteen. Ten gallons of rum and the expense of a dinner for the committee was to be the forfeit of the losing party.

The boys turned out as well as the men, and even the women became fired with ardor. The dogs entered heartily into the work of searching the woods and ferreting out the squirrels. The sqirrels were taken by surprise, at such a general, earnest and murderous onslaught, the object of which they so little understood. Doubtless, many Revolutionary soldiers, fresh from the battle-fields, condescended to show their skill on this occasion. At the close of the period allotted for shooting, the company met at the house of James Aldrich, to decide who were the victors. The piles of the respective combatants were ranged on each side of the town's border line opposite to each other, and consisted of the heads and

one of the fore-paws of each of the slaughtered animals. The heaps were about the size of hay cocks. Scituate beat Glocester by several thousands. Mr. Obediah Fenner, of Foster, was present, and related to me these facts.

THE ANGELL TAVERN AND OTHER PUBLIC HOUSES.

Thirty-five years ago there stood very near the geograpical centre of Scituate, in a place latterly known as Richmond Mills, an antique and somewhat grotesque edifice of a century and a quarter's date, looking very much the worse for time, with its red paint nearly all washed off, and looking dingy enough, and a little awkward with its south-east corner projecting very near to the junction of two roads. That was our old "Angell Tavern," built when the stumps in the road, and the wide-spreading forest around, indicated a country just beginning to be cleared up. When it was raised, so few were the inhabitants around, that they had to send to Providence for men to assist; there was a great gathering of the region for many miles in circuit, and a merry time they had of it, and also when the tavern sign was elevated and the house opened for public entertainment. A curious and entertaining history is belonging to that old house, for town meetings were held there, and the news of the day proclaimed, and politics discussed, and strangers found there a good supper and a night's lodging. It was two stories high, with the eaves of the front extending a few feet, forming a little shelter in stormy weather. On the western end was a very huge stone-chimney, forming a wall for that end of the building. There was also back of the main building, an addition sloping down from the main roof to form a kitchen, closet and bed-room, one story high, which being old and out of repair, was taken down in 1823. The house had three narrow windows, with small panes of glass on the lower front, and four of the same description above, with one at the east end. The front door was at the western extremity of the part facing on the road. As you entered, a door on the right hand of the passage opened upon the bar-room, a large square room, and leading out of it, the entire length of the remaining fore part of the house was a sitting-room,

used in later years, if not before, for a bed-room. Back of the bar-room was a kitchen, a large square room, which had been as large again before the addition was removed. A bed-room was at one end of it, nearly corresponding in size to the sitting-room, directly behind which it stood. The only pair of stairs to the upper rooms, ascended from the kitchen at the west end. Three bed-rooms were on the east end, and all the rest of the second floor, with the exception of a sleeping chamber over the front entry, was a hall for dancing and public meetings.

I have been thus minute and full in this description, as this tavern is often referred to in the doings at Scituate—a sort of town hall, exchange, eating and lodging house, real estate office, and place of resort for young and old, day and evening, where bargains were made, balls were held, and a general news-room established, or what was equivalent to it.

Capt. Thomas Angell, who built this house one hundred and sixty-six years ago, that is, in 1710, if a stone, taken out of the chimney, gives the correct date, was a large owner of property in the vicinity, and had built his first house of much smaller dimensions and in simpler construction, near where Pardon Angell's house stands, a quarter of a mile north. His land lay on both sides of the Ponagansett river, and his second house was erected near a fall of water, improved of late years for a factory, but might originally have been used for a saw and grist mill. Immediately before the tavern the river makes rather a sudden bend, rounding with a graceful sweep through woodlands festooned with vines, which still grow in the region. Before the house, on the opposite or southern side, the land sloped down to a very beautiful intervale on the sides of the stream.

The parties taking possession of this new house were the family of Capt. Thomas Angell. He was the son of John and Ruth Angell, of Providence, and was born March 25, 1672, and married April 4, 1700, Sarah Brown, daughter of Daniel Brown and Alice his wife. Sarah was born at Providence, Oct. 10, 1677. It must have been very soon after their marriage that the young and

adventurous couple took up their line of march for the thousand acres of wild land, of which Thomas had become the proprietor.

In 1730 Scituate was taken out of the limits of Providence and made a separate town. The first meeting it was voted to hold the town meetings in the new house of Capt. Thomas Angell. Three years afterwards he was appointed to represent the town in the General Assembly. He contracted with the town to build a bridge over Ponagansett river in 1734, and about the same time he petitioned with one or two others to have a pound near his dwelling, and leave was granted that they might do it at their own expense, which they did, building it of stone. It stood two or three rods east of the tavern, and continued to be the only pound in the town until 1810, when the place being wanted by Mr. Charles Angell, the then proprietor of the tavern, to put up a new and spacious house upon the spot, it was removed and a new one built on the opposite side of the road, a little west of the old spot.

The town meetings continued to be held at Mr. Angell's tavern for many years, until the building of the Baptist Church a mile east. The large hall in the second story was improved on these occasions. By far the largest use of the hall was for dancing. This tavern became quite noted among the traveling community, and what is remarkable, continued in the hands of the family until quite recently, except a period of ten years, during the ill-health of Mr. Andrew Angell, when it was leased successively to John Manchester, Nathan Manchester and Mr. Hazard. Mr. Charles Angell then resumed it on the old hereditary line.

Many eminent men have been entertained at this tavern, as well as a multitude of more humble travelers. Gen. Washington has stopped there. Gen. Lafayette encamped his regiment on the pleasant intervale in front of the house while marching through the town during the Revolutionary war. They continued there until the troops had finished their washing in the river. The old people used to speak often to their children about the fine music of the band, as in the morning and evening they played in the camp. Lafayette lodged in the tavern, and another French officer of high

rank had accommodations in a house near by, where lived Mr. Abel Angell. Mr. Angell's wife, who died thirty-five or forty years ago, used to speak of making porridge for this officer, whom she called General, while he was sick at her house. This house stood for a long period, and Mr. Richard Angell, son of Abel, pointed out to myself and other visitors the small bed-room back of the kitchen which had been occupied by the officer. Gen. Lafayette, on his last visit to this country, passed up the same road, recognized the old places, and enquired particularly for a spring at the foot of Cranberry Hill, some three or four miles west of the Angell tavern on the turnpike, at which spring he and his troops had refreshed themselves on their dusty and weary march. Many were then alive to greet him, of his old companions in the war. Dr. Owen Battey, residing within a mile of the tavern, on the same road, remembered seeing Lafayette and his soldiers as they passed along, and also of walking into the camp-ground on the intervale, led, while a child, by one of his father's men.

It being in the fall of the year the river was high, and one of the soldiers having drunk too freely tried to drown himself, but other soldiers jumped into the river and pulled him out.

Some things remain of the old tavern. The well which faithfully served other generations abides to moisten the lips of several families in the neighborhood, and gives a good supply for all household uses. The old stone steps, as good as new, upon which so many feet alighted from travelers' carriages, and the ponderous iron shovel for the use of the oven, are still in use. A hatchet which once belonged to Jeremy Angell, and marked February, 1755; an iron square, bearing the date April 2, 1770, and formerly the property of Andrew Angell, and a gauge of still greater antiquity, for measuring the contents of barrels, are still preserved, or were up to twenty years ago, when I saw them; but the hatchet, once so indispensable in a household, for the preparation of flax for use, is no longer wanted. The large old clock that clicked in the bar-room has been swapped away for a smaller and more modern measurer of time. A chest of drawers belonging to old Capt.

Thomas Angell, who first occupied the tavern, was burnt up forty-five years ago in the house of Mr. Stephen Peckham, which was destroyed by fire. One or two tables of ancient form are left, but time and accident have swept away other articles of furniture.

In a field back of the house is a burial place containing the graves of some of the ancient household. Mr. Andrew Angell, who died about 1791; his wife, Tabitha, who survived thirty years and deceased Dec. 10, 1821; Gideon Angell, son of Andrew, who was born June 21, 1773, and died unmarried, May 14, 1829; Abigail Hopkins, brought up by Andrew Angell, and who married a Sanders. The last named grave, with that of him who brought her up, is without an inscription.

Capt. Angell seems to have made his tavern the great centre of business and amusement in the town. The militia musters were held in the vicinity, and the pound drew all the stray cattle, and their owners to reclaim them; there, too, the blacksmith shop adjoining the pound, under another line of Angells, brought customers, and there also, we must not forget to mention, was the "stocks," a machine consisting of two heavy pieces of timber, rounded so as to enclose the legs of criminals, and in which ludicrous and painful condition they had to sit out their time. Here, too, those who got into scrapes during the trainings, and at other times, were put; and the pole of the tavern sign was used as a post to fasten those unfortunate gentlemen who were sentenced to be whipped, an operation they were not likely very soon to forget.

Other taverns sprung up, as the town increased, in different places. Matthew Manchester was licensed as an inn-keeper in 1769, and Thomas Manchester and Levi Colvin at the same time. Stephen Smith and Zebedee Hopkins were licensed in 1762, and Col. John Potter and Christopher Potter in 1760. Some of these persons lived in Foster, then a part of Scituate.

Peter Cook, 1755; Joseph Kimball, 1745; Jeremiah Angell, 1758; Elisha Hopkins, jr., 1758; William West, 1758; John Hulet, 1745; Thomas Brown, 1749; Samuel Cooper, 1745; Henry Randall, jr., 1748; William Jackson, 1758, were among the licensed.

"Tavern Ale House and Victualling House" is the term employed in licensing many of the above. Only a few of these persons could have done much business.

An old house on Bald Hill, marked on the chimney 1710, or 1740, was built by John Hammond, who lived in it; also Jeremiah Baker lived there, and died about forty years ago.

The license to Joseph Knight runs thus: "License to keep a tavern, or house of public entertainment, and to retail strong liquors in said town, and hath given bond for maintaining good order and conforming to the regulations of the law respecting taverns and public houses. Provided, that he suffer no unlawful game or games, drunkenness, or any other disorder, in said house, or in any place in his possession, but that good government, rule and order be kept therein according to law." This license is dated Feb. 12, 1803, and is signed, John Harris, Clerk.

Thomas Wilmarth, who was a tavern keeper and clothier, kept an old tavern, still standing. His son, Stephen Wilmarth, of Glocester, married Nancy, daughter of James Aldrich.

The first tavern in Providence, and the first in the State, was in May, 1638, in charge of William Baulston.

Two taverns in each town, in early legislation, were allowed, and leave was granted to add one more if they saw fit: this was in 1655. Very full laws were enacted regulating the sale of liquors. The tavern bars were to be closed at 9 o'clock in the evening. Tavern keepers, when they trusted any one for liquors beyond twenty shillings, were barred an action at law.

We are very liable to undervalue country taverns in these days of their decline. In a newly settled country they are pioneers, and the house of the first settler becomes of a necessity the inn or lodging place of the traveler. As the settlement increases and the traveling multiplies, the tavern becomes a real estate office, where land is bought and sold. Inasmuch as there were no newspapers in circulation, and no post office, the tavern became the centre of information for those who were shut out by a residence in the woods, from tidings of the world. Macauley, in his History of Eng-

land, says that tavern keeping was most flourishing as to patronage and being well kept when the roads were in the poorest condition, and traveling slow and laborious.

Daniel Webster's father, building his house on the farthest line of civilization, in New Hampshire, could not well help being a tavern keeper, and his son Daniel was favored with more avenues of information by reason of it than the boys not so privileged in new settlements.

The old Angell tavern is well represented to-day in Mr. James B. Angell, the popular president of Michigan University.

Capt. Thomas Angell's children were Jeremiah, Nehemiah, Isaiah, Jonathan, Thomas, Martha and Sarah—all Scripture names. Every one but Jonathan married and had children. Dividing his lands, he gave large farms of two hundred acres to each of his sons, and built handsome houses of two stories high for four of them, and a smaller house for Jonathan. Two of these houses remain. The daughters, no doubt, received gifts. At their father's death in 1744, Martha inherited by his will a negro girl called Phillis, and Sarah a negro boy named James.

Thomas, the youngest son, was the executor of his father's will. Jeremiah followed his father in the keeping of the tavern, and was a highly respectable man. He was a Justice of the Peace as early as 1741, and was afterwards Town Treasurer. His first wife was Mary Mathewson, his second Abigail Graves, and his third Elizabeth Stow. He died in 1786, aged seventy-nine years, having been born January 29, 1707. His widow survived till December 10, 1821.

Nehemiah Angell, second son of Thomas, married Mary Hopkins, sister to Elder Reuben Hopkins. He had three sons, Pardon, Nehemiah and Abraham, and his daughters were four, namely: Zilpah, Martha, Mercy and Mary. A grandson, Mr. Pardon Angell, became the owner of the farm, and soon after took down the old one-story red house, and put up a new one. Isaiah, the third son, married Miss Wilkinson, and had only one daughter, named Prudence, who married Gideon Austin, and had a large family.

Thomas Angell, jr., married Mercy, and had one daughter, Sally, who married a Sterry. Mr. Angell sold out and removed to Providence. Martha Angell married Mr. Knight, and Sarah married Jeremy Mathewson, on the very day the Angell tavern was raised. The children of Jeremiah were brought up with their father in the tavern. Daniel, born August 16, 1748, went to sea unmarried, and did not return. Andrew, one of his sons, married Tabitha Harris, daughter of Gideon Harris, Esq., and carried on the tavern after his father.

SCITUATE IN THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR.

From the character of the men who settled in Rhode Island it might be expected that they would be quick and energetic in resisting all encroachments upon their liberties, and such was the case. The taking of the Gaspee was the earliest resistance by arms to the power of Great Britain in any of the colonies. Great sympathy was awakened for the people of Boston, under the vexatious and vindictive treatment of England, and supplies were voted in all the Rhode Island towns, and sent for their relief.

When the news of the battle of Lexington arrived at Providence a thousand men were on the march the next day for the scene of conflict, but were countermanded by expresses from Lexington.

The Rhode Island forces, incorporated with the grand army before Boston, were placed under the direction of Washington. Rev. William Emerson, of Concord, chaplain in the army, who saw them at Cambridge in 1775, describing the military camps there, from various places, and noticing the want of tents and arms and apparel of many of the companies, says of some proper tents and marquees: "In these are the Rhode Islanders, who are furnished with tent equipage and everything in the most exact English style."

But it was not always so. Two years later, Aug. 27, 1777, Col. Israel Angell writing from the camp to the Governor of Rhode Island, declares that "pure necessity urges me to write you of the wretched condition of my command, as to their clothing and equipments. Only one half of the men are fit for duty; and many are barefoot." At another time, of some companies, it was said:

"There are not two in five who have a shoe or stocking, or other apparel to make them decent. But they rendered good service at Brandywine a month afterwards, contributing to a very important victory. Washington said of them: "The gallant behavior of Col. Angell's regiment on the 23d of June, at Springfield, reflects the highest honor upon the officers and men: they disputed an important pass with so obstinate a bravery that they lost upwards of forty in killed and wounded and missing—nearly one-fourth of their number, before they gave up their ground to a vast superiority of force.

Job and Joseph Angell, twin brothers, born January 19, 1745, were out in arms during the whole of the Revolutionary war. Job commanded a company but did not go out of the State. He has a son Job living in Scituate. Joseph Angell continued a private soldier, refusing offers of promotion, and distinguished himself in the war. He was with Washington the greater part of the war and fought in many battles. The old people that knew him had memories very quick to remember "Uncle Joe," the old soldier, who made a good impression on their minds. He used to relate tales of the war and events in the battles of which he was one of the actors. At the battle of Monmouth, the day being very hot, the men after the action flung themselves down by the river to drink, and many of them died in consequence, and indeed many were so faint that they died where they laid down, without drinking. Capt. Boss, Joseph's captain, laid down completely exhausted, until some one came and raised him up to drink spirits. Gen. Washington rode in among the troops ordering them not to drink without first tasting some spiritous liquor. Joseph said he always kept a little in his canteen for such a purpose, and he had so reserved some for himself in that battle. In the fight at the Red Bank on the Jersey shore, when the Hessians unsuccessfully attacked Fort Mercer, and were so cut up by the fire of the Americans, Joseph loaded and fired his gun for forty minutes as fast as he could, and without a moment's cessation until his gun became so hot that he could not hold it in his hand.

At a time during the war, when an engagement was about to commence, a cannon-ball from the enemy struck an apple tree in the road, taking off a branch. Washington, who was near, pleasantly remarked: "That was a good shot." Accounts agree that Joseph really loved the soldier's profession, that he engaged in it with his whole heart, and conducted himself bravely during the whole war. When peace was declared he returned to Scituate to take up once more the plough. He selected a daughter of John Edwards for his wife, and had two sons, Jonathan and Israel, who both married and removed to the State of New York.

Joseph Knight acted an important part in the Revolutionary war. His father, Jonathan Knight, executed to him the lease of his farm for six years, April 4th, 1763, Jeremiah and Andrew Angell witnessing the same. He appears to have used his teams extensively in transporation for Hope furnace.

From papers in the possession of his descendants, which have been kindly loaned me, we get much information of Revolutionary times. He seems to have had a taste early for military life, having received from Gov. Samuel Ward, June 16th, 1766, a commission as Ensign of the First Company, or Trained Band, of Providence. He was made Lieutenant of the same company, in 1769, and in August, 1774, he was created Captain. April, 1775, after the news of battle of Lexington, a company was formed in Scituate under him as captain, the roll headed thus: "We do enlist ourselves as Volunteers in the present emergency in defence of our country and Right of Privileges and Liberty." Four new companies were chartered in Scituate, Dec. 5, 1774, and one of them was called "Scituate Hunters."

A letter from Gov. Cooke to Joseph Knight, dated Providence, Dec. 19, 1775, directed to him as captain of the second company of minute men in Scituate, says: "You are hereby directed to gather together the company under your command with all possible expedition and march them to this town in order to be transported to Rhode Island for the defence of that island. You are to be careful that the men are properly equipped with arms, ammunition and

blankets fit for immediate service. I have advice from Gen. Washington that eight large transports, with two tenders, having on board one regiment of foot, and three companies of horse sailed from Boston last Saturday, and I have no doubt that your officers and men will exert themselves upon this occasion with their usual ardor."

Gov. West sends an order from head-quarters to Capt. Knight, Jan. 12, 1776, for nine privates with a commissioned officer and sergeant or corporal, upon fatigue duty. Ten days afterwards Gen. Lippitt directs him, from Prudence, to send ten men up there to go in a scow down to the Pearl. The men sent were in the fight at Prudence. According to the record they were, Joseph Knight, captain; William Brownell and Simeon Wilbour, sergeants; Abraham Angell, corporal; and Joseph Turner, Stephen Leach, Oliver Leach, Oliver Fisk, Zebedee Snow, Christopher Edwards, Joseph Wight, Moses Colvin, and Christopher Knight.

Providence was threatened by the enemy and Scituate was called upon to assist in its defence. Gen. Sullivan writes to Mr. Knight, who has been promoted to be Lieut.-Colonel, to march immediately with his regiment to their aid: "Pray, delay no time, for by the delay of one hour we may lose the town of Providence; let each man take three days provision, and wait there for further orders." About this time, March 18, 1777, Elizabeth Knight writes from Scituate to her husband, who was with his troops at Warwick: "These lines are to let you know that we are all well at present. I want you to come home soon as you can, to see about getting some flax, for it is very scarce to be had. There are some men who want to be boarded at your house, and I want you to send to me whether you are willing to board them or not. So I remain your loving wife, Elizabeth Knight."

There you see a woman of the old heroic time,—quiet, diligent, deferring to her husband, subjecting herself to the circumstances of the time, and heartily embracing the good cause. In talking of the men of the Revolution we should never forget the women, whose sacrifices were great, and whose zeal and courage in the patriot cause was abounding.

Rufus Hopkins, who seems to have been especially active and efficient in the good cause, writes Major Knight from Cranston, July 27, 1780, saying: "By express from the Governor I am requested to direct you forthwith to muster together the regiment under your command, completely equipped with arms and ammunition and six days provision; you are therefore hereby directed accordingly, and rendezvous at Providence as soon as possible, where you are to be ready to receive further orders, the reason is said to be in consequence of Gen. Clinton's coming from New York with eight or ten thousand troops to attack the French army and fleet at Newport."

Scituate was not invaded, but she was called upon, and responded nobly to the call, to march her troops to the port. The British, on Sunday, Dec. 8, 1776, landed and took possession of Rhode Island, and remained there until Oct. 25, 1779, during which time the inhabitants were greatly oppressed.

In a list of Capt. Knight's company, April 20, 1775, the day after the Lexington battle, are found the following names: Joseph Knight, captain; Samuel Wilbor, Benjamin Wood, Isaac Horton, John Hill, Nathan Walker, James Parker, John Bennet, jr., Jeremiah Almy, Joseph Remington, Nathan Ralfe, John I. Kilton, Jonathan Knight, jr., Joseph Briggs, David Knight, Joseph Collins, William Taylor, John Manchester, Edward Bennett, Thomas Parker, John Edwards, jr., Simeon Wilbor, Isaiah Austin, Samuel Eldridge, Christopher Knight, Samuel Hopkins, Benajah Bosworth, Obadiah Rolfe, Ezekiel Wood, Caleb Fisk, doctor, John Phillips, Constant Graves, Stukely Thornton, James Andrews, jr., Christopher Collins, Joseph Bennet, Thomas Knight, Peleg Colvin, Eleazor Westcott, Caleb Steere, Collins Roberts, Daniel Fisk, William Knight, Nathan Franklin, Uriah Franklin, jr., Ephriam Edwards, Stephen Edwards, Francis Fuller, jr., Benjamin Whitmore, William Stafford, Daniel Angell, Furmer Tanner—fifty-two in all.

Another list, dated Feb. 5, 1776, gives the following additional names: Daniel Dexter, Peter Pierce, Alexander Lovell, Ebenezer Handy, Joseph Turner, John Gunnison, Isaiah Ashton, Benjamin

Bacon, Nathan Mathewson, Christopher Edwards, Knight Wilbor, Abraham Angell, Moses Colvin.

An order of Capt. Knight to Aaron Fisk, one of his corporals, dated Dec. 8, 1774, directs to notify every enlisted soldier to appear in arms complete, to appear at the new dwelling-house of Lieut. Samuel Wilbor, Jan. 16, 1775.

Lieut.-Col. Ezekiel Cornell, of Col. Hitchcock's regiment, Providence, writes to Major Knight, dated Warwick, July 20, 1777, informing that he has just received an express telling him that forty sail of square-rigged vessels were off Watch Point standing towards Newport, last evening; also, desiring me to send an express to Col. Colwell, which I have done, ordering him immediately to warn the militia to be in readiness.

Return of the Scituate Light Infantry company, Benj. Boss, captain, and Richard Rhodes, clerk, gives captain and two lieutenants, one ensign, four sergeants, three corporals, four drummers and fifers, thirty-eight rank and file—total fifty-four.

The return of Capt. Nathan Worker's company gives Lieut. Joseph Carpenter, Ensign Samuel Wilbor, seventy-two men, eight all equipped, and twenty-nine guns.

Capt. Coman Smith's company had Lieut. Fabel Angell, and Capt. Herenden's company had Lieut. Isaac Hopkins, and Ensign James Wells. Timothy Hopkins, jr., was adjutant. Jos. Kimball's company had Gideon Cornwell, lieutenant. Capt. Edwin Knight's company had Ensign Daniel Baker. Capt. Herenden, Lieut. Wm. Howard, Ensign Reuben Read.

The small pox prevailed much in the army at different times, causing alarm, and the town of Scituate voted that the house of widow Mercy Angell and the house of Peleg Fiske, Esq., be opened as hospitals for the innoculation of the small pox.

Capt. Joseph Kimball, by vote of the town, Nov. 15, 1777, was appointed to supply the families of officers and soldiers, in the continental service, with the necessary articles of life, according to a late act of the General Assembly.

The returns of the Third Regiment, made to Major Knight, of

eight companies, are as follows: Capt. Potter, 75 men, Capt. Dorrance, 67 men, Capt. Smith, 123 men, Capt. Paine, 109 men, Capt. Wilbour, 76 men, Capt. Howard, 64 men, Capt. Medbury, 32 men, Capt. Rolfe, 67 men.

We get some idea of the imperfect equipments of the soldiers in the return of three companies of two hundred and seventy-two privates. Of these, without bayonets, one hundred and one, with bayonets, twenty-six, and cartouches of the same number only forty-three.

The Rhode Island soldiers in our civil war received much praise for their brave and effective service, and their fine appearance. A Massachusetts man, writing for a newspaper, at the commencement of the rebellion, from Washington, July, 1861, says: "Three cheers for Rhode Island rang along the avenue to-day, as the quota of that gallant State marched proudly along, the first battalion escorting the second, which had just been landed. Cheers were given for the continental color carried by the second battalion and for the ladies who marched bravely with the file-closers of two companies, rivalling Florence Nightingale. A baggage train brought up the rear." Another writer says of them: "This is the finest and best furnished body of men in the field."

CHURCHES, SCHOOLS, MINISTERS AND PHYSICIANS.

In the history of a place there are some things more important than its size or wealth. Its farms, manufactures, trade, are indeed to be considered. The services performed in war, when they have reference to the establishment of freedom, or its preservation, ought to hold our attention:

> "By fairy hands their knell is rung,
> By forms unseen their dirge is sung:
> There Honor comes, a pilgrim grey,
> To bless the turf that wraps their clay;
> And Freedom shall awhile repair,
> To dwell, a weeping hermit, there."

Improvements in the laying out of roads, the introduction of steam travel, the erection of public and private buildings, are not to be forgotten, but remembered, also should be first and foremost,

Religion, as seen in the churches and families, social and business intercourse, and political institutions, and pervading the community.

The schools and higher seminaries of instruction are, with religion, to be examined as institutions lying at the foundation of a respectable, orderly, intelligent town, and household behavior, and teaching by precept and example on the part of parents, tend much to refine and elevate society.

Physicians and ministers are so placed as to healing power in body and soul, to their giving a healthy tone to society and encouraging all goodness, that their character and abilities may properly come under scrutiny. School teachers, out of school as well as in, may encourage and sustain all good works.

Religion came and followed our original settlers in this town, but they were opposed to taxation, and their ministers probably received at first only such recompense as private individuals might occasionally give them. The Friends were of this kind, and the Baptists also, and these denominations were the two earliest in the field, and probably established their religious meetings at about the same time.

Rhode Island was from the start tolerant of all protestant religious faith, allowing the freest utterance of doctrine, from which cause she attracted settlers of various creeds. Quakers and Baptists were the most numerous. The Friends, or Quakers, had a church burnt in Scituate before the Revolutionary war, showing how early they began to erect church edifices. Dec. 14, 1811, their last meeting house was erected, and William Almy and Moses Brown attended from Providence. Mr. Elihu Bowen, one of their preachers living in Scituate, wrote in his record book of the church, of the proceedings: "William being livingly opened in Gospel love to the edification of the auditory, and concluded in prayer and supplication to the Father of our mercies." Of late, owing to decline in membership of Friends, few or none are the gatherings in the town.

They, at one time, numbered in their ranks many of the most important citizens of the town. The Wilkinsons of the first gene-

ration, James Aldrich, Daniel Fiske, Isaac Fiske, Ezra Potter, John Potter, Mr. Mial Smith, Hon. Elisha Mathewson, and Gideon Harris attended the meetings.

Their first church was built on land given by Gideon Harris, a mile west of the present church building, near the old bank, and was supposed to have been accidentally consumed. Meetings were subsequently held in private houses, sometimes with Elizabeth Aldrich, Mr. Mial Smith and Elihu Bowen, until a new house was built.

The Six Principle Baptist Church, according to a sermon of Richard Knight, one of their elders, preached in 1727, was constituted in 1725, received a grant of an acre of land and built a meeting house upon it, reserving a part of the land for a burial place. This was about the centre of the town. In August, 1827, Samuel Fiske was ordained pastor, and Benjamin Fiske, deacon of the society. The services were performed by Elders Brown, Morse and Martin. James Colvin was ordained colleague with Elder Fiske about 1738. Elder Colvin died in 1755, and the church was without a pastor until July 8, 1762, when Reuben Hopkins was ordained elder, and the church prospered under the able and useful ministry of their "nourishing pastor." A reformation commenced and continued several years, and numbers were added to the church. In 1821 they built a new and larger meeting-house on the same spot, which is still standing and in use. Elder Jaques is the present preacher and the meetings are regularly held. This church and ministry has doubtless exerted a very great and beneficial influence upon the town.

An Episcopal Church was established at Richmond village, South Scituate, several years since, having quite an extensive membership.

A meeting-house was put up in Hemlock, Foster, by the Calvinistic Baptists, but was never finished. It was bought by the town for a town house, with a provision that the house should be open for preaching. Elder John Williams was their first minister, and his colleague was Elder John Westcott. In 1827 these preach-

ers were between eighty and ninety years of age, and still continuing their labors in the ministry, although Elder Williams preached but seldom. He addressed the convention called to ratify the constitution, forty years before, against the measure.

The church at Foster was at first in connection with the Calvinistic Baptist Churches, but they separated about 1780, and became a Six Principle Baptist Church. Elder John Williams erected a house about 1790, at Hopkins Mills, a very elevated site.

Elder Young was the pastor of the Calvinistic Baptist Church, in Foster, and had a large family. One of his sons, Zadock, became a judge; and his son, Abiather, had some reputation as a poet.

A Congregational Church was formed at North Scituate, and organized January 1st, 1834. A house of worship was dedicated in 1834 and is now standing and occupied. Pastors: Revs. Benjamin Allen, Charles P. Grosvener, Benjamin J. Relyed, James Hall, Charles C. Beaman, Thomas Williams, Loring P. Marsh, J. N. H. Dow, William A. Fobes, J. M. Wilkins, Thomas L. Ellis, J. H. Mellish. All now living except Allen and Ellis.

A Methodist Church is established at Richmond village, South Scituate; also, one at Ashland village, and also another at Hope village. All now in a flourishing condition.

A Free Baptist Church, having a comfortable house of worship, has long been in existence in the north-west part of the town.

In North Scituate a Free Will Baptist Church was gathered January 7th, 1832, as a branch of the Smithfield F. B. Church, with thirty-two members, Rev. Reuben Allen, pastor. Church organized April 22d, 1835, with thirty members. Pastors: Revs. Martin J. Steere, Eli Noyes, D. P. Cilley, Reuben Allen, J. B. Sargent, John Chanly, Amos Redlon, William H Bowen, O. H. True, J. M. Brewster, L. P. Bickford. All but Allen, Noyes and Cilley now living.

SCHOOLS.

The town did not begin very early, as a corporation, to establish schools. For a long time education was left to the people to do as they pleased as to the employment of teachers. They taught in private houses, or in rooms of other buildings. Miss Fiske

taught in a room of her father's tavern, seventy years ago. Marvin Morris, from Dudley, Mass., kept school for half a dozen years, about 1800; he was called a good penman. Thomas Mowry was a teacher, and a Mr. Dutton; also Samuel Perry from Connecticut.

The first town appropriation recorded was $300, in 1834. This continued for successive years until 1850, when the sum advanced to $900, and so continued a number of years. It has still further advanced, and $3,000 have been voted the last two years. The town has built school houses in locations convenient for the scholars, and they are handsome structures, fitted up with recent improvements, and kept in good order. The report of the school committee for the year ending April, 1876, says, that from observation they believe that in school property they favorably compare with the most progressive towns of the State.

SMITHVILLE SEMINARY AND LAPHAM INSTITUTE,

Founded in 1839. First principal, Hosea Quimby, from 1839 to 1854; second principal, Samuel P. Coburn, from 1854 to 1857; third principal, Rev. W. Colgrove, from 1857 to 1859. Up to this time the school had been known as Smithfield Seminary. From 1859 to 1863 there was no school. In 1863 name was changed to Lapham Institute, and Rev. B. F. Hayes was principal from 1863 to 1865; Thomas L. Angell was principal from 1865 to 1867; Geo. H. Ricker was principal from 1867 to 1874; A. G. Moulton was principal from 1874 to 1875; W. S. Stockbridge was principal in 1875 and 1876.

BANK.

There has been one bank in Scituate for a long time, called the Citizens Union Bank, changed to Scituate National Bank.

PHYSICIANS.

Physicians occupy an important place in the community. In the absence of educated and settled ministers, as was the case in many parts of Rhode Island in former periods, they seem to have been the only educated class passing round in the community. Their labors must have been toilsome; riding on horseback over the bad roads, and going great distances by night and by day.

THE NEWBERRY LIBRARY

Such men deserve to be held in grateful remembrance. They often exercise a refining and christian influence, and have done very much to prolong life. In the Revolutionary war they distinguished themselves both in the army and at home.

Dr. Ephriam Bowen, of Providence, used to ride extensively in Scituate and the adjoining towns before the conflict of the Revolution. He died about sixty years ago, aged more than ninety. Contemporary with him was Dr. Benjamin Slack who lived in the extreme north-east part of Scituate. He came from Massachusetts about 1750. The oldest record of him in Scituate is the birth of his daughter, Mary, Sept. 28, 1753. His first wife, Phœbe Slack, "the virtuous wife of Benjamin Slack, Esq.," departed this life July 8, 1762, as her grave-stone, the oldest with an inscription in the town, inform us. Dr. Slack was much esteemed, and his practice was great in Glocester, Smithfield, Scituate, and other towns. He left quite a large and good farm. His second wife was Miss Hannah Harris, of Johnston, whom he married, March 5, 1767, Gideon Harris, Esq., town clerk of Scituate, officiating at the service.

Dr. John Barden, in the north-west part of Scituate, three or four miles west of Dr. Slack, during, and after the war of the Revolution, had considerable reputation as a doctor, and used to take long rides into Massachusetts, where he had many friends and much practice.

Dr. John Wilkinson, a medical practitioner of high estimation in Scituate, was also a distinguished surgeon in the Revolutionary war.

Dr. Caleb Fiske was a man of much distinction in the town, living on Bald Hill, at the south-east part of the town. He was the son of John and Elizabeth Fiske, early settlers in the place, and was born Feb. 24, 1753. He was president of the Rhode Island Medical Society, acquired much property and left to the society $2,000, and most of the remainder to his grandson, Caleb F. Rea

Dr. Owen Battey was in medical practice for many years, but retired in later life. He was president of the Exchange Bank, at

Greeneville, in Smithfield, and held the office of post master in South Scituate for a long time, through many party changes. He was a gentleman of the old school and highly esteemed. His father was Joshua Battey, and his grandfather, by the mother's side, was Oliver Arnold. His great-grandfather, Owen Arnold, was a British officer who came out to this country and engaged in the French war. He died July 24, 1762, in his ninetieth year.

Dr. Jeremiah Cole, who studied medicine with Dr. Anthony, of Foster, resided about a mile and a half west of North Scituate village. He was esteemed in his practice, died suddenly, May 7, 1843, in his seventy-third year, shortly after his removal to Olneyville.

Dr. Cyril Carpenter, in that part of Scituate now Foster, lived in the latter part of the last century, and from him descended two generations in the healing art: his son Thomas and his grandson, Thomas O. Carpenter, a skillful doctor of great promise, who died early.

Dr. John H. Anthony practiced medicine, residing in North Scituate for many years, but his health failing him he removed to Providence, where he died.

Dr. T. K. Newhall, after practicing about seventeen years in the town, removed to Providence.

Drs. James E. Roberts, Charles N. Fisher and William H. Bowen, the present physicians in Scituate, have long enjoyed the respect and confidence of our citizens.

LAWYERS IN SCITUATE.

Jonah Titus was for more than forty years a resident lawyer of this town. He removed to Providence in 1865, where he died at an advanced age in May, 1876.

Charles H. Page is now a resident lawyer of Scituate, having lived here since boyhood. He has an office in Providence. Both have represented the town in both brances of the General Assembly.

HOPE FURNACE.

Hope furnace, in Scituate, for the casting of cannon, manu-

facture of bar iron and nails, became well known before and during the Revolutionary war. They used to cast two cannon at a time. Ore was obtained from the bed in Cranston and carted to the furnace.

In 1765, the discovery of another bed of iron in the same locality caused a company to be formed and a furnace to be erected at Hope village. Thirteen new cannon, cast at the Hope furnace, were fired at the Great Bridge, in Providence, in honor of the Declaration of Independence, July 26, 1776. Stephen Hopkins was one of the earliest and most influential of the men who got up this company, and his eldest son, Rufus, who had been a sea captain, was for many years superintendent at the furnace. Wrought iron nails were also made at Hope furnace.

MECHANICS.

Some of the mechanics in Scituate in early times were the following:

Elihu Bowen, who removed from Swanzey in 1773, was the first tanner in Scituate, having his tannery by the Moswansicut brook. He died in his eighty-eighth year, and was buried in the old Quaker burial ground. His funeral was a "large and solemn meeting."

Elihu Fiske was a good cabinet maker; Jonathan Hill learned cabinet making of him. Mr. Fiske came from Newport and became rich; keeping also, a tavern.

Capt. Thomas Hill learned his trade as a carpenter of Hugh Cole. Richard Philips learned of him also.

Daniel Smith, blacksmith, died sixty years ago.

Thomas Field's cooper shop was well known.

Mr. Angell's blacksmith shop, near the Angell tavern, was carried on by a different branch of that family from the tavern keeper, and continued in the family for several generations.

THE CORLISS ENGINE.

Our own State, "Little Rhoda," as she is called, has won the proud distinction of furnishing the steam engine whose power moves the whole machinery at the Exhibition. In other respects in

our varied and extensive manufactures on exhibition at Philadelphia this State makes a noble contribution to American workmanship, and receives commendations from all observers.

OBSERVATIONS.

It is with just pride that we have surveyed the past of Scituate: and let us ever honor the memory of the men and women who have preceded us in our history, and who have bequeathed to us so many privileges and blessings: Freedom to worship God, a free representative government, the hope of Christianity, and the glorious anticipations of a liberty covering the whole earth with the freedom with which CHRIST makes free, are among the rich gifts which have come down to us from our fathers. As God was with them, so may He be with us.

Comparing the present with past times we find our State greatly advanced in wealth and population; and while commerce has declined, manufactures have attained great prosperity. The old hand looms for weaving cloth, as used in families, have given place to the more wonderful machinery of our numerous mills, moved by our water falls and steam engines. The spinning wheels and hand cards are laid aside also, because of modern inventions. We cannot say as much for farming, although Americans have astonished the world in agricultural implements ingeniously contrived to relieve the farmer's toil and do the work better, and on a grander scale. Some good farms, well managed, and made remunerative, remain, but the larger number are still untilled, or are so much neglected that they are growing up to brush.

Facilities for education are much greater. The common schools are superior to those of early times.

One design in the earnest and united declaration of this centennary Fourth of July is to increase the spirit of PATRIOTISM, to arouse the nation to a deeper sense of their privileges, to revive the memory of Our Fathers by repeating their deeds and by glowing eulogiums on their valor, love of liberty, spirit of self-sacrifice and regard for the welfare of those who should come after them.

All our revolutionary actors are in their graves—new genera-

tions have risen, new discoveries have been made, and a new aspect has come over the land. Wealth has increased, intelligence has been diffused, large cities have grown up, manufactures and the mechanic arts have flourished, our territory has lapped over to the shores of the western sea, and our name is great among the nations as a young giant arisen upon the earth.

But all this prosperity may be our ruin, and wealth and fame and luxury, and its consequent evils, may prove a false dependence.

> "What constitutes a State ?
> Not high raised battlement or labored mound,
> Thick wall, or moated gate;
> Not cities proud, with spires and turrets crowned;
> Not bays and broad-armed ports,
> Where, laughing at the storm, rich navies ride;
> Not starred and spangled courts,
> Where low-born baseness wafts perfume to pride;
> No—men, high-minded men;
>
> "Men who their duties know,
> But know their rights, and knowing dare maintain:
> These constitute a State."

A nation wholly intent upon sordid gain, given up to frivolous pleasures, separate from God and holiness, forgetful of the fathers, from whom, under God, they received their blessings, is necessarily a weak and pusillanimous nation, as the history of Rome and other similar empires proves. If to these declensions are to be added, dishonesty of bankers and men in trade, corruption of men in public life, to the extent of making dishonest gain the usual concomitant of an office-holder and legislator, and bribery at the voting place, carried on without a blush, quite a practice, and increasingly more so, why, then there is pressing need of an awakening of the people to make the inquiry, "Whither are we drifting?" At such a juncture of affairs, as believed in by many of the more thoughtful and deserving, as coming upon us as a people this present celebration, recalling vividly to mind the more simple and honest days of the Republic, and holding up for emulation the characters of the period of 1776, when persons were put into the crucible and tried, as it were, by fire, and came out pure gold, for all countries and ages to admire, and when Washington took his place as in the heavens a

shining star for all time—a sight of all this—the entering of it, as it were, into the very souls of the people, and taking possession of them, may well be held as the sacred duty of all who are privileged to be the orators of the hour.

Before us lies a new century, on which the nation is about to enter. Great as were the perils supposed to be incident to the first, they have been gallantly met, by the several generations, and overcome. God's hand, clearly seen in colonial times, was still more visible in the national history which followed, and to Him we must look for guidance and blessing. Very timely is the President's proclamation, and very proper and well expressed. Great would have been the oversight if it had been forgotten. It says:

"The founders of the government, at its birth and in its feebleness, invoked the blessings and protection of a Divine Providence, and the thirteen colonies and three millions of people have expanded into a nation of strength and numbers, commanding the position which then was demanded, and for which fervent prayers were then offered. It seems fitting that on the occurrence of the hundredth anniversary of our existence as a nation, a grateful acknowledgment should be made to Almighty God for the protection and bounties which He has vouchsafed to our beloved country, and humbly to invoke a continuance of His favor and of His protection."

We trust there will be a two-century life of our nation; that we may continue united, prosperous and free up to that period, but none of us will be alive to witness it. The imagination toils in vain to picture the two-century spectacle. A hundred years more must make many changes, but what they will be no one can tell. We must pass through several generations, who will in turn come to preside, as the administration and the people. More territory may be added, and more people and more wealth acquired, and new discoveries make as great changes in the future as the steam engine and the telegraph have wrought in the past.

Civil war, a contest between the North and South, was what Washington feared, and warned the people of both sections against those who should attempt to put variances between them. But his farewell address was disregarded by both sides, and the result of civil war, naturally, and as it were, inevitably followed. Contests may arise in the future, but it will not come on the subject of

slavery. It is with profound satisfaction that we to-day can look around and exclaim: "No slave breathes the air of our country." Never again will that stain make an American ashamed of his nationality.

We must cultivate love and forbearance with one another; and especially we should, in our centennial, reach our hands over the bloody chasm and cultivate friendly relations with the South, since the rebellion has been put down and the people have submitted to the result. To-day they, with us, unite in a centennial, which is theirs as well as ours. North and South participated in the battles of the Revolution, and the South and the North unite in the rejoicings over the glory of our common heritage.

The East may feel a little sensitive at the waning of their political supremacy, and the West may not a little exult that they are rising in the scale of comparative greatness, but let us bear in mind that the East has sent her children West, and that the greatness of the West is the theme of our own glory.

The shores of the Pacific and the Atlantic may engender suspicions of the unjust political favors awarded to one more than the other, but mutual concessions and kindnesses, and the rapid growth of California and Oregon will naturally, and without opposition, bring to these territories increased and increasing influence. Let us be just to all sections, and we need not fear any hostility tending to disunion.

The great cry of the day is for retrenchment and economy in public and private expenditures. Honest men and able should be sought after for office, and both of the great political parties should have their proportionate share of public offices, and thus a civil service reform will be created which every patriot should encourage.

Two great political parties should always exist, and they should be nearly equal in numbers, power and influence, that they may watch each other and correct any mistakes or frauds that may be discovered. Ceaseless watchfulness of our rulers and their doings is the price the people must pay for the blessings of liberty!

The people, and the people only, in the teachings of history, can be safely trusted to preserve and hand down freedom.

In the words of our poet Longfellow, apostrophizing our country, as a ship sailing on the ocean, we may hopefully say:

"Thou too sail on, O ship of State!
Sail on, O Union strong and great!
Humanity, with all its fears,
With all the hopes of future years,
Is hanging breathless on thy fate!
We know what master laid thy keel,
What workmen wrought thy ribs of steel,
Who made each mast, and sail, and rope,
What anvils rung, what hammers beat,
In what a forge and what a heat
Were shaped the anchors of thy hope!
Fear not each sudden sound and shock—
'Tis of the wave, and not the rock;
'Tis but the flapping of the sail,
And not a rent made by the gale.
In spite of rock, and tempest's roar,
In spite of false lights on the shore,
Sail on, nor fear to breast the sea!
Our hearts, our hopes, our prayers, our tears,
Our faith triumphant o'er our fears,
Are all with thee,—are all with thee!"

Let the day be given to patriotic and grateful recollections of the honored dead; the men and women who braved the perils of the sea and the wilderness, and built their homes for wives and little ones, where wild and ferocious beasts of prey and savage men roamed the forests.

Sacred to the memory, also, of those whose love of liberty impelled them, at all hazards, to enter a solemn protest against the entrance of every form of tyranny and unjust edicts, and to resist with all their might, even unto death, the armed forces sent out by Great Britain to subjugate the people.

A careful enquiry would show the nobleness of mind and patriotic devotion of the *women* of the Revolutionary period, who not only made no opposition, and uttered no complaint, but cheered the men, who were compelled to leave, hardly begun, the clearing of the wilderness, and the care and protection of their young fam-

ilies, to rush to the camp and the battle field, and lay down their lives, if need be, that their children and their children's children might not come under the burdens of unjust and tyrannical governments to which the world had been so long subject, and might possess the free representative government, which we now enjoy.

Shame would it be!—if there were not a spontaneous and universal uprising all over our land, to proclaim to the world that the sins of ingratitude and forgetfulness of our benefactors, the heroes of the Revolution, and of all who since that period have, in office and out of office, and of all political parties, who have aided in carrying out in continued practice the principles and spirit of 1776 until now, one hundred years from the memorable Declaration, our liberties have been preserved and the threatened description of our Union averted.

Let the present generation preserve and hand down these liberties to those who may come after us; and watch with zealous care all tendencies of our nation to encroach upon the freedom our fathers won for us.

And let the sons and daughters of Rhode Island, here, within our borders, and abroad, wherever they may be scattered, bear gratefully in mind the intense love of freedom and hatred of wrong and oppression, that characterized the settlers of the State, and has ever since marked its inhabitants. Let the names of Angell, West, Knight, Williams, Aldrich, Westcott, Harris, Whipple, Green, Ellery, Perry, Hopkins, Ward, Greene, and other patriots be sounded, and with them the statesmen and heroes of all the other States,—Samuel Adams, James Otis, Putnam, Knox, Lee, and a multitude beside. Sound high and feelingly the name of LAFAYETTE, and remember gratefully the French nation.

The war of 1812-15, and the terrible civil war of 1861-4, added greatly to the number of these illustrious names that have adorned our country's annals, and laid down their lives willingly, that the glorious Union might be preserved, in the most deadly warfare ever waged to destroy it. Rhode Island, as distinguised for promptness, bravery and gallant exploits in that war, as in previous con-

tests, hands down her names to our admiring and grateful remembrance, to the present and all coming time. Her officers and soldiers and seaman are enrolled on the undying scroll of our country's glory, and so of other States—praise, honor, thanks, we give to all.

One great name, that of the "FATHER OF HIS COUNTRY," will be everywhere sounded to-day; and no poem, oration, song or melody shall be able to reach the height of his deserved praise, or add a single leaf to the wreath of his world-sounded renown.

His fame, now after the lapse of three-quarters of a century since his death, has suffered no diminution; his star still blazes single and alone in brightness and glory in the firmament of American Freedom! Raised up by the Great Dispenser of Events in a critical period of the world's history, and in the birth-day of the nation destined to pour back a reflective light upon the old world, and to exert an influence in human affairs beyond that of any empire in the world's history, the American people hailed him as Moses was saluted by the Israelites when he led them out of Egypt.

It is the great glory of America that she has produced a WASHINGTON, and it will not be presumption to say that, with all our exhibitions to-day, in our centennial, we have nothing greater to ask the world's attention than to him.

APPENDIX.

DEPUTIES, SENATORS, REPRESENTATIVES, ETC.

DEPUTIES.

1731.
Joseph Wilkinson,
Stephen Hopkins,
Zachariah Rhodes.

1732.
Stephen Hopkins,
Zachariah Rhodes.

1733.
Capt. Thomas Angell,
Stephen Hopkins.

1734.
Edward Sheldon,
Capt. Thomas Angell.

1735.
Stephen Hopkins,
Benjamin Fiske.

1736.
Stephen Hopkins,
Job Randall.

1737.
Stephen Hopkins,
Thomas Realph.

1738.
Edward Sheldon,
Stephen Hopkins.

1739.
Job Randall,
James Colvin.

1740.
Job Randall,
James Colvin.

1741.
Job Randall,
Stephen Hopkins.

1742.
Job Randall,
Thomas Realph.

1743.
Capt. Job Randall,
Joseph Knight.

1744.
Capt. Job Randall,
Jeremiah Angell.

1745.
Capt. Job Randall,
Ezekiel Hopkins.

1746.
Capt. Job Randall,
Charles Harris.

1747.
Capt. Job Randall,
John Fisk.

1748.
Capt. Job Randall,
Charles Harris.

1749.
Thomas Ralph,
Thomas Hudson.

1750.
Job Randall,
Gideon Hammond.

1751.
Capt. Job Randall,
Charles Harris.
1752.
Capt. Job Randall,
Charles Harris.
1753.
Job Randall,
Capt. Thomas Relf.
1754.
Job Randall,
Capt. Amos Hammond.
1755.
Capt. Job Randall,
Capt. Amos Hammond.
1756.
Capt. Job Randall,
Gideon Harris.
1757.
Capt. Job Randall,
Jeremiah Angell.
1758.
Capt. Job Randall,
Jeremiah Angell.
1759.
Capt. Job Randall,
Jeremiah Angell.
1760.
Capt. Job Randall,
William West.
1761.
Capt. Job Randall,
William West.
1762.
Job Randall,
Jeremiah Angell.
1763.
Job Randall,
Charles Harris.
1764.
Job Randall,
Jeremiah Angell.
1765.
Job Randall,
Jeremiah Angell.
1766.
Charles Harris,
William West.
1767.
Charles Harris,
John Fiske.
1768.
Gideon Harris,
William West.
1769.
Job Randall,
Benjamin Slack.
1770.
Job Randall,
Benjamin Slack.
1771.
William West,
Charles Harris.
1772.
Ezekiel Cornell,
Rufus Hopkins.
1773.
William West,
Rufus Hopkins.
1774.
Ezekiel Cornell,
Rufus Hopkins.
1775.
Ezekiel Cornell,
Rufus Hopkins.
1776.
Col. William West,
Christopher Potter.
1777.
Job Randall, Esq.,
Timothy Hopkins, Esq.
1778.
Timothy Hopkins, Esq.,
Christopher Potter.
1779.
William West, Esq.,
Christopher Potter.
1780.
Christopher Potter,
John Williams.
1781.
William Bhodes, Esq.,
Rufus Hopkins, Esq.
1782.
William Rhodes, Esq.,
Rufus Hopkins, Esq.
1783.
William Rhodes, Esq.,
Rufus Hopkins, Esq.
1784.
Rufus Hopkins, Esq.,
William West, Esq.

1785.
Rufus Hopkins, Esq.,
William West, Esq.
1786.
Nathan Bates,
Thomas Mowry, Esq.
1787.
Nathan Bates,
Thomas Mowry, Esq.
1788.
Peleg Fiske, Esq.,
James Aldrich.
1789.
Peleg Fiske, Esq.,
James Aldrich, Esq.
1790.
James Aldrich, Esq.,
Nathaniel Medbury. Esq.
1791.
.....
.....
1792.
James Aldrich, Esq.,
Nathaniel Medbury, Esq.

REPRESENTATIVES.

1792 to 1794—February Session,
James Aldrich,
Nathaniel Medbury.
1794 to 1800—May Session,
James Aldrich,
Job Randall.
1800 to 1805—May Session,
James Aldrich,
Elisha Mathewson.
1805 to 1808—June Session,
Job Randall,
Elisha Mathewson.
1808—February Session,
Job Randall,
Peleg Fisk, jr.
1808 to 1810—May Session,
Peleg Fisk, jr.,
Charles Angell.
1810—May Session,
Charles Angell,
Solomon Taylor.
1810—June Session,
James Aldrich,
Solomon Taylor.
1811 to 1813—May Session,
Solomon Taylor,
Clements Smith.
1813—May Session,
Charles Angell.
1813—June Session,
Clements Smith.
1813—October Session,
Clements Smith,
Samuel Graves.
1814—October Session,
Elisha Mathewson,
Samuel Graves.
1815—May Session,
Elisha Mathewson,
Eleazer Relph.
1816 to 1818—May Session,
Josiah Westcott,
Isaac Field.
1818—May Session,
Josiah Westcott,
Israel Brayton.
1818 to 1820—June Session,
Elisha Mathewson,
Israel Brayton.
1820—May Session,
Elisha Mathewson,
Israel G. Manchester.
1821—May Session,
Elisha Mathewson, chosen Speaker
Israel Brayton.
1821—October Session,
Jerry A. Fenner,
Israel Brayton.
1822—May Session,
Elisha Mathewson, chosen Speaker
Israel Brayton.
1822—October Session,
Eleazer Relph,
.....
1823—January Session,
Eleazer Relph,
Thomas Henry.

1823—October Session,
Stephen Corp,
Thomas Henry.
1824 to 1826—October Session,
Thomas Henry,
Israel Brayton.
1826—May Session,
Israel Brayton,
William Smith.
1826 to 1829—October Session,
William Smith,
Nathan K. Stone.
1829—May Session,
William Smith,
Benjamin Wilbur.
1830—May Session,
William Smith,
Job Randall.
1831 to 1833—May Session,
Benjamin Wilbur,
Job Randall.
1833—May Session,
Elisha Mathewson,
Josiah Westcott.
1833 to 1835—June Session,
Elisha Mathewson,
Jonah Titus.
1835 to 1837—October Session.
Jonah Titus,
John Aldrich.
1837—May Session,
Jonah Titus,
Wilmarth N. Aldrich.
1837 to 1841—October Session,
Elisha Mathewson,
Wilmarth N. Aldrich.
1841—May Session,
Elisha Mathewson,
Josiah Westcott.
1842—May Session,
Elisha Mathewson, Senator,
Josiah Westcott, Representative,
Andrew A. Angell, "
1842—June Session,
Elisha Mathewson, Senator,
Job Randall, Representative,
Andrew A. Angell, "
1843—June Session,
Job Randall, Senator,
Andrew A. Angell, Representative
Richard M. Andrew, "
Israel Brayton, "

SENATORS AND REPRESENTATIVES.

SENATORS.

May, 1843,
Job Randall,
May, 1844,
Job Randall,
May, 1845,
Pardon Angell,
May, 1846,
Pardon Angell,
June, 1846,
Pardon Angell,
October, 1846,
Pardon Angell,
January, 1847,
Pardon Angell,
May, 1847,
William B. Kimball,
May, 1848,
Albert Hubbard.
1849.
Josiah Wescott.
1850.
Josiah Wescott.
1851.
Pardon Angell.
1852.
Pardon Angell.
1853.
Ira Cowee.
1854.
Ira Cowee.
1855.
Isaac Saunders.
1856.
Ira Cowee.
1857.
Henry W Emmons.

1858.
Henry W. Emmons.
1859.
Henry W. Emmons.
1860.
Abner W. Peckham.
1861.
Abner W. Peckham.
1862.
Abner W. Peckham.
1863.
Abner W. Peckham.
1864.
Abner W. Peckham.
1865.
Alanson Steere.
1866.
Alanson Steere.
1867.
Alanson Steere.
1868.
Alanson Steere.
1869.
Charles H. Fisher.
1870.
John H. Barden.
1871.
John H. Barden.
1872.
Isaac Saunders.
1873.
Isaac Saunders.
1874.
Charles H. Page.
1875.
Charles H. Page.
1876.
Jeremiah H. Field.

REPRESENTATIVES.

May, 1843,
Andrew A. Angell,
Richard M. Andrew,
Israel Brayton.
May, 1844,
Richard M. Andrew,
Isreal Brayton,
Stephen H. Fiske.
May, 1845,
Wilmarth N. Aldrich,
Harley Luther,
William A. Roberts.
May, 1846,
Wilmarth N. Aldrich,
Harley Luther,
William A. Roberts.
June, 1846,
Wilmarth N. Aldrich,
Harley Luther,
Abel Salisbury.
October, 1846,
Isaac Saunders,
Harley Luther,
Abel Salisbury.
January, 1847,
Isaac Saunders,
Harley Luther,
William Roberts
May, 1847,
Albert Hubbard,
John Potter, 2d,
George Aldrich.
May, 1848,
Horace S. Patterson,
Arthur F. Aldrich,
George Aldrich.
1849.
Isaac Saunders,
Benedict Lapham.
1850.
Isaac Saunders,
Benedict Lapham,
Richard M. Andrew.
1851.
William A. Roberts,
Sheldon Fiske.
1852.
Harley P. Angell,
William A. Roberts.
1853.
Jonah Titus,
Albert K. Barnes.
1854.
Jonah Titus,
Albert K. Barnes.

1855.
Arthur F. Randall,
Henry Hierlihy.
1856.
Charles Jackson,
Pardon A. Phillips.
1857.
Andrew A. Angell,
Isaac Saunders.
1858.
Andrew A. Angell,
Isaac Saunders.
1859.
Andrew A. Angell,
Samuel P. Boss.
1860.
Welcome Matteson,
Henry S. Olney.
1861.
Welcome Matteson,
Henry S. Olney.
1862.
Albert W. Harris,
Henry A. Lawton.
1863.
Olney H. Austin,
John S. Fiske.
1864.
Olney H. Austin,
John S. Fiske.
1865.
Samuel G. Allen,
William G. Smith.
1866.
William G. Smith,
Andrew J. Wescott.
1867.
Martin Smith,
Andrew J. Wescott.
1868.
Martin Smith,
Henry A. Lawton.
1869.
John H. Barden,
Ferdinand H. Allen.
1870.
Hiram Steere,
Richard G. Howland.
1871.
Hiram Steere,
Isaac Saunders.
1872.
Charles H. Page,
Harris H. Stone.
1873.
Charles H. Page.
1874.
Martin S. Smith.
1875.
Martin S. Smith.
1876.
Benjamin Wilbour.

MODERATORS OF TOWN MEETINGS.

Stephen Hopkins, 1730.
Capt. Joseph Brown, 1731.
Benjamin Fisk, 1732.
Stephen Hopkins, 1733.
Benjamin Fisk, 1734.
Edward Sheldon, 1735.
Stephen Hopkins, 1737.
Job Randall, 1739.
James Brown, 1746.
Benjamin Fisk, 1742.
Capt. Charles Harris, 1747.
Job Randall, 1759.
William West, 1765.
Charles Harris, 1765.
William West, 1765.
Charles Harris, 1766.
John Fisk, 1768.
Ezekiel Cornell, 1768.
Rufus Hopkins, 1778.
Reuben Hopkins, 1779.
Benjamin Slack, 1780.
Rufus Hopkins, 1780.
Benjamin Slack, 1781.
Timothy Hopkins, 1781.

Ezekiel Cornell, 1781.
Dr. Caleb Fisk, 1781.
Benjamin Slack, 1781.
Rufus Hopkins, 1781.
Caleb Fisk, 1783.
Ezekiel Cornell, 1785.
Rufus Hopkins, 1786.
Reuben Hopkins, 1787.
Col. Clemons Smith, 1825.
Jonah Titus, 1826.
Clemons Smith, 1827.
Jonah Titus, 1828.
Clemons Smith, 1829.
Elisha Mathewson, 1831.
Jonah Titus, 1832.
Jerry A. Fenner, 1832.
Elisha Mathewson, 1833.
Jonah Titus, 1834.
Elisha Mathewson, 1834.
Benjamin Wilbur, 1835.
Flavel Patterson, 1835.
Olney Battey, 1836.
John Graves, 1837.
Israel Brayton, 1838.
Owen Battey, 1838.
Israel Brayton, 1839.
Flavel Patterson, 1839.
Jonah Titus, 1840.
Elisha Mathewson, 1840.
David Phillips, 3d, 1841.
Isaac Saunders, 1842.
Horace Battey, 1842.
Wilmarth N. Aldrich, 1845.
Jonah Titus, 1846.
Isaac Saunders, 1847.
Horace S. Patterson, 1848.
Isaac Saunders, 1849.
H. S. Patterson. 1852.
George W. Colwell, 1853.
John H. Barden, 1855.
Caleb W. Johnston, 1856.
William G. Smith, 1857.
Uriah R. Colwell, 1859.
Harley P. Angell, 1865.
Jeremiah H. Field, 1866.
Dexter A. Potter, 1867.
H. S. Patterson, 1869.
Alanson Steere, 1870.
H. S. Patterson, 1871.
Benjamin T. Albro, 1872.
William G. Smith, 1874.
Richmond M. Knight, 1876.

TOWN CLERKS.

Joseph Brown, 1730.
Stephen Hopkins, 1732.
Gideon Harris, 1741.
John Harris, 1778.
John Westcott, 1779.
John Harris, 1780.
John Westcott, pro. tem, 1809.
Josiah Westcott, 1814.
John A. Harris, 1845.
Sylvester Patterson, 1854.
Albert Hubbard, 1855.
S. Patterson, 1856.
A. Hubbard, 1857.
Isaac Saunders, pro. tem, 1861.
S. Patterson, 1861.
A. Hubbard, 1865.
S. Patterson, pro. tem, Dec. 1867
S. Patterson, 1868.
D. C. Remington, 1875.

TOWN TREASURERS.

Lieut. Joseph Wilkinson, 1730.
Joseph Wilkinson, 1731.
Benjamin Fisk, 1732.
Job Randall, 1736.
Capt. Job Randall, 1737.
Timothy Hopkins, 1758.

Jeremiah Angell, 1760.
Jonathan Hopkins, 1779.
Jonathan Hopkins, jr., 1780.
Josiah Kimball, 1781.
Joshua Smith, 1825.
Albert G. Field, 1850.
Joshua Smith, 1851.
John B. Smith, 1852.
John A. Harris, 1857.
Alpheus Winsor, 1858.
John B. Smith, 1860.
Jeremiah H. Field, 1866.
John B. Smith, 1870.
Jeremiah H. Field, 1871.
David Capwell, 1873.
Albert Hubbard, 1874.

F8450.74